

MISC.

BOOKS

Microsystems, Inc.

E. Nelson
N. S. Smith

Indeed one of the most surprising things or experiences that I have ever had was that I had been about two weeks in the battle of Iphigeneia or Iphigeneia Creek the greatest Christian victory in the war.

I apparently received a stopping as well as an insulting letter from one of the Virgin Girls but signed by her and her sisters.

It was brought to him by a colonel. Of course he did not know what to make of it. At first he was wondering whose writing it was he almost believed it at first.

It was a sealed letter demanding his immediate resignation and handing in of his resignation from the army altogether.

For a long time he sat at his table reading it over and over wondering exceedingly why all meant and how could it be possible after all the difficulties they had throughout the long war were they who were all of them or were they just using up his companionship?

But then it couldn't be. And besides no one had brought him a message from them the day before.

And then he decided that it was not his business to resign from his command even if they were the principles of Abolitionism cause he really was the authority of the army.

their chief guardian and therefore he should also alone be their superior. Of course if he did really do anything wrong or offended them seriously in any way they could demand his resignation providing they got the permit from their father, the Emperor.

Yet he was dumbfounded because it was written in Violet's own hand and the handwriting of her very sisters were on the signatures.

But then somehow Evans felt a strange suspicion come over him. Evans was no fool. He was shrewd and prudent. And he knew not why they should demand his resignation for such an insignificant thing as stated in the letter, after all he did for them throughout the war.

At first when he read the letter after receiving it he was both shocked and fearfully angry at them and had just sealed the note with the purpose to send it to Emperor Virram, when something he suddenly thought made him change his mind.

He knew the Glandelinians have tried every desperate plot to get him out of the way so they could destroy them. He therefore was determined to investigate. He read it several times more and the more he read it, the more it upset

and yet the more suspicious he became. The message was as follows:

To His Excellency

General Jack Ambrose Evans

Sir,
Your immediate resignation from the army is demanded. You were requested to appear at our headquarters to go out with us on a scouting tour, and you failed to come.

No excuse is necessary as we do not listen to any.

Violet Virram.

Jennie Virram.

Joyce Virram.

Catherine Virram.

Mary Virram.

Idella Virram.

Evangeline Virram.

U. B. C.

G. H. C.

Junction.

Francis Creel.

What really surprised Evans more than ever was that he surely remembered he never received any summons from them to appear, and if they really did send a message he did not receive it yet from the handwriting it looked as if it was absolutely a fact that he was asked to resign his command immediately.

For a long while he paced up and down in his room in his head.

in a very bad mood indeed. And all this while at first he believed they were very ungrateful little Princesses to turn him down like this. So even write him a curt insulting message after all he had risked of his own will for them.

For all that morning he thought over in his mind all he had done for Violet and her sisters and how they had been so friendly and even loved him.

The more he thought of this the more he began to suspect it was a fraud. It was not in them to do this to any one who was their friend. And besides the way they had been so unusually devoted to him it seemed impossible.

And resign his command at so critical a time? Why it would ruin the nation put the Viriam Girls in great danger, and even now he imagined the Princesses were betraying to him in their friendly way.

He also remembered how faithful they were to him how often his generals had warned him not to let anything part him from them. Finally after glancing over the note again he

felt a change come over him a feeling that almost confirmed his suspicions that it was a fraud. For he knew there were clever enough to copy correctly the handwriting of some one else. Even he could do that. And they could not be felt sure demand him to resign from his command when their nation is at stake.

He then had another thought which gave him a ray of hope.

Period the day before had been with them from morning till night. He could tell him the whole truth. He decided to send for the boy immediately and explain matters to him. He went to the door and summoning his orderly said in his military tone but with a slight touch of anger and nervousness in it:

"I have Schoenfeld Pennod sent to me. I'm in a hurry as it is something very important and I will tolerate no delay on the part of the messenger whatever. I want to see him immediately."

The orderly saluted and went out. On questioning another officer he was informed that the Viriam Girls were visiting general Viriam and he did not know when they would return. While he waited for the lad to

come he look from a small dresser large round magnifying glass and examined the note through that, and also the signatures of the Vivian Girls. And through the glass the nature of the writing changed a trifle.

Just as he finished the idle announcement the boys arrived, and then Pennod came in and stood at attention.

For fully five minutes Evans did not stir but stood looking out the window.

He was afraid to question him. He was apprehensive that he may confirm the note if they really did send it. But after standing there for five minutes he decided to have it over with. Then turning to the boy he motioned to a chair, saying:

"Sit down my boy. I have some important questions I want to ask you."

The boy did so and Evans again stood in front of the window without saying anything.

Pennod observed that the general looked worried and angry, acted as if he was nervous and excited, but he waited for him to speak first, as was his usual way. After awhile he swung around and faced Pennod. Then he said:

"My boy, I want you to tell me the truth and know you will. Where were you yesterday?"

11
The boy was surprised indeed at this question and wondered what the general meant. For a moment the lad thought he was called to account for some wrong deed some one might have accused him to the general about. But he answered truthfully looking the general squarely in the face:

"At their own request sir, I was with Violet and her sisters all day. They wished me to do something for them."

"I understand. I believe you my boy" declared Evans looking more at ease. "I had the Vivian Girls any intentions of going on a scouting tour yesterday afternoon?"

"Yes sir, they did but they changed their minds. I asked them if they wished to summon you and they said 'no you would too hard for them. The day before and needed a rest. They praised you highly for saving the army from defeat and could hardly stop talking about it. I was of them slept all afternoon'."

"Supposing I will not believe that" answered Evans almost severely.

"I'm not telling you any lies sir" said the boy in his usual decided manner. "I even played a smart game with the rest of them all afternoon. I have even got noted proofs of all I say sir." Evans was silent for a long while but paced

up and down the room in an excited manner. He then went to his desk and with that magnifying glass made another examination of the note and comparing the hand writing of some of the original letters recently written to him by the Vivian Girls.

Then he made a slight startling discovery. The hand-writing of the note had a marked difference when compared to the others.

He now felt positively sure the note was forged by some one who thought to get rid of him or at least get him away from the Vivian Girls so the Glendelinian agents could lay their hands on them.

At first he was going to dismiss the lad but decided to investigate further. So he replaced the letters and the glass then rose from the chair and then paced the room once more causing Pennod to wonder exceedingly.

Then he stopped abruptly before the boy, looked keenly at him for several minutes and then observing by the boy's face that he was telling the truth, then said:

"Did any of the Vivian Girls Princesses write any one a message?"

"Yes sir."

Indeed this answer startled

Evans. It gave him a foreboding that after all the note was not forged. However he looked at Pennod searchingly and asked with alarm in his voice:

"Are you sure you're not mistaken?"
"No sir. She wrote the note yesterday morning. I was with her when she did. She seemed to be in a hurry to send it off. If so my boy, to whom did she write it?"

Evans expected Pennod to say "to you" had he done so Evans would surely have received a shock. The boy himself was surprised at this question but he surprised Evans also by saying:

"Yes she had me deliver the note which I did at noon."

Evans felt easy now for the note he received came early in the morning and was delivered by a courier.

"And which one wrote it?"
"Gloria Vivian."

"Any of the others sign their names to it?"

"No sir."

"What?"

"No sir. Gloria did not even put a signature of any kind on the note. She wrote the message to General Vivian-anna requesting him to appear before her and her sisters at 2 P. M. yesterday afternoon."

"I believe you are just making that up," said the general scowling fiercely just to tax the lad's discom-

"No sir I am not" answered the lad.
 "Could you produce a duplicate of that copy as she always writes another on carbon paper?"

"No sir she only wrote that one this time"

"Id, m" And where is general Viriamanna now?"

"At his headquarters."

"Do you think he still has the note?"

"I'm not positive sir."
 "All right my boy. I'm a superior general. Do me a favor. Go get that note if he still has it. Tell him I must see it. Tell him that through that note the Viriam Girls are in danger."

"All right sir" and the lad was off in a moment. As he went he wondered exceedingly what had gotten into the general.

Why the questions about the Viriam Girls. Did he suspect something that was going to happen to them? And if so what? And why did he examine those papers so carefully with the magnifying glass? And why did the general look so worried and so excitedly and angry?

In about twenty five minutes he was standing before General Viriamanna and the latter was surprised exceedingly at the request,

and Pennod's story of his interview with Evans.

"Are you sure its general Evans and not his double?" he asked.

"Yes sir" answered the boy. "I'd wish for the note."

The general knowing he still had it made a search for it and finally finding it handed it to the boy saying:

"If you were you I'd warn the Viriam Girls right away. Maybe Evans is suspicious. They may be shadowed by some unseen danger."

"I'd like to warn them" answered Pennod. "But they're out now having gone since morning and I don't know when they'll return."

"Well have them located" advised the general.

"I'll do that" exclaimed the boy. The lad then saluted and left.

On his return for Evans headquarters he first headed for that of the Viriam Girls.

On his questioning the orderly the latter said:

"They'll not be back till this afternoon. They are with General Viriam just now."

Pennod thanked the orderly for the information and then rode off to Evans headquarters.

He was admitted into the building and seeing the general in his room went in saluted and handed him the note.

General Evans thanked the boy and handed him a big piece of cake and

then glanced over the note. As he read it he almost jumped to his feet. It was written in just as many letters as on the note sent to him. It ran or read as follows:

To his Excellency,
General Jackson's Headquarters, Viriamanna.

Sir,
Your immediate presence to my headquarters is requested. I have something to say to you, something important too. I wish you to bring with you a companion and two of our girl friends. We are in a hurry and therefore do not wish any delay.

"The Viriam Girls"

Evans motioning the boy to sit down read it again and compared it to the other note. The handwriting to him looked alike but their names were written on the note sent to him.

"Didn't she write to any one else during the day?" he asked almost breathlessly.

"No sir. She wrote that yesterday morning. In the afternoon she and I played a game of Checkers."

Evans then pondered to himself. Would it be worth while to allow the boy to know the reason for the questioning. He stood fully five minutes reading the note again and once more comparing it to the other.

Then he turned to the boy and said

"I've got news that Violet Viriam sent me. She has ordered me to resign my command. Her sisters have confirmed the message by signing their own names to it."

Evans noticed that Pennod suddenly changed color.

"You are just saying that to try me," retorted the boy. "The Viriam Girls did not do any such thing."

"Maybe they did and maybe they did not," said Evans. "But I received the message just the same."

"It can't be. It can't be," cried Pennod. "If it is so then they must be mad. It would endanger our cause and their own personal safety. And General if you were asked to resign your command the request would have to come from the Government and no one else. It's their own order confirmed by their father and uncle. They did that so that no enemies could double cross them or trick any of their best friends or the generals."

"Well, that may be, but what would you think if I were to show you the very note I received this morning?"

"If it was even in their own hand writing I would not believe it just the same. They did not write any messages at all yesterday afternoon or today and had no time to do so."

Evans was very shrewd and if Penrod even had been telling a lie to defend the Virian Girls he could have seen it at once in the boys face. Evans now knew from the boys state ment and argument as well as the comparison between Virran and a note and his own that the message was a fraud.

It had been written someone who could correctly copy forces handwriting. Some one not knowing his shrewdness expected he would have obeyed the note immediately.

Evans knew however had he been foolishness enough to fall for this forged note he would have had the most difficult time to do so. He would have to go through one army court after another state the reason he should resign and so on.

And now when he came to think of it he knew should the Virian Girls desire to discharge him they would have to print the sheet full of state ments of his offenses and the like sent it to the Government to be stamped sealed and confirmed by the Cabinet.

Then it would be sent to the two Emperors for their signatures and from them to the Virian

own.
Girls for their signatures. Then the Virian Girls would have to send it through the general Court Marshall to be signed and confirmed from them. From there it goes back to the Government to be rewritten by the Governmental publishers confirmed by them again and brought to the general who is removed from command by the one who succeeds him.

So this confirmed Evans that again enemies were attempting to lay their hands on the Virian Girls but first wished to get him far enough away so they would be unprotected.

All right then my boy said Evans. I know you are telling the truth. I did receive such a message and that is why I questioned you. I know the note is forged and will apprehend the writer if I can. Is general Haman Virian well enough to see me?

The Virian Girls say he is getting along pretty well.

Evans sat at his desk, wrote an order signed his name sealed it and gave it to Penrod.

All right you may go my boy he said. But see that general Buster Johnson gets this note ordering him to place a powerful guard around the Virian Girls headquarters. But if you see the

Princesses tell them I would like to see them at general Idanoon's headquarters this afternoon. Tell them why if you wish.
"All right sir, I will," answered the boy and saluting he withdrew. Evans then summoned his orderly immediately and said:

"Bring my horse. I'm going to general Idanoon's headquarters right away. I have to see him on something very important."

The orderly brought the horse and within another hour Evans was standing before his friend who with his arm in a sling was sitting at his table looking through a lot of paper and smoking a cigar.

Later that morning Violet and her sisters finally returned much earlier than they were expected. After they entered the house, Joyce was straggling behind her sisters.

She noticed the door of her writing room open.

"That's strange," she thought.

"I surely remember I closed it this morning."

She was about to follow her sisters and pay no attention to it when again she stopped.

Suspicious of what she knew not what she stepped to the door and looked in.

She saw it was evident some one had been at her writing table. She even

found the ink bottle was upset, papers strewn all over, and the impression of some one having wrote on her tablet with a sharp pencil.

Looking for her writing pen she discovered it sticking in the floor near the table.

But her tablet with the carbon papers under the writing sheets had not been used.

She felt scared indeed. Some one had gotten in despite the guards. First thinking one of her sisters may have done it, she had thought it best not to call them, but changing her mind, she called in a number of soldiers, ordering them to scour the building.

Then she told her sisters what she had discovered and together they went to the room to see for themselves.

Being alarmed they looked through all their belongings but were still more surprised as they did not find a single thing missing. In quining for Pennock they learned he had been summoned before general Jack Evans.

They then examined all the writing paper but did not find a single clue as to who was in the room and left it in such an untidy condition that no one was missing here either.

This made their discovery much more surprising and mysterious. The guards were questioned but they said they were absolutely very sure that no one entered the building. Of course knowing that some one must surely have entered Violet and her sisters doubted the statements of the guards believing that that mysterious person must have either slipped past the guards, or passed as a sentry until he was relieved by another.

For this moment however Violet and her sisters did not believe a spy had invaded their premises. They believed that some soldier had probably wrote a letter to his sweet heart or parents and of course thinking it no wrong had used voices pencil and paper ignoring the ink and probably in this hurry had left the room in his hurry.

While her sisters investigated through the building a second time voice straightened up the room. Just as she had finished a soldier came and handed her a note. It was written by General Vrananna and before she opened it she called her

sisters and then removing it from the envelope read it to her sisters. The contents startled them. It was as follows:

To the Vranan Girl Princesses.

Your Majesties.
Your friend and guardian general Jech Evans just notified me by sending Perrod, with an order to have general Percwell Buster Johnston sent 400 soldiers to guard your house and vicinity.

He has received a message in forces handwriting demanding him to resign his command at your orders and signed as if by your orders.

As he suspects it's a forged message he's going to try to trace the writer of that note.

Fearing unseen danger threatens you the coming guards are instructed not to allow any stranger to even approach your place what ever. He also asks that he wishes to see you at general 10 a.m.

He ad quarters at once.

But for safety's sake take a strong escort with you. When you arrive he will explain everything to you.
General Vrananna.

Violet and her sisters looked at each other.

So that accounts for my room being in an untidy condition. And sending a lying note from our very place in my hand-writing.

And yet Evans was not fooled said Catherine. Then she turned to the guard.
"Send for my courier"
she demanded.
He bowed and ordered the

nearest soldier outside to summon the courier which he did. as soon as he was admitted Violet asked:

"Did you bring any note this morning to anyone?"

"No ~~Mr~~ Miss Violet I didn't. no one wrote any notes."

"No one? Yes they did?" she answered. Evans received it this morning."

"I have not been sent with any message at all" he answered without flinching. "If Evans received any message it may have been brought by some one else."

Seeing they could not obtain any satisfaction whatever they dismissed him and prepared to go to Evans immediately putting on their coats and breeches while ordering their horses to be brought to them.

Then with a strong escort they started off at a lively rate.

Evans was admitted immediately into the presence of Great General Idanson. After saluting and greeting him warmly Evans putting on a sober face said:

"Your Excellency I've got bad news for you. News that will be quite a shock for you."

"You have?" exclaimed general Idanson looking surprised. "What is it my dear boy? Is the enemy advancing again?"

"No sir I've been sent to you with the orders to resign my command immediately."

The general gasped and looked at Evans as if he had thought his friend had suddenly gone

crazy. "What?" he demanded "Resign your command?"

"Yes sir."

General Idanson looked fixedly out of the window for several minutes and Evans noticed that his friend was trembling. Then after several minutes the general said:

"Why Evans. my God. And leave us in a hole. never. I won't let you. I won't accept your resignation. Why our armies can only depend on your leadership. And think what would have happened if you had not stayed. Manley's success at Inman Creek. Your resignation will mean the ruin of the nation. We'll lose the war altogether just when we are starting to win. Why Evans I think your mad. Think of how Holy our cause is. That to back out now by resigning is the same as deserting. Christ himself. The nation honors you. Emperor Vircon loves you as his own son. He wants you to take the place of his treasonable son who went over to the enemy's side."

"You are great a general as Con. centurian An. oh. bung. And think of your poor friends the Virgin Girl Primrose and all what I've done for you. And how they trust you."

They are surely Princesses in this country. They are mere little girls but they are almost as powerful as their own father the Emperor of Abyssinia. All of us generals, no matter who we be or what we do are supposed to be under their orders. Yet no one can believe I ought that a saint even can be like they are. I realize that you know yourself what they themselves have done for the cause what they have rushed and suffered when if they desired so they could have remained safely at home. And all the persecutions they have experienced of their own will since the war began.

They are Emperor's Virgins daughters Evans, Princesses of our nation but they love you Evans. They would even die to save you Evans. So resign now would be to desert them. And think what your resignation will cause. Without your aiding us there will surely come a disaster that will ruin our nation altogether. A disaster that will even be fatal to them.

Why my boy its utterly impossible. You can't do such a thing. The Government would surely withhold your resignation. You'd be treated as a traitor.

"I'm awfully sorry your Excellency but it can't be helped" said Evans. "I have to do it much against my will."

General Idanson jumped from his chair and stared fixedly at Evans. Then he walked over to the window and looked out for an intolerably long time. Then he swung around and asked:

"Are you sure that you know what you are talking about?"

"Yes sir."

"Do you really mean it?"

"I'm afraid I'll have to say yes."

"Why then you must be crazy man" Idanson exclaimed.

"In the name of God do not leave us in a hole at a time like this. In the name of the Virgin Girls who have suffered all for us and you please remain" beg of you" Evans knew his point was now reached. He had driven in his stake.

"Your Excellency I would like to" said Evans smiling in spite of himself. But it is at their own orders."

"Their own orders?"

"Yes sir."

"I don't believe it."

"But it is so."

"But what did you do to offend them?"

"They requested me to accompany them on a scouting tour yesterday afternoon, but I failed to obey."

General Idanson surely gave Evans a look this time.

"My dear boy what have you been drinking to day?" he asked. "Only water sir. Nothing else." "You talk like to drink a full gallon of whiskey," said Idanson. "They did not go on any scouting tours yester day. They were too tired to do so. I believe, you are giving me the jim jams. On other wise your long endured hardships has unbalanced your mind."

"No sir" exclaimed Evans. My mind is positively sound. And I'm perfectly sober."

"And yet do you mean to say you received an order from your best loving little friendo that you are discharged from the army for a very trivial offense?"

"Yes sir," Idanson stared at Evans. "I dare you any proofs sir?" he demanded almost angrily.

"Yes sir. Here's the message sir" and he handed it to the general. Idanson gazed nervously at Evans as he took it, and then unfolding the note looked it over carefully. But it seemed to him it was a fact. It was absolutely in Idanson's hand writing. But also the names of her sisters were written in her hand writing and not that of her sisters. He couldn't hardly believe his eyes. He looked at it and read it four times with

a trembling hand. Then he suspected a trick in it. If her sisters wished their names signed to a note they would write their names themselves. And if they wished to discharge any one they'd ask the government to do it. They would never send a discharge note to any one in particular no matter whether they sign their names to it or not because it would be of no use without the Emperors signature whether they themselves had power to discharge any one or not.

They want their fathers and the Government signature to any note they make out for anything except written commands to the generals. So realizing all this and knowing the ways of Violet and her sisters he felt sure it was a fake in spite of the hand writing and therefore he said:

"I don't believe this note is real. It cannot be. They surely wouldn't do it Evans. They haven't the heart. Why Jennie was here yesterday evening playing a game with me and while we played the cards she praised you immensely for your taking my command when I was disabled and saving the army from a disastrous defeat at Johanna on Francis Creek. When the enemy smacked irresistibly through and carried all before him you crushed him. She said her sisters appreciated your gallantry and said lots

about you. You are Conceptionian Anon-
burgs double. Manley fear you and
your army as much as he and
Conceptionian Anonburg asked the
Virian Girls to have their father
make you his assistant. They
told Conceptionian Anonburg and
even me that they will do
everything in their power not
only to get you a higher
command but have their father
adopt you as his first grandson
and make you the Chief Prince.
and their brother for they and
their two loyal idol brothers
love you and desire you
as one. And yet you get this
message. I really firmly believe
it is forged by some else.
Evans was now emotional and
Idanons words only too true im-
pressed him. Then he said:

"I know its forged I know why
I startled you this way I came
to consult you about this
Period who gave me all the
information brought me this orig-
inal note written by force to
general Viriamanna and it almost
has exactly the same number
of words in it and only signed
"The Virian Girls". No names
placed at all. I've sent Period
to ask them to come here
to see me in person. If
possible I'll capture the writer
of this note fraud. The
girls are strongly escorted
so no one will be able to
do them any harm."

"I'm glad you did" said
Idanons with a forced smile.
But this message is a

serious, a very grave and criminal deed,
and the penalty especially for its
purpose alone is death. I wonder if the
Great Gemini Seader is in the lines
yet. Idanons been out scouting this morn-
ing. I'll find out."

At his summons a colonel appeared.
"Is general Dargan in yet?" general
Idanons inquired.

"Yes sir," answered the officer. "He
returned over an hour ago from
a scouting tour. He is very excited
and angry about something."

"Will you summon him here please?"
"Yes sir, no need to say. He is com-
ing any how and will be here
soon. He sent word he wishes to
see you on something very im-
portant."

"Thank you," said Idanons.
The officer then withdrew. Idanons
got his own glass and going
again to the window examined
the original and the fake
note where Evans went to Idanons
own telegraph instrument and
ordered general Viriamanna
to have all strangers no
matter who they were arrested
immediately and held for
cross examination, and to
notify the guards to let no
one not even officers outside
the lines and to hold and
question those who enter.
"It may not be possible
to apprehend the writer of
the message," he said to
Idanons who was giving
the notes a cross exam-
ination. "But there is a vile
purpose behind that fake
message and there are all kinds of

it before it is too late. It is surely evident the message was sent to me with the purpose of some kind to get me far enough away so the vandals can assassinate the Virgin Girls before their purpose is known. Of course I first suspected the message was a fact but not for long for I suspected the truth. I'll tell Idanson my friend there'll be no quarter shown to all prisoners hereafter if Manley and his rebel gangs don't keep their vandals out of our camps and leave the Virgin Girls alone. This thing just infuriates me, drives me crazy.

Idanson smiled a smile that was grim to see and it suddenly changed to a fearful scowl. "There'll come a time when I'll give no quarter either if these brutalities on the part of the Gladelinians don't stop," he said grimly. "They are rebels traitors, and never did deserve any."

A few minutes had now passed and the orderlie appeared.

"Your Excellency," he said. "The Great Gemini Seader is here sir. He wishes to see you on something important sir."

"All right send him in," said Idanson. Virgin frowning in a perplexed way. "Tell him I'm glad he's here. I've something important too."

The orderlie saluted and withdrew. and in another moment General Dargan appeared.

He saluted both Idanson and Evans and then shook hands with both very warmly. Then before Idanson could speak he said:

"I returned from a scouting tour an hour ago and some of my men have returned after being in Manley's shattered army for three days." Then turning to Evans he said to him "I'm glad you had the Virgin Girls guarded. They are in danger from disguised Vandals within our lines. I've this morning received a fake message from General Idanson. Virgin my friend here, from the Virgin Girls from Jennie Turner and Gertrude Angelina and even you Evans that my services are no longer required. And the hand writing is correct as to theirs, Idanson's, and your own."

Evans and Idanson looked at each other then ordering his orderly to bring all his writing paper in to him. Idanson showed him the note sent to Evans and after giving him a lengthy detail about what had occurred Idanson asked Dargan to show him those he received and he did. He looked at them carefully and saw the one with his and the very hand writing of the others. Then the orderlie appeared and said.

"Nothing is missing sir except the duplicate copy of a letter you wrote to your wife."

"That accounts for my discharge message," said Idanson smiling. "Are there several and are they all the same?"

can detect the writing in any way." General Darger looked at them long and carefully with his powerful instrumental glass after reading their contents once more. He looked surprised and said:

"Here is a marked difference in the handwriting sent to Evans and me," he said. The instrumental glass shows it plainly. But I'm afraid I cannot say it is forged enough to start an investigation until the Virgin Girls see the notes themselves."

At this moment an officer appeared. "The Princesses have arrived," he announced. A big body guard accompanied them in and they wish to see you and Evans immediately. They are -

"Admit them at once and don't talk so much," thundered Evans. "What do you think you are a talking machine?"

The talkative officer withdrew. Their arrival was then announced by the orderlies and then they came in like seven fairy sprites and after greeting Idamson and the two others in their usual friendly way were brought to light by the about the notes sent to Evans and Darger.

They evidently proved that they wrote no note to Evans or Darger whatever and also stated that on their return from their scouting tour unusually early Joyce finding her room door open and knowing she had closed it when she left, went in and found five sheets

of her writing paper had been used, the ink bottle upset, the cork out, the pen stuck in the floor and the evidence of some one having wrote something with a lead pencil but not using the tablet with the carbon paper between the sheets. It was evident if he had he would have left clues behind him. No one had seen him enter the building or going out and the fact that the headquarters of Violet and her sisters was so strongly guarded made it look very suspicious to everyone.

Her sisters had not been in Joyce's room all day and therefore did not know what had happened though they could not help suspecting one of the sentries for it was said one of them got relieved from duty by pretending he had been taken seriously ill all of a sudden.

They had said all physicians had been questioned but none of them had received a guard who was sick. And he had disappeared.

General Darger examined all the notes and decided they were evidently forged by that "seriously sick" guard who wished by this trick to get General Evans and Darger out of the way so the Virgin Girls would be deserted without the desired protection of their guardian.

General Darger desired to examine Joyce's room and so they all set out for the Virgin Girls headquarters. When they reached it they found it as strongly guarded as Evans had ordered. They were admitted by the guards at the door and the all

went into Joyce's room and the great Gemini started to examine everything she had. But the writer of the notes left no clues behind him whatever. Searching that none of the Princesses missed anything of their other personal property general Dargan said. "Did you keep or throw away the duplicate copies of letters you wrote to any one girls?"

"We did not make any" answered Violet. "We are careful not to let our handwriting get into the possession of any one we do not know."

"What letters did you lose?" he asked of general Hanson himself.

"I do not know" he said. "The guard did not get them. But I'll send a speedy horse man to bring them."

"I'll go and get them" said Pennod.

"No my boy you stay here with us" said Violet seriously. "You are usually in as much trouble with enemies as we are and we don't want anything to happen to you. The horse-man will go."

It was five minutes before the horse-man appeared, and ten minutes more before he returned with the letters. They were examined and sure enough one of the letters sent to him by Joyce Vinton herself was gone, envelope and all. But Dargan said he hoped to trace the writer if possible by means of the finger marks left on some of the letters. All of his members including himself were great finger mark experts and could trace any one through them as all soldiers of both sides have finger marks taken when entering the army and he decided to begin on all strangers, prisoners and the like.

So he left to issue the order right away, but general Hanson stayed with them to talk of all that had happened concerning the note.

Violet and her sisters looked at Evans and then taking the fake messages read them once.

Then Joyce said: "I'm glad Evans that you investigated and did not act too hasty. Of course I know that you almost believed the note was a fact. You could not help it because the likeness of my writing would deceive any one. But Evans I'll bet you received quite a shock when you read it."

"I'll say I did and I believed the whole thing at first" confessed Evans. "But when I was most excited I suddenly remembered all the tricks rebel spy agents try to get rid of your guardians and therefore ordered the special guards to guard your headquarters against these vandals and and escort to protect you on your way to general Hanson's headquarters to see me. All strangers within our lines are ordered to be held for investigation and soon if it is possible we'll have the writer of that forged note."

"Yes you made a wise move" said Catherine. "But we observe from your experience it would be dangerous for us to hereafter send written messages to any one. I know that spies of all kinds always lurk within our lines in all kinds of disguises and pose as guards, retainers, priests, officers, mums and the like. Therefore I do not know what to do."

"Communicate with us generals by wireless telegraph" suggested general Hanson. "It will be safer and will surely reach us where a written message often fails."

"That may be alright for us but supposing some one will have the chance to really trick Evans again. We must think of some plan to prevent that by all means."

For a while they were at a loss of what they should do. At first they had thought it best to send Pernod to Evans when they desired to see him, but then they realized that also the spy agents would be keeping their eyes on him, and if he has a certain certain message to carry to any general they would surely seize him to get the information if possible.

Then suddenly Violet thought of a clever plan and first suggested it to her sisters and when they agreed she said:

"I believe I have a good plan if you agree to it Evans dear. I hat instead of sending written notes or messages to you when we wish to see you to come ourselves with a powerful escort."

After thinking for a while Evans said:

"I can't hardly approve of the plan. It seems queer for good dignified little Princesses to have to come to me instead of I to you. It does not look right to me at all. It is not at all polite for me."

"But for your own personal safety as well as ours it is the best and only way" said Evans geline Vivian. "We were not at your place when you recieved the fake message but I can understand what a shock you suffered when you at first believed it. And I'm sure you don't want to receive another such message. Those spies will do anything to get you as far away from us as possible. If you love us as we know you do you'll agree to our plan."

"I guess there is no other way out" said Evans with a smile. "I therefore I'll agree to your plans to send no notes but come yourselves."

"I hate the good boy" said Idanson exultantly. "Always give in to them Evans. They are wise little girls and always know what is best to do. I therefore to make it safer for you and the Princesses the best plan is as they suggested that they come to you themselves and not send you any more notes."

"Yes it seems impolite on my part but it is safer for them" answered Evans. But I must confess that I don't like the idea just the same. But I agree to it. It will be so."

"But how about the writer of that message?" asked Jennie.

"What do you mean?" asked Evans.

"He means is there any chances to cause or bring about his capture?" said Daisy.

"I'm afraid it is not possible now" declared Idettie. "It was long before the fraudulence of the note was discovered and he may be safely within some Glancelinian camp by now."

"Do you think it is too late for general Daggan to trace the felonous spy now?" asked Evans.

"Yes said Violet. "It may be too late to make any attempt to trace the one who wrote this forged letter."

"Yes that's so" put in general Idanson. "His was discovered too late. The writer had ample time to escape to the enemy's lines or to hide where no one can locate him. He may not be among the strangers who are held because

he would not be foolish enough to remain within our lines where he surely would be captured among those in the wholesale arrests. Of course general Danger will make an attempt to capture him, but I do not think it is possible. And to try to trace a spy within Manley's lines, once he escaped from us is exceedingly dangerous work."

"I wonder if it was not written by one of those two Professional International spies?" said Joyce. "Those spies are so clever that there is nothing they cannot do. I've been thinking of them a long time."

"It may be at that," said Evans. "I've heard that those spies were hired special by the rebel government. They are crafty spies however and would not do that work for nothing. The rebel government pays them \$10,000 for every spying work they accomplish. They are foreigners though, though of what nationality they will not tell though they look decidedly like born Spaniards to me. If they felt sure which government pays them most for their services that government they would serve. If we paid \$30,000 to them they would leave Glandelin's service and do the work for us. It is not the cause they side for, it's the capitol they are after. And they'll do anything fair or crooked to succeed in their work."

"But which one of the two is the most dangerous?" asked the girls.

No Two.

"How hot is it there?" you mean how high was the temperature?" asked Darry.

"Yes" "I could not tell" she answered. "The thermometers there are French in style. I cannot understand the American kind either. But I came to be able to tell how it feels. The heat has an almost scalding feeling that goes through your clothes and all. It feels as it will even burn your skin. The heat in the sun feels like fire. I and Catherine almost passed out, and lost our minds for a while. Lottie could not stand it at all and she took a heat fever twice and completely broke down."

"It is the dampness of the air that makes it worse" said Lottie. "If it was not so hot those islands would be a paradise. When there is no breeze the heat was unbearable. Many of the prisoners there died of the heat during our stay on the islands and they have such awful storms there and so much rain. The windstorms we have seen there beat any we have ever seen. Lots of convicts died of the heat. I was afraid I would die too. We almost did."

I could never understand how you three little girls ever stood that awful climate," said Pernod. "I was worrying all the while I was on my way there fearing the heat would kill you yet." "But we are possessed -" began Catherine.

"Yes yes I know," said Pernod. "But can angels frustrate nature. They can prevent me or others from killing you but the power of nature is unlimited. But I'll ask the angel of the medal."

He took the medal and asked the question.

"If you would have been late you would lost your sisters," said the voice. "One more week and the heat would have killed them. It was God's will you should save themselves. Your selves. Their angels brought you to them before it was too late. And you did a just wise thing to put their enemies on the islands too."

"What did the angel say?" asked Idette.

Idad "I been a week late I would have found you dead" he answered. "Your angels led me to you. But by the way he added,

suddenly wrinkling his brow. "When the ship arrived near the island that first evening I heard my name called in so plaintive a tone that it cut my heart to the quick. It sounded as if it came from you Daisy. Did it?"

"Yes" said Daisy. "I felt so distressed I couldn't help it. I didn't know you were on the ship. Did you hear it all that distance. But I forgot. I know you can hear a cat walk."

"That don't make no difference," said Pernod. "Everybody on the ship heard it on deck and almost cried." "I could not tell for sure where sure where it had come from. The ship's crew told me sounds can be heard far in those latitudes. It made me have the urge to get you off that night but the sea was so rough that the Captain was afraid to land any boats at the wharf in the dark. Some of the crew believed you were already dead and that your spirit cried my name." "I heard that spot is one of the hottest in the world," said Angelina. "I wonder if it is true. I heard if it is terrible."

"No it is not the hottest spot in the world" said Pernod "It" —

"You mean I should have said on the world" broke in Angeline with a smile.

"No I didn't notice your mistake" said Pernod "But what I was going to say is that my youngest sisters were not in the hottest spot, and I mean in."

"But I don't believe Hell is really in this earth" said Angeline "It is a different —"

"I do not mean such a place" interrupted Pernod. "That spot is in California."

"California?" said Angeline "California, er-er you don't mean the terrible death valley do you?"

"Yes that's it, and that's where you all are going next to suffer."

"Going there? Be put there?" they asked in alarm.

"Yes"

"But Pernod" cried Violet looking distressed "I can't understand. Why? —"

"That is you're going if I am caught in a trap" he said. "Don't you little angels ever get it into your fairy heads that I don't know this. Mack and the rest of his gang

will go to any extreme to get rid of you to strike me. I overheard that plot in a restaurant and wrote down the conversation."

He fumbled in his pocket and brought out a sheet of paper. He tossed it over to Daisy who was opposite him. She unfolded it and read the contents out loud. Pernod had wrote it as he heard.

"Yes that's right that's my plan. If he gets them from Mack we'll kidnap them again. The whole shebang bring them to the death valley and lose them there so they'll surely perish from thirst."

"But can we do it."

"Yes surely is a dangerous boy. If he finds this out he'll go wild and kill us all if he has to go through Hell after us."

"But we can do it when he is off his guard."

"How can we?"

"You know his damn sister goes to that skinny or what you call it school on Jackson Boulevard and Abasco street, or what you call them. I heard sometimes he don't go with them, so we can the day he don't go kidnap them at the school."

"How about that giant Evans?"

"We can get him out of the way by writing a false note. I'll fall for it easy. We'll write him from a false address, asking for help in distress."

"Will he fall for it?"

"Yes," he'll do anything. He's such a softie."

"Well let's go out. If that boy gets his two sisters then we'll fool him this time for good."

"Where did you overhear this?" asked Grace.

Violet and her sisters were quiet for a time after hearing this. Then Catherine asked,

"When did you hear this?"
"A day before," and an gelinia noticed Violet and Daisy in New York."

"Are we really in such danger?" asked Jennie.

"Yes, if all of us who guard you don't keep our eyes open. I've made plans myself."

"I know. You and Evans are staying at school with us."

"No such thing," said Penrod. "And more, you're not going to school. I'm going to give you over to the care of John See and his Chinese gang and trap your enemies into a fatal ambush."

"But would we not see you for a while then?"
"Oh yes, and plenty. Even if the spies know you are there they would not dare anything. The Chinese are too foxy."
"Where would we be brought?"

"To China Town. A section is on South Clark Street. At first you may distrust going there as they'll be strange people to you but you'll like them when you get to know them. They have many hiding places and every time we go to mass a good number of them will accompany you armed to the teeth."

"But could Chinamen be trusted?" asked Hettie.

"Trusted, I should say so. And I'd like to see any one try to take you girls from them. They would never be seen or heard of again. Make friends of Chinamen and you got a friend. I'm going to see John See this morning. You stay with Evans and all the child scouts."

"I'm wishing to see Mr. John Sam See."

"John See. I see. Little milligan boy sweet as girl. I see. Do you know him?"

"Yes, my name is Pernod Vivian."

The Chinaman opened his eyes under. He shouted to some Chinese girl standing with a white boy across the street. She came over and as he spoke rapidly in Chinese to her.

She looked at Pernod for several minutes during the conversation.

Then she nodded to the Chinaman and turned to Pernod.

"John See is my Uncle," she said. "I will bring you to him, you could never get in there alone if they don't know you. They'd kill you."

She led the way down the street two blocks and reaching a building were soon admitted into a mysterious secret passage. The Chinaman looked at Pernod at first hostilely but she explained and they did not interfere.

They went through a number of strange secret passages before they came to a large beautifully decorated chamber.

"If you were alone now you'd never find your way out," she said. Then she called Oh Uncle John. Can I see you a

minute?"

"What do you want?" came a voice in a mysterious manner, from an unseen source.

"There is a little white boy wishes to see you. I brought him. Say, he knows you wants to see you about something," she spoke in Chinese.

As if through the wall like a spirit came John See dressed in full Chinese Custom. Pernod could hardly recognize him for in the street he dressed like an American citizen. But he knew Pernod.

"My boy I'm glad to see you," he said. But what brings you here where no one generally is allowed or left near even of my own race.

He offered Pernod a seat and the lad first told what had happened to his sisters how he had rescued them and what his enemies planned next.

"I'm awfully afraid if they do that my sisters would perish this time," said Pernod with great alarm in his voice. "I know all about China town here and how it is impossible for stranger

50
to get in or what their fate is if they are caught within those places. So I had planned to come here to ask you if you could guard them within your secret places untill my wicked foes are laid low?"

* For a moment Mr See hesitated to answer. Then he said or asked rather:-
"Are your sisters really in so great a peril?"

Pennod told of the strange conversation he had overheard in New York.

"And since what has already happened," said Mr See with a strange smile "you have lost confidence in Evans and yourself combined?"

"I am afraid so"

"Why?"

"Those spies take us so quickly unaware. I don't trust anything this time."

"Are you afraid they will succeed?"

"Yes. They would come in great numbers this time and this time I'm really afraid they'll do it for sure this time."

"Well it is an unusual request you have made and a particular one," said the Chinaman. "But for your sake,

51
and their sake more in general I'll do it. But it is a risky business too and their beauty may be a source of temptation to other more evil bred Chinamen. They will have to stay with me and my followers, and go out when we go. But you are taking a risk my boy. Many of my kind of people are pagans and may resent the presence of your sisters. If you feel you must do it then they will have to dress as Chinese girls."

"I'm afraid my sisters would object to doing that," said Pennod.

"Well I'll see to it that they are taken care of. When do you expect to have them come?"

"Would you mind coming with me and bring them here?"

"All right I will. But I must dress in civilian clothes."

Five minutes later Pennod and the Chinaman were on the way by street car. At first Violet and her sisters were a little timid about going to a strange section of the city where there were only Chinamen and most of them pagans, but they were more fearful of their enemies and therefore did not object.

Are all the Chinese Pagan?" asked Violet.

"Mostly all," said Mr. Lee, "But you must not worry, I and my gang will surely protect you. We will have to pass through the room of I do, but everything will be all right."

The little girl did not like the idea of going among a set of hideous Chinese I do, but the fear of the horrible thing made gang would do to them drove them on. They knew all about the horrible Death Valley and its terrors, and woe betide any one lost without water on that dreadful spot.

It is said the coolest spot in December is 155° in the shade. In the summer it is nearly as hot as a vast volcanic crater with lakes of seething white hot lava, and the ground consists of salt sand and deadly poison water holes. Since blasting hot sand storms blow and the heat itself it is said would stop your blood from circulating.

So a shelter some where in China town was much better than a horrible death in Death Valley.

Many would have believed that Pernod had really done a very unwise thing in placing his sisters among Chinese for protection.

But listen here. We know about Chinamen all over. Make friends out of one and you have an faithful a set a friends as a faithful loving dog is to his kind master.

I read in a book once, which was a true story, where a good rich man in China saved a little Chinese boy and girl from a cruel slave dealer and restored them to their parents.

The Chinese couple took their children to America and lived in Chicago.

The rich man had three children pretty ones aged nine, eight and eight and one half years. The three were girls.

This rich young man had long been persecuted by some secret wicked cult whom he had been frequently a fugitive from.

On several occasions they had threatened to kill his children by seizing his children some dark night open their bodies alive and sacrifice their intestinal organs to

some heinous God they worshipped. The father learned through friends the murderers were coming and he fled with his children seeking the protection of this Chinaman and his sister.

The wicked members of this cult learned of this and got after him and his children.

The Chinese allowed these rascals to come in after the children but as the story says the children were safe from harm and the wicked ones were never seen or heard of again.

When any one is under the protection of the Chinese even the police would not dare do any harm to that party. And if you did succeed and did anything out of the way you could not escape the Chinese if you fled all over the world.

What they would do to you if they then got to you would be terrible, and a Chinaman does not forgive a crime. The real truth is that if Pernod had not put this plan into execution he would

never had seen his sisters again. Dad Mack had his chance now Violet and her sisters would have met an awful death in the great Death Valley and Mack and his gang would have seen to it that they were not rescued either.

When Pernod did this he defeated these fiends at every turn. For them to try to get Violet and her sisters even from a Chinese' escort is committing suicide.

When you get on the wrong side of Chinamen, they are very dangerous foes. They have immeasurably powerful protective societies and they can successfully protect any one from any evil characters.

I've seen a movie once claimed taken from a true story where in China a rascal strangled a little white German girl to death and mutilated her body.

Her parents were wild with grief and the mother went insane. The little girl had been a favored friend of a good number of Chinese.

In their queer way they showed no grief what ever. They appeared

as utterly unconcerned
as if it never happened
and the man, the fiend-
ish assassin, escaped to
America unseen by any
body. He went to New
York. A month later
he was found stabbed
to death.

Detectives investigating
the case soon caused
the arrest of a body of
strange Chinamen who
confessing the deed was
also able to prove
why they did it.

The murderous assassin
had been trailed by
these Chinese friends
of the murdered child.
They got into his
home at dark and
surprising him in
his study killed him.
When they cornered
him their faces show-
ed their wild fury.
The loss of their little
friend had affected
them as much as it
had affected the poor
parent. But they struck
with a terrible revenge.
Their proofs of why
they done it showed they
had seen the man
attack the child but
were at the time too
far away to interfere.
They secretly followed
the fiend where ever he
went, but didn't get

a chance for their revenge
until they got him in
New York. He knew they
were after him and had
tried in vain to elude
them, and hire detectives
to protect him.

At the trial the Chinese
were found not guilty
and released. They had
been on the same ship
with him too but even
there had no chance
to get him.

There are many other
other proofs that shows
that Pennrod did a very
wise thing.

Mr See brought the
little girls into his own
quarters and his little
daughter a pretty little
thing furnished the
clothes for them. As
pretty as they are the
little girls did look a
little like Chinese in
their oriental customs
and yet more cuter than
ever.

Even Pennrod smiled with
satisfaction. The little
girls however felt a
little embarrassed in that
attire and Violet said:
"If we have to have
our hair bobbed like
Chinese girls, we won't
go through with this
and -"
"No, no, hastily spoke
up, Mr See. There's lots

of Chinese girls here who wear their hair like you do, and in braids. You keep your hair as it is, and wear your own clothes when going to church with the escort guard. The spies won't attack the guard as that would be suicide. So don't worry. My men won't make you do anything against your will. But I must warn you against some things. Do not do any loitering in the idol room as the Chinese worshipping there won't allow it. It's dangerous.

If you do they will forcibly drag you into the street and won't allow you in again. And do not go into rooms you are not permitted in, as they will do the same thing there. There are lots of rules you'll have to obey if you want to stay here. Keep out altogether when they are worshipping and don't go through the place during that time unless I'm with you. You are white girls and they will take it as a sacrilege and you'll pay dearly for it. Do not pay any attention or talk to any Chinese men you do not know. Don't associate with Chinese children other than mine, for safety sake. These Chinese men are very strict in their way. Go no where alone. I may be tempted by your appearance and kidnap you. So associate with my kind only."

Then he left them with Perrod, and his own little girl.

"We will feel lonely without you Perrod" said Jennie tearfully. "Oh dry those tears" said Perrod. "I'm not leaving you outside of rounding up those spies I'm here too. And when I've got them out of the way we'll travel to the places I've been in this country. The plans I've got in my mind will work wonders. In the meantime I sleep in the same room you do. It's better." "What food will we have" asked Angelina.

"Whatever you want" said the Chinese girl. "You will have to order that yourself, and I recognize your brother Idris, the boy who saved me from that bad boy who wanted to beat me."

Through the rest of the day the little girls found themselves in perfect security and had just what they wished to eat, at the times they wished to go to bed they were shown their sleeping quarters. The bed room was a vast room beautifully decorated in Oriental style and beds were

also that style. The Oriental night clothes were the style of short sleeveless, neckless bathing suits and violet and her sister giggled as they put these on. Period night clothes were sleeveless, but not legless.

"How about going in the street that way?" said Period.

"Then we would be foolish" said Jennie. "And we would be arrested, as beautiful as our bodies are."

"and a temptation to those weak minded men whom we hear like to brutalize and rape little girls," said Joice.

"What is rape?" asked Period.

"According to the dictionary it means to undress a girl and cut her open to see the insides" said Joice.

"What you want to do, make me sick before we go to bed?" grinned Period.

"Well you asked what rape is?"

"I'd hang his insides on an iron fence" said Period. "But let's talk pleasant things. You look nice like angel that way and therefore I am glad you are

here, where I can enjoy you with me in peace. But did you use any perfume?"

"No" said Angelina. "We sometimes do but we have none now. Why?" as he drew her close to him in a fond loving embrace.

"I smell it and it surely comes from you and the others. I believe you carry a trace of heaven and its beauty with you, and I've got to protect that at all costs?"

"I've learned you've told Period Jack Evans" said Violet sitting on his knee and laying her golden head on his shoulder, that as holy as we are we have two extremes in that true?"

"Yes." "What is it?" they all asked together.

"Well I thought you knew" said Period smiling.

"Please tell us" and they crowded about him.

"The two extremes are there. At times you have been the most unhappy little girls in the world and then too you have been the happiest."

"We were sure the happiest the day you

returned to us" said Violet. "and the luckiest too added Catherine "See what he has rescued us from and how good he is to us" "and oh how lovingly he likes to hold me so long" said Angelina. His embrace makes me sleepy" and nestling her head against his bosom she began to nod.

The conversation went on as she happily fell into a sound restful sleep.

"And God will reward you handsomely for all you did for us and putting us here for sure protection," said Lettie.

"Well there's one reward I would like and that's getting Mack and his gang."

"And you will" said Violet. "I know it."

"I believe every thing you say Violet because it always comes true" declared Pernod. "But let us get to bed as it's getting late."

and so they retired. Pernod putting Angelina to bed himself.

The darkness of their Oriental bedroom caused Pernod and his sisters to oversleep till John See awakened them.

"Not used to darkened rooms like this" I see" he said.

"What time is it" asked Pernod.

"About half past eleven. We let you sleep on because we believed it would do you a lot of good. Since you missed breakfast, an early dinner is awaiting you. all. Hurry and get dressed."

After their morning prayers they dressed themselves and were soon eating with John See. The meal was eaten in profound silence. Pernod never said a word. They wondered why.

The reason why was because Pernod was thinking deeply. After breakfast he gathered his sisters about him and said it.

"I have understood that Mr Mack also the 'weasel' has not only a gang in Chicago. He is the head of an immense string of spies who are in New York, St Louis, San Francisco, and Detroit. Now if it should happen that they find out you are here and they know they cannot get you, they may think up other schemes to destroy you. I want to warn you. Little sisters of mine on one very important matter. Do not accept tasks."

that comes from strange and mysterious sources and whose hand writing you are not sure of. Those spies may send you poisonous snakes, explosives or any terrible thing to kill you little girls."

"Would they really do such a dreadful thing?" asked Violet.

"Their kind will stop at nothing. I have tried to keep out, going in here a secret, but I do not know for sure whether our enemies know it or not. I hope not. But nevertheless I know their kind. So do not receive any packages that you do not expect to receive from any source. Our own relations were warned to bring anything they wish to give us and not send. Now I am going out to try and get a line on the spies. I'll be back for supper."

"We got a pass that will admit Jack Evans to keep you company. But only him. If you wish to go anywhere, tell Mr. See first. But for heavens sake keep away from the skinner school."

He kissed them good by and was soon gone. An hour and a half later Jack

Evans came disguised as a big Chinaman and in possession of the pass. On going his particular rounds Pernod was unable to find out anything about Mack or his gang or what they were up to. He wasn't too sure whether they really had come back from New York or not.

His own doing of spying around his long walks and the cold May air caused him to desire a slight lunch and a cup of coffee. So he went into a downtown Chinese Cafeteria and ordered a few doughnuts and a cup of Java. He took his time about eating as it was only one thirty.

To his surprise Jed, the repentant offender of his sisters came in sat at a table some distance away and ordered a dish of Chop cewy. For a time he acted as if he did not see Pernod. Then without warning a slip of paper fell by Pernod's cup, landing beside, in the saucer.

Pernod looked at Jed. He still acted as if Pernod was not there. Pernod read the note.

It said.

"Don't pay any attention to the way I act. It must not be known I know you. Meet me

on the Adama street bridge. I
have something to tell you.
"Yed Peters."

Pennod folded the note
and put it in his pocket.
He finished his lunch
paid his dues and
went out. He walked
slowly east and then
down Desplains street
to Adama and then
for the bridge. There
he waited. He had
a long wait, and was
getting impatient when
he saw Jed and
Gally Fielders coming.
She was dressed
her best.

They came to Pennod
he choked him to follow
and led him into a
dark alley where they
would not be obser-
ved and overheard.

"Gally overheard this
with me" said Jed.
"Don't send your sisters
to the Skinner
school the day after
to morrow. They are
in danger."

"Why?" asked Pennod.

"Some gink by the
name of Mack Meany
planned with a
number of men
to trap your sisters
at the school and
carry them away."
said Gally.

When are they going to
do it?"

"The day after to morrow."
"Oh I see," said Pennod.
"And to the devil island
and Molokai again?"
"No worse" said Jed him-
self. "I don't know exactly
where it is but Mack
don't he plans to take
them to the death valley
bury them deep in the
hot sand and leave
them to die of heat and
thirst. Better look out.
He and his gang may
do so. We overheard
them in a saloon
by the door."

"Are you positive?"

"Yes, positive."
"What time; the day after
to morrow?"

"A little after school
time. So we advise
you don't send your
sisters to school."

"I won't" said Pennod.
"anything else?"

"No."
"Do they know where my
sisters are?"

"Yes."
"Where?"

"201 Idalsted street I
said so. I don't want try
anything there, for
he said it would be
too dangerous with that
big gorilla there and
you and the red
scouts."

"I'm glad you told me. I'll do as you suggest. keep them home."

They both bade him good by, looked cautiously around, and beat it. "So" grinned Pernod as he walked away. "The fish are going to give my sisters the sweet Death Valley treatment. Well, it's time I should go fishing. The bait is easy to find. I can supply that. No use notifying the police. They burgle everything. I'll take the matter up my self. But in case there is any shooting the teachers must be warned. to keep the kids out of the play ground."

He walked back first to the place on Adams street, and sent Tim for Angelina Cronburg and the girl scouts. He only had half an hour to wait for them. They all came including the boys.

Pernod told them in Abbieannian what Jed related to him. But how can they when your sisters are snafely hidden away? asked Jennie Turner. "On do they know it?" "No" said Pernod and there's where I wish to lay the bait."

"But where's the bait?"

"The girls here with the golden hair are the bait." "That's what you think" said Angelina Ritchie. "Those friends would recognize us and make their get away. The seven of us you mention are safer in that way, and pretty too, but in comparison to them we are the chickens to the Roses."

"Yes but your hair could be easily fixed so you'd look like them from the rear" said Pernod. And you could wear their clothes. The devils could not recognize you from behind. The other scouts could lay in wait in the school yard and elsewhere. Then when they come forward to seize you, you your selves would have them at your mercy. For I know its like grabbing a rattlesnake by the tail to attack you."

"Yes" said Jean Saunders. The rattlesnake would have fair play."

"Will you do it?"

"Gladly if you can fix it so we won't be detected by the rear. How do they wear yo their hair going to school?"

"In braids" said Mildred Maxwell. "Where's the school?" asked Mildred Maxwell.

On Aberdeen street, The playground faces Jackson Boulevard.

"How do you get there?" asked Angelina Aronburg. "Jackson Boulevard is the next street south of here. You go west on Jackson, you'll see it on the north corner and you remember too not to wear stockings as my sisters go bare legged summer or winter. I'll give you their shoes to wear and their hats. When you are on the way don't look any where but front ward so your faces won't be seen. They won't try nothing untill you are in the school yard."

"And it's the morning after to morrow at school time."

"Yes"

"Any police in the game?"

"After the fight begins,"

"Yes"

"Who fix our hair. We must not go in the Chinese quarters and you must not bring your sisters here" said Jane Mallott.

"I can do it myself" said Pernod. "I often help them. Six of you are to be the girls. I'll disguise and dress as my sister Violet."

"Which of us do you select?" asked Angelina Aronburg. "You could select me as Jennie or I am of her size. Angelina Pickle could be Angelina and Mildred could be Hettie. Susan Farnol could be Joyce. Jean Saunders could be Catherine. You are Violet. Helen Rose could be Daisy. Is that all right?"

"Yes"

"And oh we will be so like scardy cats when they come" giggled Helen. "We'll fall on our knees (she demonstrated it) and say, Oh mercy mercy"

"When shall we disguise?" asked Jean.

"Come here before school time, day after to morrow, but come early."

"All right?"

And he and they repeated Pernod heading for China town. Some would wonder how this would result. Well the reader knows the child scouts too well to doubt the result. Pernod returned to his sisters in China town ahead of supper time. When he came they were playing the game of checkers that is some were one was sleeping peacefully and the others were reading. He asked the angel

of the medal!

"I shall I tell my sisters of my plan?"
"Yes, it's best to. You'll get advice and help from them."

He took off his hat and coat and sat down on a big Oriental lounge. They like us all crowded around him.

"Sisters," he said "Mack has planned to seize you the day after tomorrow at the Skinner school. God overheard the plot with Sally. That shows he does not know you're here. I'm laying a making the bait to catch the fish. Angelina's Aronburg and ~~one~~ of the golden haired girls courts fully armed, disguised as you and I as Violet are going to be the bait that catches the fish."

"Oh I hope you'll succeed," said Violet. "I'd dread it if Mack and his gang escape now."

"They won't I'll assure you that."

"But we could have acted as the bait."

"No," said Perrod. "You little girls are not like those girls courts and they if grabbed you would use you girls as a cover to prevent them selves from being fired on and get away. But it will be fatal for them to meet with the scouts. That's why I'll use them. I'll help Mack and his gang."

And you'll succeed," said Daisy. "I told you you would have good luck for being so good to us!"

"Good luck. Why I'm even doing this for your sake. What would you call that?"

Poor Daisy didn't know what to say but she smiled just the same.

"We can help you disguise like Violet like we did once before," said Angelina.

"That's one way we can reward our hero brother."

"Idiot?" said Perrod. "Say listen here. Where am I a hero? If there's any one a hero you girls are. Never in my life did I suffer anything like you little angels did."

"And if we can help it you won't," said Angelina kissing him on the cheek. "And we'll do anything for you. You deserve all our love and consideration. Oh happy day when we found you. God was sure good to us."

"And just as good to me," said Perrod. "But now let's eat our supper. I hear John see calling."

And off they went to supper. While at supper Angelina said: "Perrod dear while you held me in your arms and I went to sleep, I dreamed I was in the arms of an angel."

"maby mabeey you were at that" said Violet. "Some times I think Penrod is an angel in disguise" "What do you mean in disguise?" he asked. "That you took the form of a boy."

"Well that's a rich one" laughed Penrod. "I suppose you will say I'm the great Archangel who defeated Satan next. What makes you think so?"

"Because no one can do you any harm and you have saved us from dangers that to us is impossible to escape from" put in Daisy.

"We would have tried to escape from the Devil's island" said Catherine. "But the guards warned us of the grave dangers of even trying it. Do you think they were right or that they would not let you us go?"

"If you made it you could do better than me" said Penrod. "You are the three youngest of my sisters. I've read a true story of a hundred and fifty convicts who escaped from the islands but in their flight they were accosted by such dreadful perils

that only one got even as far as Central America. When they failed I don't see how you three could do it. And if you went by water you'd have six hundred miles of sea to Panama in a small frail boat. If you went by land you'd have impassable jungles before you, countless dangers of all kind and you'd surely perish. The most greatest danger I can think of is the big wild cats and swarms of migratory or flesh eating ants and bees. They are almost impossible to escape from. Even if you surrounded yourself with a circle of fire those insects would besiege you until the fire goes out.

To try to escape them by a stream is impossible as the ants can find means to cross as fast as you do and are good swimmers.

And the streams are full of Crocodiles too. I've heard of those ants attacking Crocodiles too right in the water. If you tried to cross a river on a raft the Crocodiles would be on the raft down under water and get you. You can tell their approach by a strange foul smell. If they swarm on you

you will meet a painful and frightful death. The bites from so many make you feel as if you were on fire. You cannot destroy them by any poisons. And they can easily outrun you. I have read though there is one escape, that is if they swarm on some other prey before they reached you, and satisfy their ravenous hunger on that.

Another peril equally as great is the fierce Indians. Your beauty might cause them to spare your lives, but they might carry you far away where you might never be seen again. And escape from those Indians would have been impossible. So you were very wise indeed to remain until I come. And that was doing a braver thing than making a flight."

"And you came to our aid" said Daisy "and yet we never rewarded you."

"You didn't?" asked Penrod. "I don't understand how that can be. You have proved to me that I am really your brother and have loved me more than ever before. And you even gave

your selves to me. And you have done everything you could for me. And each one of you cooked the best things you could buy for my meals. You have done for me what no other little girl has done for their brother. You are really little angels to me. And you accuse yourselves of being ungrateful. Can you prove it?"

The little girls had nothing to say. After their supper they went into their bedroom, where they got ready for bed as to call it, but never the less sat up for a while to talk while Penrod went to bed. He lay in bed facing his sisters. They thought he was asleep, but he really was looking at them steadily. He looked at their beautifully formed heads, golden hair and at their angelic faces and beautiful and most perfect form and wondered how and when he ever deserved to have little sisters like them. He thanked God with all his heart for this his great blessing and continually watching them until a strong love for them took even filled his heart.

He could not bear to think of Mack trying out his new diabolical scheme and as he looked at his dear little sisters conversing in low bird like tones he said in a heart felt whisper

"Dear Jesus. If it is true that good comes to those who try to make the lives of my sisters happy, then for me doing so, I ask a reward. But not for my sake, only theirs. Keep me and my followers trap Mack and his gang if it be thy will. Amen"

He might have whispered more loudly than he thought he did, for Daisy who was sitting on the foot of the bed asked:

"What did you say Pennod dear?"

"I was only whispering an extra prayer for something?" he answered.

"And I thought you was asleep" she said.

"I ought to be but while you and the other little girls are still sitting on your beds I can't keep my eyes away from you"

"I believe you love us more than we deserve" said Daisy getting up

and sitting closer to him. You have done more for us than we have for you and we could prove it."

"You didn't have the opportunity to do so" said their brother. "But I'm not doing it for returns. That I have you and your sisters is reward enough."

But it does not seem fair that we do not do something for you" said Violet - "Well" for you" said

"Aw forget it" said Pennod drawing Daisy into his arms. "Try to think of - of something else."

"There is something I was always thinking of since you told us of the two extremes we got" said Daisy resting her head on his shoulder. "And what is that?" asked Pennod stroking her golden head gently.

"Why" she said "it is that I believe firmly that you'd give anything if we were the happiest little girls in the world always"

"No" said Pennod "that wouldn't be enough" "Would not be enough" exclaimed Angeline. "What else could we be beside that?"

"I would rather see you be the happiest little girls in heaven also."

They looked at each other and then Jennie said:
"And in the same situation we hope you get the same reward with us too!"

"Why me?" said Pennod. "What am I? It's only you little girls I care for. I do not worry about myself. I can only be happy when you are the same."

"For the way you feel towards us," said little God will bless you immensely for it. But let us go to bed and get some sleep. Keep little Daisy in your arms all night if you wish but let's get some sleep."

Later that night Pennod was awakened by Daisy shaking him. "Pennod," she said, "I'm so thirsty but I cannot find where there is any water."

Pennod got up. "Wait and I'll get some," he said.

However, he was gone two minutes. Instead of coming back with water as she expected he returned with a tall glass of cold grape juice.

"But Pennod, you did not need to bother for that, I only said



a glass of water."
"Never mind. This will quench your thirst much better," he said. "I made it."

"Oh Pennod, how good you are to me," she cried, tears of happiness in her eyes, and the grape juice was indeed a relief from her thirst, the only thirst that she or her sisters will ever know.

"I'd do the same for the others," he said. "I know it said Daisy, 'You do anything for us after that one hot night you brought us all nice cold lemonade when we asked for water.'"
The two went back to bed.

However, the next day there came a tragedy. Somebody had spotted Sally going to warn Mrs. Masters to keep her children safely in the house.

The spies planned to kidnap and kill her, fearing she was a spy of Pennod and knew too much. A description of her had been given to them. Now there were a good number of little girls who wore the same style of clothing like she did. Two of the

spies confederates were chosen to trap and kill her. They were given the description of her and that she went to the skinmer school. When they trailed the little girl they however shadowed the wrong one. She was the daughter of a policeman.

They followed her until she came to a part of the street where few people were. Then they rushed up and grabbed her one placing his hand over her mouth so she couldn't scream. They despite her struggles carried her into a dark alley.

There a dreadfully foul deed was enacted. They first cut and tore off her clothes until she was stark naked. When she had a chance to scream and did so one of them a strong man grabbed her neck in a vice like grip and her eyes bulged and her tongue stuck way out. He then to make quick work barged her on the forehead with a hard piece of wood fracturing

her skull. Then with knives they tore or cut her whole body wide open threw her dead against the side of a building and disappeared. One man left his hat on the ground and the other two bloody knives in their haste to make themselves scarce.

"I believe the plan will be successful Period" said his companion who was Angelina Aronburg. He and three girls were walking down Jackson Road.

"It's been proven" said Angelina Ritchie that those that do good to your sisters have good luck. Who's been as good as you have. I'll not be afraid to be anything that you'll win to tomorrow."

"I believe so too. And I'll sure settle the score. Placing three of my sisters on a convict island as if they were the worst of criminals. That was more bitter than gall and wormwood to me. And four of them among lepers hoping they would catch it. Such a fate. And now since I've cued them to the death valley for them. Those of those

whom I capture will wish they had never crossed my path."

"Your poor little sisters have suffered too much already" said Jennie Turner. "You Pernod don't know half about it as we girls do. And for all else it is beyond words."

"My poor little sisters" said Pernod bitterly. "They are so lovely I don't see how any body could be cruel to them. I--"

"Oh Pernod, Pernod" cried a boy running up to him and the girls. "I'd ave you seen my sister. She did not show up at school and did not come home. Mother's worried."

"No I didnt said Pernod maybe she played hooky and is afraid to go home." "No no she never even was late to school" said the boy.

"But I was not near the school" said Pernod. "Don't worry Ned. She'll come home before supper I'm sure."

And they parted. "Ned is a sure a nice boy" said Jennie Turner. "See how respect fully he tipped his cap to us." "Yes said Pernod as he neared an

alley and looked in "7-7-1". His eye caught something some distant down that made his face turn white.

"My God what is that I see he cried. He walked in. The girls followed a short way but at what they saw could not look and they turned sick and leaned against the wall.

By the torn clothing clothing and hat of the dead child, Pernod thought it was Gally Fielder.

But one look at the face will open mouth and still protruding tongue told him different. "Oh my God" he gasped. "Ned's sister. She's been murdered."

The three girls were too shocked to say anything. They remained where they were too frightened too sick to move. Jennie vomited.

"Get out of the alley where you went see this" he yelled. "Cousin get a police man. I'd worry."

They slowly obeyed. While Angelina went to get a policeman. Pernod saw the hat lying there and picking it up looked it over. Then he observed the knives. He did not touch them.

for fear of getting his
finger marks mixed with
those of the murderers.
Then he noticed the
condition of the child's
body. The bowels were
out protruding from a
gaping fissure in the
belly. A blood lay in
a pool all around
her. He recognized the
knife and the nature
of the murder.

"My God. Those spies"
he roared. "I'll bet they
mistook her for Sally
Fielder. I wonder if they
knew her intentions."

"Angelina returned with
two policemen. You
couldn't make her go
in if you pointed a
cannon at her.

The policeman ran
up to the spot. One
of them at the sight
faltered and staggered
with a hoarse cry
against the side of
a building. Both knew
Bernad.

"It's my little girl"
the policeman sob-
bed. "This'll kill my
- my wife. Oh I can't
bear it. I can't."

Bernad came late
for supper but could
not eat. They
could see his face
was white.

"Are you sick Bernad?"

they asked.

"No" he answered hoarsely.
"The spies got the better of
me. They brutally murder-
ed Ned's sister May & came
across the body. Angelina
Jennie and Angelina
Richie."

"Oh Bernad you are fooling
I'm sure" said Catherine.
"No I'm not. They mistook
her for Sally Fielder. I
was found out why. I
one of their number saw
her go to Mrs. Masters
last night. I went right
away to Sally and
warned her. To protect
her Evan is bringing
her here until this
storm blows over."

John Lee bringing
in a paper confirmed
the report. The paper
gave a lengthy report
of Bernad finding
the naked body, the
nature of the murder
and so on. The mother
dropped dead at the
shock of the news and
Ned was grief stricken
and ill. The father
prostrated had to
be taken to a hospital.
His comrades took care
of Ned and his
elder sister Mabel.
The police had thrown
a dragnet in all
directions but the
criminal eluded it.

Violet and her sisters were horrified at the news. It was lucky they ate supper earlier, or they would not have been able to eat any now. It was not long before Evans came with Sally Fielders, and her mother too.

Sally was whimpering and looked awfully scared. She felt relieved when she saw Pennod and his sisters.

"Did any one see you enter Mrs Masters home?" asked Pennod. "Yes," she said between sobs, "One flung a brick at me. I was afraid to go home. I stayed all night. Mother came for me this morning. I didn't dare go out all day. I was so scared."

"And you know of the awful murder?"

"Yes," she answered, "May was my classmate."

"What was done by those spies?" said Pennod. "Thank God it was not you they got. But they meant to kill you. They

killed her by mistake.

Do the spies know why you went to Mrs Masters?"

"Yes. Some one told them, they were going

to kill Maryone and Margaret. The place was guarded by police. The spies say the kids know too much."

Pennod looked at Evans. "They too must be brought here. Hurry," he said. "They might kill them yet."

Evans hurried but he knew where they lived. Sally had been so scared she was sick and had refused to eat anything all day. John See brought food and told her she must eat and that she was positively safe here. Evans didn't walk to Mrs Masters. He took a taxi. He reached the place and rang the door bell. Mrs Masters came to the door.

"We come to get your little girl," he said. "They too are going to be killed. Quick, before it's too late."

The woman looked white. "Wait. They can put on—" "No, no. No waste of time. You come along too. Put nothing on. No can wait. Hurry."

Mrs Masters got her two little girls and hurried unseen into the waiting taxi. The taxi driver was astonished as to the destination but he obeyed,

The mother and the two little girls were brought safely in. Later a band of men, rough looking fellows armed with guns broke into Mrs. Masters' quarters from the rear. They were furious to find their prey had escaped. They ransacked the place hoping to find something of a clue.

They telephoned Mr. Mach the fact. By another gang Mrs. Felder's home was raided. Evidence there proved the wrong girl was killed, and Sally had escaped.

Regardless of the fact that other people lived in the building they set it on fire. A little girl seen by them was seized, grabbed by the throat and threatened with a horrible death if she told anybody. She was so scared that she promised desperately. They beat her and chased her away and made their own flight.

When called the fire department could not check the fire and had a difficult time seeing along the tenants.

At Mrs. Masters' home they didn't set no fire as the place was

fire proof and wouldn't burn. They didn't take anything as they had no order to do so. Beginning to think Mrs. Masters was out with her children they remained for a while. One of them saw a four year old child pass with short bobbed hair, and as it was warm in an armless dress, the demons thought up a horrible scheme. One of them ran down the steps, seized the child and carried her squirming and struggling up the steps, and into the house. The child screamed and struggled and tried to bite her captor. They didn't care what they did to her as she though well formed was not a good looking and had a dirty face. Her tongue protruded out far as her strong hands crushed her narrow robust muscled neck. The face showed her terror and suffering and her body writhed with the pain of it as she desperately clung with her hands at his arms. But he hung on as tight as he could. Her arm fell away and hung back wards limp and her struggles

grew weaker. Even after her struggles ceased he hung to her throat until the leader said: "Enough. lay her body in the bed there." He obeyed. The leader with a sharp knife slashed the belly open wide, drove it through the chest and then with hook like instruments pulled the body so widely open that it was almost apart. Then with the under bed sheet covered with blood one of them threw a bed covering over the body and left the prisoners.

A note was left on the bed, saying "This is what we'll do with your kids next if we ever catch them. They trifled with us by aiding Prince Pernod and his sisters. It was not until two days later before the little body was discovered. After its parents had the police search in vain. It was then too late for the police to do anything as Pernod had beat them to it.

Chapter 7 Disaster.

Over what had happened however Violet and her sisters were agrieved, frightened and almost ill themselves. They undressed but didn't go to bed very soon. Sally, Marjorie and Margaret were given beds to sleep in the same place. Little Marge was scared and shivery at Violet in Abbeysmian told Pernod to let her sleep with him.

He brought the child to her bed, and placed her in on the side by the wall. Marjorie said:

"It must be an awful thing to be choked to death like that."

"Don't we know it," said Violet. "It's an awful feeling too. We were often choked like that but were always able to save ourselves. They killed May thinking she was Sally by the clothes she wore. They strangled her, and beat her head in with a club."

"I wonder how it must feel to be strangled?" asked Sally.

"Your throat hurts awfully and there's an awful tickling feeling that makes you have a desperate feeling to cough," said Angelina.

"The worse feeling is to get no air. You can't breathe, and your lungs feel like on fire. It does not take long to lose your senses though. The pressure on the throat forces your tongue out of itself."

"If some one saves you in time, you'll have a very bad sore throat for several days and the tongue too feels funny in that

"I never thought those spies were as mean as that" said Marjorie.

"They'll do anything if they're pressed. They know that Sally and you have helped us and they want to get even. But I believe our brother will stop this. So let us try to sleep. And I hope we won't dream of those awful things."

When they finally got to sleep, they fortunately had a dreamless sleep. Pernod did not sleep much, as his desire to strike was too strong to allow him much sleep.

7 When morning came Pernod was up very early and got his own breakfast. Just as soon as he was eating his sisters were also getting up. They knew why he was up so early and included with their morning prayers they said the Rosary for his success.

Before he left he warned them not to go out anywhere that day. And to guard Sally and the others in a bundle he took what he was going to use for the disguises for himself and the six girls. And there sure was going to be that day an incident that would surely fill a number of pages in the newspapers.

He rode down 22th street to Idalito, and thence on a north car bound car to Adams.

In the old residence there he waited for the girls. They came sooner than he expected. He then sorted out the clothes for each, and they went to another room to put them on.

Angelina Anenburg and Reche were very sober girls to day, but there was a glint in their eyes that made Pernod know they were going to be as mean as he wanted.

He fixed their hair accordingly. Then he disguised himself. When he reappeared he certainly did look like Violet.

"Where, the others?" he asked.

At their respective ports" said Idalen.

"All right. That's good. Remember I'm the only one to look back at times.

If we are followed or shadowed, you must not let them see your faces. You my cousin resemble one of my sisters almost so I do not care what you do but it's better not to let them see we know we are shadowed. If they get suspicious my plan will be foiled and they'll escape us. Some will shadow us foot, the others will come in cars. And (remember) remember do not give any quarter. Those shunks are not worth it."

They shook their heads "yes" but from what happened yesterday they were not in any mood for lark talking. He supplied them each school books fastened by traps and they started on their way. They wound their way down Idalito street, without seeing Evans or any one with them. They wished to make themselves seem as unprotected as ever.

"Look out Idalen" whispered Pernod. "Don't let any one see your hip cannons. They're showing." She closed her coat.

They reached Jackson. For a moment there was so much traffic that they had to wait. At that moment Pernod took a cautious look around as quick as he was he took in everything at one sweep. He saw a man's head dart out of sight by the doorway of a tall building.

That convinced him he and his companions were followed.

The battle of Skinner School.

From the traffic slackened and they crossed Idaho. They went down at a swifter pace. Pernod noticed that strange black closed Automobile followed down Jackson at a distance.

"Keep on guard" he whispered. "Auto's are following us."

They were, however for they were observing everything out of the corner of their eyes. Onward they continued till they reached the last street before Aberdeen.

Pernod cautiously yazed around. Then on they went till they reached Aberdeen.

"Shall we enter the school by the main entrance?" asked Rose.

"No my sisters always entered by the playground."

As they approached they saw that the school yard was deserted.

"I thought the playground would be full of children," said Fred who was well.

"No" said Pernod. "Burns sent the teachers a note warning them what might happen down here."

They now entered the yard. Pernod who entered last closed the gate behind him. Pernod whose quick ears could catch the slightest sound heard a man say

"Now, our chance. They're alone. Not even the Goillie's is with them."

The gate was flung open and in rushed a body of fierce tough looking men. And to the surprise of the others they wore the garb, something like Glendorian soldiers. Pernod looking up saw children looking out of every closed school window. It seemed as if they were an audience waiting for the drama.

The men eleven in number came rushing into the yard. Pernod and the girls suddenly scattered, flung the school books to the ground and swung round with drawn army revolvers. Rose was the first to open fire and drop her man. Pernod threw off his wig.

"Back men. We're tricked," cried some one. "It's fine Pernod and those rattle snakes with him."

They retreated but the seven opened fire and dropped seven men. A panic seized the others. They jammed each the gates. Some answered the fire but missed. They cursed and swore and fought each other to be the first to get out.

Then from hidden parts more child scouts rushed forward some opening fire. Two more men fell.

Other men who were coming out of Auto's tried to aid the others to get in.

Then into this barrage of bullets came a well meaning house wife in an old car, driving southward for some shopping. She drove around the corner right into the fracas. She was unconscious of the battle untill one of the men whose name was Francis caught up with her car.

He jumped (if not pumped) on the running board and yanked open the door. She screamed and grabbed for her small daughter Joan, five years old. Francis growled:

"Go on get out" and punched her with his foot (he toot?) She tore open the door on the drivers side and half fell out but still holding the girl.

She ran for safety. Jennie Turner saw her & from her third floor school window she held her fire courageously untill the woman with her terrified child could reach a doorway across the street.

While she ran & Jennie poked the screen out of the school window with the rifle barrel and rested it on the sill. She knelt down resting the barrel firmly to give her a better aim. Her worst targets were a block away now, down street. The house wife had reached safety. She and her child was out of sight.

The Glandelinian with the smashed arm limped to the side of the car and begged Francis to open up and let him in.

The car was in the middle of the street jerking along bumpily in low gear.

Francis couldnt shift it. It growled along a few yards and

crossed Aberdeen street. He wasnt the expert driver his partner was. Jennie Turner had a perfect bead on the automobile on her sights but she was trying to save the car from damage if she could. The wounded man was still on the running board. Jennies rifle barrel reversed slightly from the car to the wretched mans head.

She took her time to fire the shot. It was a beauty. It picked the man off the car perfectly. The bullet caught the fugitive spy Confederate right in the fore head, picking him upward as if a strong man had hit him under the chin. He turned a back flop and came down flatly on his face and chest. Probably he never knew what hit him.

The bullet had gone right straight through his head, (both bullet & and taken the whole rear side of his skull out. And this was a range of over 200 yards down street. Jennie Turner missed the side of the car about two inches with that shot. It remains one of the finest examples of marksmanship under pressure probably in the city of Chicago.

Francis abandoned the car in a hurry when his pal was hoisted off the running board. He knew it would be his turn next. So he got out of the stolen car and ran in an oblique manner along the sidewalk towards another machine. Jennie waited for him to get free of the car and then winged him with a very pretty shot that went clear through the detroid muscles on the left shoulder. It passed & set his whole left arm

In this condition dripping blood brandishing a huge rifle, half dead with fright wild eyed and hysterical Tony Francis suddenly appeared along side the second car. There was another house wife with three small children in that car. Two were girls and one a boy. They saw the horrible apparition and the mother clutched her children. Tony fumbled with the door slumped into the seat and kicked at the woman with his foot. She wouldn't go and screamed for her husband.

The husband heard her half a block away and came running at top speed. In this car he could have escaped. It was a new model in excellent condition. The motor was turned on the gasoline tank was full and it had a new set of tires.

He could have gone out of the city before having to refill the tank.

It might have been the way out for Tony Francis, except for one thing. The car was a Ford a strangely made fad with an electric gear shift device advertised by that Company. It's small metal car about the size of a snuff box was under the steering wheel. It had a tiny lever hardly more than an inch long which does the shifting.

The mechanical gadget beat him. That device lashed the spy Confederate and stopped the rest of his get away plans. He had jumped out of one car that he couldn't

shift and into this one, which he even couldn't start let alone shift. He was weakening from loss of blood but still he fought. Frantically he turned all the levers and pushed all the buttons he could find.

He turned on all the lights, rapped and pounded on the gearshift bar, yanked and pushed on it until the strength of his desperation bent the steel lever.

But nothing happened. The radio was emitting frightened squeals and rattling off with static when the woman's hand got there. He came at Tony Francis with both fists but the wounded spy covered him with his rifle which he held in one good hand trying to pull the trigger. He was too weak. The woman and the three children were safely out of the car. The husband remembered having seen a policeman up the street a short time before and looked for him.

The policeman had heard the shooting and was running down Aldern street when he saw the body of the dead man. That's where the husband met him.

In the few minutes the husband was away Francis elbowed his way feebly out of that car and stumbled down Jackson, Paul going west. Near a factory office, street floor he saw another car a Packard. He was getting dizzy and he hardly had enough strength left to open the car door and fall heavily into the driver's seat his rifle still beside him.

The owner of the car saw the garping spy enter the car. To him and a friend of his it was just a case of a auto thief. They could take care of that themselves. Van Doren spoke first.

"What do you think you're doing?" he growled at Francis.

"Get the hell out of here or I'll kill you" muttered the spy. Then he fainted. The police man reached the car within a few minutes. He opened the door and yanked Francis out by the collar but the spy recovered some what and again attempted to go for that rifle.

The police man held him down on his back with one knee while the others looked at the wound. Excited towns people came running up. Among the first to arrive were two more police men.

"This guy is one of them who attached some little police or soldier girl near Skinner school" said one of the police men. "His pals lying in a heap out there on Jackson. They tell me those girls fought it out and killed seventeen of those fellows."

"Some thing was 'wrong' said another. "They may have been those strange Abbe woman girl scouts. Mistaken for those poor little Mexican children most likely. Help me get this fellow to jail. Call a doctor. So it finally happened did it? Perrod at last is getting his revenge? Well."

Gradually one bit of evidence at a time the story was pieced together. Francis was in a state of coma when the doctor examined him in the jail, muttering incoherently. An undertaker was called to remove the body of the dead man from the blood stained pavement.

In the meantime the spies in the rear of the cars had strove with might and main to get away from the furious boy and girl scout, who strove with equal energy and desperation to prevent their escape.

But one car got started and got through the heavily armed police patrol which had taken to the streets in an attempt to check their flight. They tried to flag the car but the driver stepped on the gas.

Then followed another car loaded with girl and boy scouts heavily armed. They were not stopped and gave chase down Jackson East. The fleeing car was traveling close to 75 miles an hour however and the two cars loaded with the child scouts could not go so fast their drivers being mindful of the safety of other drivers and pedestrians and therefore could not catch up with it. Then a motorcycle cop gave chase but lost out.

Perrod in the first pursuiting car knew why the fugitives traveled at that speed disregarding traffic cop, traffic and every thing else. They were now guilty of reckless driving and therefore endangering human life.

Just at a crossing where traffic Cop Mike stood blowing his shrill whistle Pernod whipped out his pistol and began shooting at the tires of the fleeing car. His first bullet crashed into the rear end of the machine. Then a flash of pistol fire came from the fleeing car, and a bullet ripped through the top of the pursuing car.

The occupants of the machine ahead were firing through the glass of the rear window. The followers of Pernod accepted the challenge and several volleys were exchanged. Yet no one was hit.

By this time the autos were nearing down towards Idalito and where from a building having been torn down near a left turn caused a dead end for any too abrupt a turn.

Apparently the driver of the fleeing car did not know this or had forgotten about it in the excitement of the chase.

At any rate he kept speeding down the avenue at 70 miles an hour heading straight for the dead end and a 20 foot embankment running full length on the corner of both streets.

Pernod driving his own car realized what was coming and put on the brakes. But the fugitive car sailed down the embankment at full speed.

For an instant it seemed certain that the other car would roll over and probably kill all of its occupants, at least

four them inside. But miraculously the car landed on four wheels and came to a sudden stop among the remaining house debris below. All the child scouts were out of their own car and at the edge of the sidewalk almost before the other machine had stopped. As they watched the occupants of the other car jumped out and started running to the other side where it seemed easy to climb out.

One of them paused long enough to fire two shots at Pernod, neither of which found their mark. Pernod took steady aim and put a bullet squarely into the back of one of the running men while his followers dispersed in three directions to head off the fugitives if possible.

The man shot at fell in his tracks and was dead after the pursuers could get to him. The other, climbing to the sidewalk on the other side fought fiercely to pass the child scouts who used their rifles as clubs.

Some of the spies broke through and ran down an alley. Angelina Arambury and Jennie Turner brought three of them down before they got far. A bunch of work men, knowing something was wrong, closed in and blocked their escape.

One of the spies drew a pistol but it was knocked out of her hand. The workmen closed in as the girl scouts rifle in hand came up with three police men.

Thank for blocking their escape" said Angelina "We generally don't give no quarter, but since they're captured and unarmed and out of the fight we'll have to."

The rest of the gang caught on the deep hollow were now also attacked by police coming to the scene of the fight, and after a desperate fight in which two men were killed and three wounded, the survivors gave up and surrendered.

The others of the enemy in the two remaining cars escaped but with two of their number dead and one badly wounded. The captured ones, scratched and bleeding were hurried to the Dearborn Street Police Station.

The wounded ones were taken to the Brede well hospital.

And all that exciting fight happened through the early morning.

However Mack and his Chief aide did not show up at this scene. He had left all that to his Confederates. He saved like a mad man when by phone he heard how they had been tricked by dangerous girls, disguised as the Vernor girls and led by Pernod, and a great number of their members shot down, and a full gang captured.

He suspected that Sally Fielders and Maryone Walters had slipped Pernod the news, giving his scheme away and strove to find means to escape their capture. Later that day

but it was in vain. Photos of Sally and Maryone and Margaret had been found in their homes, and so Mack the next day had spies in disguise or policemen and plainclothes men, watch all little girls going to school in those districts, but to no avail.

No children answering those photographs were seen going to school. Mack had no idea they were safely hidden with Violet and her sisters in Chicago's Chinatown. As to Jed Patern Mack knew nothing about him being complicated with the three girls.

That boy soon was going to be the ruin of Mack and the rest of his Chicago gang.

On the day of the fight at the Skinner, there because of the excitement was no more school. Pernod spent the rest of the day questioning the prisoners about the shocking murder of little May, but they insisted that those two who killed her had not allowed themselves to be known by any of their own comrades which was the strict Glan delorian rule.

Pernod could see the prisoners really told the truth. "Were they in the fight?" he asked.

"Yes."

"Were they hit?"

"No, they were in the last car."

"What was the purpose to seize my sisters and maroon them in the death Valley of California?"

He was not going to do that right after he had mapped them. He was going to force you to a compromise. "And what was that?"

"To leave off harassing them and take your sisters and go home."

"I would have left you alone if you had not pecked on my sisters in the first place. We came over mainly to learn the schooling here. What if I did not come to a compromise?"

"He would have kept his word and you'd never have seen your sisters again."

"Does Mach know the wrong child was killed?"

"Yes he beat the two men up terribly for their mistake. He'll get her yet I'll bet."

"Does he know where my sisters are?"

"Yes."

"Where?" asked Pernod feeling uneasy.

"He won't tell. A man disguised as a police man told him."

"Is it at 201 Hulsted Street?"

"I suppose so, but he learned to day after the fight that you hid your sisters softly away however, where it's impossible to reach them. I'll say you beat us to it."

"Will he try to get at my sisters there by any means possible?"

"Do you think he's crazy? He ain't got the nerve to tangle with Chen a man. They do terrible things to those who try to get at anybody

they are protecting. And there's no getting away from them. They're a thousand times more fierce than your Abbeonmar child scouts."

"Why did Mach intend to kill Sally Fielders?"

"He heard she knew of his plan to seize your sisters and wanted her killed so she couldn't warn you. He intended the two other girls after Sally was seen going to their home. He believed they told her."

"If he knew this why did he try to carry out his scheme?"

"He thought Sally was killed before she could warn you. It was only when you whipped us that he learned the wrong girl had been killed. He'll get her yet I'll warn. There's no getting away from him. He knows ways to do it. And he'll get your sisters yet too."

"But if I can help it," said Pernod. "You have unconsciously warned me. It'll increase the illigiance of the Chinamen. And where is Mach residing or his quarters?"

"He has no special head quarters. He takes any place he chooses."

Pernod after telling Burn what was going to be done to their men, finally left the station for home.

What had already occurred caused the news boys and those at the newsstand to shout wildly the next day. John See (riding on a flea) hearing the "Extra" went out to get an Evening paper. This he brought to Violet Pernod.

had not returned yet. It was soon going to be supper time. She and her sisters looked over the paper and were surely thrilled at what they read. There was big black (cat) headlines announcing the facts of the battle and the results.

It told how three car loads of big powerful armed men were sorely row beaten at Skinner school and routed with thirty of them killed, by a swarm of strange girls and boys in two colored uniforms, rushing to the aid of the little Virgin girls.

This show the reporters did not know these too were child scouts disguised as (child) the Virgin girls.

In the paper pictures engraved in drawings showed of the fight. It reported there was no loss on the other side, though 4 police men had been knocked down.

It told of the escape of two cars of men and the capture of one and its occupants. There was two sheets telling everything and plenty of pictures. All this news sure caused them to be so excited that they forgot all about supper time. Just as they were at the most interesting part then Pernod came in with a load on his face as if

nothing unusual had occurred and asked:

"Well my little fauer of Ideavon, what the news?" They looked up at his approach. "I think you should know," cried Jennie bringing the paper towards him. "You did far more than we thought you would. You licked three big gas buggies full of men and captured those out of one automobile."

"Why give me all the credit," said Pernod. "Jennie Sumner from the school window did the most remarkable shooting on record. She brought down two men at long distance range and prevented the escape of a third. And she also with our team, captured fourteen men."

"But you caused it," said Violet. "And that will learn them to leave us alone."

"But I found out Mack knows you little girls are here, and his spies are striving to locate Sally, Mayme and her sister. So under any conditions they must stay here untill all this blows over."

"But whether he knows it or not he can't surely get at us here so why worry," said Angelone.

"There's always a way to do it," said Pernod, "and untill he's put out of the way I won't be able to rest easy. That sound reel is very foxy. But let us get on supper and then think of

where and how we can get Mack and the rest of this gang. (clang clang) and before he does succeed in getting you and the three girls.

The ten girls ate their supper in silence. Sally was still very apprehensive and had not left the room all day and gave a frightened start every time some one entered.

The thrilling reports of the new papers did not comfort her, but little Margaret had lost most of her fear, and all the Oriental design and lanterns was a great curiosity to her.

During supper Violet and her sisters spoke in Abbe annian so that the three others would not lose their nerve from the conversation and grow parucky.

"Did the prisoner really tell you the truth?"

"You mean about Mack knowing really where you are?"

"Yes."

"He told the truth. Of course he said Mack is not crazy enough to try any thing himself but he could find some means. I fear he could even outwit the chink. He is a very clever old fool and we must

all be strictly on our guard. He could even bribe some evil minded Chinese to do something. See warned us you know that only his gang could be trusted."

"Then I suppose were not safe anywhere we hide."

"I can't say yes or no on that matter," said Pennrod. "And I only wrecked one third of his number. And for this he may be bent on getting revenge. His very face shows that he is a dangerous foe to deal with at any time."

"Then what are you going to do Pennrod dear?" asked Daisy. "I'll have to have Evans stay with you and never leave you. A hundred men even armed can't take you little girls away from you. I've noticed he didn't leave you all this time. That shows he ain't so sure about your safety either."

"There's comparative safety in the daytime," said Idelle. "What we fear is about the night. That is just when they would try anything and we can't trust all the Chinese. I'm afraid."

"But See said all those here can be trusted."

"Maybe said Violet but we have found out that most people here are stark crazy about money, literally."

make the money their god. They say it is easy to bribe there or any Chinese and if Mack can get a number of Chinese on this side by means of money they may attack See and his gang and attack us. and cover Evans with a ring of pistols before he could do anything. And so you see we are worried."

"I'm afraid we may see the Death Valley yet" said Jennie.

"You are always a pro mortigator Jennie" said Pennod this time in English.

"What is that?" asked Sally.
"I might be a pro mortigator but it sometimes happens I'm right." she answered not paying attention to the question.

"What is that?" asked Sally again.

"What is what?" asked Jennie.
"That name Pennod called you?"

"He did not call me any names."

"He did too. But I can't say the word."

"I know what she means" said Pennod: A pro mortigator is a person who tells of a disaster or misfortune coming.

"You see Sally" smiled Jennie, "I'm a calamity Jane."

"And what is that?" asked

Sally.

"Pennod just told you. We who predict a misfortune of some kind. And we sure had lots of misfortunes."

"And you seemed to have lived too long through all that" said Pennod again in Abbieannian.

The school children gazed at the three curiously as they marched off with the child scouts following.

The two children were hustled into a waiting automobile or gas buggy as the Virgin girls call them.

Then away they went. They were taken to where Pernod sisters were quartered. Violet was there because despite her condition he would not allow her sent to any hospital.

He was afraid Mack gang would get her there. It was wise in keeping her here.

Violet and her sisters were surprised at the appearance of the two, though Angelina acted as if she knew "pig eye" Mack, but then she looked away.

"Who are they?" asked Joe. "Are they threatened by Mack gang too?" "No," said Pernod. "They are Mack's two children. Because what Mack has done to you girls I'm going to strike him through them."

"Oh I hope you won't be cruel to them," said Jennie. "I'm sure they are not to blame for what he does." "No I draw the line on that," said Pernod. "I've got other plans."

"Ain't it a dangerous thing to do?" asked Violet rising up on one arm on her bed. "Do you think it will really make him come to terms?"

"I had no idea of that sort of thing," said Pernod. "They are children of our dangerous arch enemy Mack. Remember Devil Island and Malibu. Remember May and poor Sally and her brave brother. Remember the trained panthers his men brought to bite your neck. And yours was bitter for worse. It is my intention that if he does not lay off from attacking you I'll send them where he'll never see them again."

"I'm afraid that would place us into much greater danger," said Daisy. "I'm sure don't do it. We are not against it for he does not deserve our slightest consideration or sympathy, but your plan would be a boomerang to us. I advise to let them go." "I know what said Angelina."

"Consult my physician about that medical. Do as he advises. I will," said Pernod. And he asked:

"Did I make a sure move?" "It would have been if their enemies did not know where you and your sisters are. With their knowledge of you whereabouts your move was folly. Better not warn them or let them free. They won't tell what you did. They would be afraid to." Pernod had some sympathy of Mack's sister but not for Mack. Intimately he and his

sisters had spoken in Abbreannian so that the two little meany children children did not understand a word. Pennod decided to use his mistake to another purpose. He beckoned Angeline to him.

"Is the boy who always snubbed you when you went to the skinner school?"

"Yes" she answered, in (English) English. "But I did not know he was Mr. Mack's son. He insulted me once when I caught him cheating in school and told him about it."

"He did not do anything else out of the way?"

"No Pennod he didn't." "Then I'm satisfied."

Pennod turned to the two. "You Jean go over there and sit down. I am going to speak a few words with your brother."

She obeyed, but was shy and too turned to sit near Pennod's sisters.

"Now listen here" said Pennod to Mack. "I brought you here to show you who my sisters are as you have only seen one of them. But this little girl I called over to me is my sister Angeline. I'm telling you that in case she goes to school

again I won't have her snubbed. You must show her all the respect that is due to her, and she is deserving of it. I don't want to hear of it again. I could have made you and your sisters my prisoners because your father is our enemy. That makes you our enemies too. So you see for what your father has done to my sisters, I could even not do as I please with you and your sister in return, since I have you here now. But my country does not war on girls and boys like Glan Delina does. So I just took you here to warn you. Now I am going to have you sent out but blindfolded so you won't know this place, you'll be released now but I want to tell you when Angeline goes back to school you are to treat her even as a friend, and if I ever hear any complaints from her, I'll surely make it hard for you. I won't have any of my sisters treated with the slightest disrespect by anyone, no matter what they are or what they did. And I suppose if I asked where your father lived you wouldn't, or dare not tell."

"I will not and cannot treat your sisters with respect no matter what happens" said Big eye Mack. "I dare not go contrary to my father's will. I won't do anything to them but I dare not talk to them. I do not mean no harm but I am watched secretly. The worse of it is, I'm sure

father (Mack) knows 'by now what you did to us'." "He does?" said Pennod and his sisters with one accord. "And how could that be? Who watches you and where?"

"I cannot dare tell that either. And that is not a fair question to ask us for me" declared the boy. "For if I told you truly you might injure my father altogether and if we told you an untruth we would be naughty and deserved to be punished. And my mother who was killed in a fight said, no body can imagine what horrid things your sisters are. She and father said to that to them 'your sisters are uglier than the Gargoyles'."

"But say your father and you too better be careful how you criticize my sisters. I don't would

you like to be called ugly looking creatures yourselves? As a matter of fact my sisters are the most good, the most important, the loveliest and prettiest little girls in all the world!"

"And you are seven little queens." Jean exclaimed. "No answered Jennie" you are wrong about that. If it is God's will we may be better than queens some day, but just now we are princesses."

"What's that?" asked Jean gazing with awe at Jennie. "Young queens of course but we cannot call ourselves queens until the proper time" was the reply. "Even in Abbaannia, good as they are, the high rank people are very proud, but mother said, that despite our age, we are very powerful in rank and should be the most respected and important little girls in the world."

"Where is your father's spies now if your father knows of this?" asked Daisy anxiously looking around.

"I'm not afraid to let it out as you could not detect them any way. Did you not see a boy go out of the room or seen, as

you took us. He has gone to tell father."

"And will he make a desperate attack here?" enquired Catherine drawing back.

"It is very probable he would." And - and - do you think he would succeed this time?"

"To be sure, when he can get all his men together. But most of them are afraid of these Chinese" answered the boy in a regretful tone.

"How old are you?" inquired Violet who noticed that he stared at her and her sisters as if fascinated.

"Quite young I grieve to say and my sister that you have here is practically my own age. I remember rightly we are each nine years old the day before yesterday."

"But that isn't so young" cried Violet in amazement.

"No" drawled Pig eye Mack "it seems to me very babyish."

"How old is your father?" asked Jennie.

"He is about 66 years old. He is a little fuzzy you know and afraid of growing old. Being still in his prime."

"I should think he would be" agreed all the girls together.

"After a moments thought Jane asked.

"Because my father torments us are we friends or enemies? I mean will you be good to us or do you intend to make us prisoners?"

"As for that we princes would like to make prisoners of you two, Jean, since you are children of our enemy who persecuted us, and sent us to two dreadful islands but unfortunately we have hearts that are merciful so that we can not have the meanness to do so. Of course that does not mean that we can be friends unless you chose to be on our side. If you chose to do that we might consider, but even if you do not, you, if you leave us alone will be quite safe."

There was a regretful account in Jennies voice and at the words all the other little girls sighed dismally. Jean and Pig eye Mack felt relieved. Presently Jean asked.

"Why do you refuse to make us prisoners?"

"Well because we no reason to punish our brother really know what he about but he made a mistake this time in bringing

you here. We could be friends if you took to our side and you probably won't do that." "No indeed," said "peg eye" Mack. (sat on a tack) "We don't even wish for the company of such awful girls as you are." "Permit me to say," returned Jennie somewhat angrily, "that you are impolite to call us names, knowing that we cannot resent your insults."

"Yes," added Perrod, "I consider my sisters very beautiful in appearance, and we are of an excellent family and have a pedigree that I challenge any human to equal as it extends back about twenty thousand years to the time after the flood. Can you match that pedigree?" "Well," said Jean, "I was born in Chicago and I guess that being just as respectable and thought, as being forced to stay on the Devil's Island, and Molokai will be a climate every where. If it isn't I'll have to stand it that all."

"You would not have stood the climate of the Devil's Island one day," said Daisy. "But my father did not send you girls to those islands," said

mother. Jean. "I did not know you were even sent away and neither did he or my mother." "My father is blamed for many things he did. I don't do that is why he is so hot against you. But after to-morrow you'll never see him again. Another man is taking his place, and he's quitting the job here. But no matter what you will do to us we will not—never will tell who the ones were who ordered you sent to those islands because one of you in that battle trip killed my mother and almost blinded my mother?"

"But that can be done easily," said Perrod. "I don't know if you like to face the third degree?" "You're statement shows you are with my enemies through thick and thin and why did she beat up my sisters then?" "That's a criminal offense. If that's the way you feel then I'm not letting you go. I threw pepper in her eyes because she did the same to my sisters. No one shot her. She escaped in spite of the pepper in her eyes. You say

you know about that and I will refuse to tell us the third degree will compell you. You won't be able to stand that."

"From what I heard of the third degree everything I and my sisters went through is nothing" said Joyce. "It is a miracle if you can remain silent in the face of that."

"And you would really do that to us?" asked Jean tears flooding her eyes.

"It is not us" said Jennie. "Our brother and the police will do that. It seemed mean that was done to your mother but she had no right to throw pepper in our eyes and steal Violet and Daisy. If she is captured she'll go to prison and you'll be looked on as the children of a jailbird. Oh we're very good all right but we sure can strike back hard. If it is fair to do those things to us it is fair in war for us to quit being the gentle fool doves we were and turn into danger our rattlesnakes. So if we like we strike we could hold you alone for saying that. And we will

even if it is dangerous to do so unless Pernod decides (other wise)"

"We need not worry whether he tells us or not" said Pernod. "But listen Angelone when you go to school again and he acts the same towards you as before just let me know that's all. And I'll deal with him and his sister just the same as his father dealt with us." Then he called to one of the Chinese friends who came at his bidding. Pernod first wrote something on a piece of paper and placed it in an envelope. Then he turned to Mack's son.

"I'm giving you this to give to your father. But don't think it is an explanation of why you were brought here for it isn't. See that he gets it. (not a fit) I'll see what it says. Now young" to the Chinese (do him) - See that they are blindfolded and taken to the street."

And they were led away by the Chinaman. Was it a compromise who you wrote to Mr. Mack (lying on the bed) asked Angelone.

"No sur-re-bob. I don't compromise with any one. It is only a momentary truce if he will accept it. If he

does we'll see him to-morrow. Otherwise not. I've got to think of something to stop this. Mr Mack is an American not a Glandelinian. But he works for them. And they pay him well. But if he is caught, he'll first serve a prison term, and then exiled a man, without a country."

"Do you intend to try to convince him, then, on the wrong side?"

"No, I never thought of that. But I going to try to get him to listen to reason on one thing. My father had suggested that himself."

"And what is that?" asked Violet.

"You'll all find out if he comes at I suggested alone, unarmed and wearing a white truce suit."

"What if we don't see him?"

"Then you'll have to disguise as pauper boys in order to even go to Idoly Communion. It is either Mack or some one who is causing all this fracas of our being barred from St Patrick. No one not even the priests or the sisters will believe you are so good that you do not need to go to confession."

"That situation is the talk of nearly the whole city? Tell you dear sisters is it very dangerous for us in this city. I did not hide you here merely from the spies but from the public in general. I did not like the conversation I so often heard. I fear the people not the spies." "How could they be worse than the spies?" asked the little girl, altogether. "They are not."

"Glandelinians? of course not," declared Bernad. "But Glandelinians are nothing compared to these people, and people of a nation which could lick the world. They're supposed to be Christians but God knows as well as we do that there is not a single person sinless here and there are crimes committed by the million throughout the country."

An wicked or Glandelinian is the God knows is free from crime committed. Commit a small crime then and there, hell to pay. In this country every body sins except the insane and they only even then notice the sins of others. They therefore knowing this don't themselves believe there is any body in the whole world."

who can truthfully say
 "I have never runned" I therefore
 when we came over here
 and tried to show it is true
 about us, they either laughed
 at us, or became hostile.
 I don't doubt one, but that
 the spies finding this
 out, took advantage of it
 and must have secretly
 increased the hostility of
 the people by circulat-
 ing a lot of black lies
 about us. I have dis-
 covered and captured some
 of those lying circulars.
 One of them stated that
 we hate this country
 because it is not our
 own and that if we
 had the chance we'd
 tear the stars and stripes
 and trample the flag
 under foot -"

"Oh is that so" said
 Jennie with great heat.
 "I've never seen any
 one even raise their
 hat or salute as they
 passed by or under one."
 "I could have shown you
 little girls some of
 them" said Pernod but
 it would ruin your
 modesty and make
 you blush with shame
 so to make it worse
 the most of the
 people believe all
 that. Some of the
 circulars even say that
 we came to this

country to spy into its own
 secrets. All those false reports
 have caused most of the people
 to be so hostile towards us.
 What only saves us, is that
 the Chicago police are wise
 to the situation, and it was
 Burn who advised me to
 place ourselves here. I do
 fear the more hot-headed
 and evil natured people
 are going to rise in immense
 armed mobs against us.
 I myself dare not approach
 within sight of St Patrick
 Patrick's Church. None of
 the priests or nuns will be-
 lieve what I say and they
 look on us as either
 diabolical or crazy. We are
 looked on every where as
 base deceivers and enemies
 of their country disguised
 as unusual saints and
 therefore no one will have
 to do anything to do with
 us, and we are rejected
 every where now."

"That shows that the spies
 are trying to win their
 purpose by running our
 characters" said Joe. "So
 I know that we are in
 grave danger. But I thought
 we were only brought
 here because of the
 spies."

The next day came
 hot and windy for
 the last part of May.
 Pernod waited for the
 coming of M. L. C.

58
Pennod did not know exactly what time he would arrive and how he would arrive, but had sent him a pass with the note. The question was:

"Would he come?"
They waited patiently however for they had no idea when he would come as Pennod in the note had not mentioned any particular hour. They had been up early and ate an early breakfast. The Chinamen had been instructed not to let any one else in with Mr Mack. (sitting small table)

But Mr Mack came. He was dressed in a white Duck suit and wore a large white straw hat. His shoes were also white with the instep section black.

He was a tall stout man and wore a small black beard, and Harold Lloyd style of spectacles. But he had no mustache. He had a stern fierce fighting face, and true Irish features. Pennod motioned him imperiously to a seat. Mr Mack sat down without removing his hat. Though Pennod's sisters were there seated also Mr Mack either did not see them or acted as if they were not there.

113
It was the first time that Pennod and his sisters had ever seen Mr Mack face to face.

"Well?" he drawled in a loud rough voice "What did ye find for me fer?"

"First thing" answered Pennod, "I want you to take a look at my sisters, and whether you wish to or not."

However Mr Mack did look and was so startled by their dazzling beauty in every way that he was filled with the greatest amazement.

"Yes I see them" he said.

"Well did you know that through the work of your spies the youngest were sent to the French Dervels Islands, and the oldest to the 'land of the living death' called Molokai?"

"For why are you asking me that question? That incident does not concern me at all."

"I know it don't" snapped Pennod, "but I want my answer."

"No I didn't until I read it in the papers. And at that time I felt greatly relieved. I wondered how you got them back."

"That was easy enough. I got help from God and home. And

Are you the main leader of my enemies?"
 "I was. I've resigned my commission and another man will take my place to night. Why did you bring my kids here since I saw you did not injure them. I myself saw you take them from the Skinner school?"

"You got my note did you not?"

"Yes."
 "Well that was the reason. I took your children first to warn Mack Jimson to be respectful to my sister Angelina and to give him that note for you."

"And why did you resign your commission?" asked Joyce.

"I was forced to resign" you was. And what for?" asked Pernod.

"I was reported to the Glandelinian authorities because you Prince Pernod got the best of me for every move. You'll have an enemy in my place you won't be able to trifle with."

"Well if I could trifle with you I'm sure I could trifle with him. If you had really resigned your command than I'm afraid my sending for you was in vain."

Mr Mack looked greatly surprised.

"Anyhow you who are a born American had no business to help or lead those scoundrels even if the Glandelinian government did pay you well for it. I wanted you to come here because I thought the sight of my sister would touch your heart. But I see it is in vain. You're going back to Glandelin? I suppose?"

"No. even though I helped your enemies I never was there. But after this day you'll never see or hear of me again. I'm going to unknown places and you'll never be bothered by me or my wife again. But enemy though I am I'll give you fair warning just the same. Look out for the one who takes my place to night. I'll be compelled to tell him all about you."

"and who is he?" asked Pernod.

"I do not know his name yet though I've heard of him. Did you ever glance over the Daily News?"

"Yes" she "see 'Mutt and Jeff'?"

E. Nelson
N. S. Smith

Indeed one of the most surprising things or experiences that I have ever had was that I had received about two weeks before the battle of Shanna or Tran Creek the greatest Christian victory in the war.

I apparently received a stopping as well as an insulting letter from one of the Virgin Girls but signed by her and her sisters.

It was brought to him by a colonel. Of course he did not know what to make of it. At first he was wondering whose writing it was he almost believed it at first.

It was a sealed letter demanding his immediate resignation and handing in of his resignation from the army altogether.

For a long time he sat at his table reading it over and over wondering exceedingly why all meant and how could it be possible after all the difficulties they had throughout the long war were they who were all of them or were they just using up his companionship?

But then it couldn't be. And besides no one had brought him a message from them the day before.

And then he decided that it was not his business to resign from his command even if they were the principles of Abolitionism. Cause he really was the authority of the army.

their chief guardian and therefore he should also alone be their superior. Of course if he did really do anything wrong or offended them seriously in any way they could demand his resignation providing they got the permit from their father the Emperor.

Yet he was dumbfounded because it was written in Violet's own hand and the handwriting of her very sisters were on the signatures.

But then somehow Evans felt a strange suspicion come over him. Evans was no fool. He was shrewd and prudent. And he knew not why they should demand his resignation for such an insignificant thing as stated in the letter, after all he did for them throughout the war.

At first when he read the letter after receiving it he was both shocked and fearfully angry at them and had just sealed the note with the purpose to send it to Emperor Virram, when something he suddenly thought made him change his mind.

He knew the Glandelinians have tried every desperate plot to get him out of the way so they could destroy them. He therefore was determined to investigate. He read it several times more and the more he read it, the more it upset

and yet the more suspicious he became. The message was as follows:

To His Excellency
General Jack Ambrose Evans,
Sir,
Your immediate resignation from the army is demanded. You were requested to appear at our headquarters to go out with us on a scouting tour, and you failed to come.

No excuse is necessary as we do not listen to any.

Violet Virram.
Jennie Virram.
Joyce Virram.
Catherine Virram.
Daisy Virram.
Idella Virram.
Evangelina Virram.
U. B. C.
Johanna Junction.
Francis Creel.

What really surprised Evans more than ever was that he surely remembered he never received any summons from them to appear, and if they really did send a message he did not receive it yet from the handwriting it looked as if it was absolutely a fact that he was asked to resign his command immediately.

For a long while he paced up and down in his room in his head.

in a very bad mood indeed. And all this while at first he believed they were very ungrateful little Princesses to turn him down like this. So even write him a curt insulting message after all he had risked of his own will for them.

For all that morning he thought over in his mind all he had done for Violet and her sisters and how they had been so friendly and even loved him.

The more he thought of this the more he began to suspect it was a fraud. It was not in them to do this to any one who was their friend. And besides the way they had been so unusually devoted to him it seemed impossible.

And resign his command at so critical a time? Why it would ruin the nation put the Virian Girls in great danger, and even now he imagined the Princesses were betraying him in their friendly way.

He also remembered how faithful they were to him how often his generals had warned him not to let anything part him from them. Finally after glancing over the note again he

felt a change come over him a feeling that almost confirmed his suspicions that it was a fraud. For he knew there were clever enough to copy correctly the handwriting of some one else. Even he could do that. And they could not be felt sure demand him to resign from his command when their nation is at stake.

He then had another thought which gave him a ray of hope.

Period the day before had been with them from morning till night. He could tell him the whole truth. He decided to send for the boy immediately and explain matters to him. He went to the door and summoning his orderly said in his military tone but with a slight touch of anger and nervousness in it:

"I have Schoenfeld Pennod sent to me. I'm in a hurry as it is something very important and I will tolerate no delay on the part of the messenger whatever. I want to see him immediately."

The orderly saluted and went out. On questioning another officer he was informed that the Virian Girls were visiting general Virian and he did not know when they would return. While he waited for the lad to

come he look from a small dresser large round magnifying glass and examined the note through that, and also the signatures of the Vivian Girls. And through the glass the nature of the writing changed a trifle.

Just as he finished the idelle announced the boys arrival, and then Pennod came in and stood at attention.

For fully five minutes Evans did not stir but stood looking out the window.

He was afraid to question him. He was apprehensive that he may confirm the note if they really did send it. But after standing there for five minutes he decided to have it over with. Then turning to the boy he motioned to a chair, saying:

"Sit down my boy. I have some important questions I want to ask you."

The boy did so and Evans again stood in front of the window without saying anything.

Pennod observed that the general looked worried and angry, acted as if he was nervous and excited, but he waited for him to speak first, as was his usual way. After awhile he swung around and faced Pennod. Then he said:

"My boy, I want you to tell me the truth and know you will. Where were you yesterday?"

11
The boy was surprised indeed at this question and wondered what the general meant. For a moment the lad thought he was called to account for some wrong deed some one might have accused him to the general about. But he answered truthfully looking the general squarely in the face:

"At their own request sir, I was with Violet and her sisters all day. They wished me to do something for them."

"I understand. I believe you my boy" declared Evans looking more at ease. "I had the Vivian Girls any intentions of going on a scouting tour yesterday afternoon?"

"Yes sir, they did but they changed their minds. I asked them if they wished to summon you and they said 'no you would too hard for them. The day before and needed a rest. They praised you highly for saving the army from defeat and could hardly stop talking about it. I was of them slept all afternoon'."

"Supposing I will not believe that" answered Evans almost severely.

"I'm not telling you any lies sir" said the boy in his usual decided manner. "I even played a smart game with the rest of them all afternoon. I have even got noted proofs of all I say sir." Evans was silent for a long while but paced

up and down the room in an excited manner. He then went to his desk and with that magnifying glass made another examination of the note and comparing the hand writing of some of the original letters recently written to him by the Vivian Girls.

Then he made a slight startling discovery. The hand-writing of the note had a marked difference when compared to the others.

He now felt positively sure the note was forged by some one who thought to get rid of him or at least get him away from the Vivian Girls so the Glendale Union agents could lay their hands on them.

At first he was going to dismiss the lad but decided to investigate further. So he replaced the letters and the glass then rose from the chair and then paced the room once more causing Pennod to wonder exceedingly.

Then he stopped abruptly before the boy, looked keenly at him for several minutes and then observing by the boy's face that he was telling the truth, then said:

"Did any of the Vivian Girls Princesses write any one a message?"

"Yes sir."

Indeed this answer startled

Evans. It gave him a foreboding that after all the note was not forged. However he looked at Pennod searchingly and asked with alarm in his voice:

"Are you sure you're not mistaken?"
"No sir. She wrote the note yesterday morning. I was with her when she did. She seemed to be in a hurry to send it off. If so my boy, to whom did she write it?"

Evans expected Pennod to say "to you" had he done so Evans would surely have received a shock. The boy himself was surprised at this question but he surprised Evans also by saying:

"Yes she had me deliver the note which I did at noon."

Evans felt easy now for the note he received came early in the morning and was delivered by a courier.

"And which one wrote it?"
"Joice Vivian."

"Any of the others sign their names to it?"

"No sir."

"What?"

"No sir. Joice did not even put a signature of any kind on the note. She wrote the message to General Vivian-anna requesting him to appear before her and her sisters at 2 P. M. yesterday afternoon."

"I believe you are just making that up," said the general scowling fiercely just to tax the lad's dissonance.

"No sir I am not" answered the lad.

"Could you produce a duplicate of that copy as she always writes another on carbon paper?"

"No sir she only wrote that one this time."

"Id, m" And where is general Viriamanna now?"

"At his headquarters."

"Do you think he still has the note?"

"I'm not positive sir."

"All right my boy. I'm a superior general. Do me a favor. Go get that note if he still has it. Tell him I must see it. Tell him that through that note the Viriam Girls are in danger."

"All right sir" and the lad was off in a moment. As he went he wondered exceedingly what had gotten into the general.

Why the questions about the Viriam Girls. Did he suspect something that was going to happen to them? And if so what? And why did he examine those papers so carefully with the magnifying glass? And why did the general look so worried and so excitedly and angry?

In about twenty five minutes he was standing before general Viriamanna and the latter was surprised exceedingly at the request,

and Pennod's story of his interview with Evans.

"Are you sure its general Evans and not his double?" he asked.

"Yes sir" answered the boy. "I'd wish for the note."

The general knowing he still had it made a search for it and finally finding it handed it to the boy saying,

"If you were you I'd warn the Viriam Girls right away. Maybe Evans is suspicious. They may be shadowed by some unseen danger."

"I'd like to warn them" answered Pennod. "But they're out now having gone since morning and I don't know when they'll return."

"Well have them located" advised the general.

"I'll do that" exclaimed the boy. The lad then saluted and left.

On his return for Evans headquarters he first headed for that of the Viriam Girls.

On his questioning the orderly the latter said,

"They'll not be back till this afternoon. They are with General Viriam just now."

Pennod thanked the orderly for the information and then rode off to Evans headquarters.

He was admitted into the building and seeing the general in his room

went in, saluted and handed him the note. General Evans thanked the boy, handed him a big piece of cake and

then glanced over the note. As he read it he almost jumped to his feet. It was written in just as many letters as on the note sent to him. It ran or read as follows:

To his Excellency

General Jackson's Headquaters Viriamanna.

Sir,

Your immediate presence to my headquaters is requested. I have something to say to you, something important too. I wish you to bring with you a companion and two of our girl friends. We are in a hurry and therefore do not wish any delay.

The Viriam Girls

Evans motioning the boy to sit down read it again and compared it to the other note. The handwriting to him looked alike but their names were written on the note sent to him.

Didn't she write to any one else during the day? he asked almost breathlessly.

"No sir. She wrote that yesterday morning. In the afternoon she and I played a game of Checkers."

Evans then pondered to himself. Would it be worth while to allow the boy to know the reason for the questioning. He stood fully five minutes reading the note again and once more comparing it to the other.

Then he turned to the boy and said

"I've got news that Violet Viriam sent me. She has ordered me to resign my command. Her sisters have confirmed the message by signing their own names to it."

Evans noticed that Pennod suddenly changed color.

"You are just saying that to try me" retorted the boy. "The Viriam Girls did not do any such thing."

"Maybe they did and maybe they did not," said Evans. "But I received the message just the same."

"It can't be. It can't be," cried Pennod. "If it is so then they must be mad. It would endanger our cause and their own personal safety. And General if you were asked to resign your command the request would have to come from the Government and no one else. It's their own orders confirmed by their father and uncle. They did that so that no enemies could double cross them or trick any of their best friends or the generals."

"Well, that may be, but what would you think if I were to show you the very note I received this morning?"

"If it was even in their own hand writing I would not believe it just the same. They did not write any messages at all yesterday afternoon or today and had no time to do so."

Evans was very shrewd and if Penrod even had been telling a lie to defend the Virian Girls he could have seen it at once in the boys face. Evans now knew from the boys state ment and argument as well as the comparison between Virram and a note and his own that the message was a fraud.

It had been written someone who could correctly copy forces handwriting. Some one not knowing his shrewdness expected he would have obeyed the note immediately.

Evans knew however had he been foolishness enough to fall for this forged note he would have had the most difficult time to do so. He would have to go through one army court after another state the reason he should resign and so on.

And now when he came to think of it he knew should the Virian Girls desire to discharge him they would have to print the sheet full of state ments of his offenses and the like sent it to the Government to be stamped sealed and confirmed by the Cabinet.

Then it would be sent to the two Emperors for their signatures and from them to the Virian

^{own} Girls for their signatures. Then the Virian Girls would have to send it through the general Court Marshall to be signed and confirmed from them. From there it goes back to the Government to be rewritten by the Governmental publishers confirmed by them again and brought to the general who is removed from command by the one who succeeds him.

So this confirmed Evans that again enemies were attempting to lay their hands on the Virian Girls but first wished to get him far enough away so they would be unprotected.

All right then my boy said Evans. I know you are telling the truth. I did receive such a message and that is why I questioned you. I know the note is forged and will apprehend the writer if I can. Is general Haman Virian well enough to see me?

The Virian Girls say he is getting along pretty well.

Evans sat at his desk, wrote an order signed his name sealed it and gave it to Penrod.

All right you may go my boy he said. But see that general Buster Johnson gets this note ordering him to place a powerful guard around the Virian Girls headquarters. But if you see the

Princesses tell them I would like to see them at general Idanoon's headquarters this afternoon. Tell them why if you wish.
"All right sir, I will," answered the boy and saluting he withdrew. Evans then summoned his orderly immediately and said:

"Bring my horse. I'm going to general Idanoon's headquarters right away. I have to see him on something very important."

The orderly brought the horse and within another hour Evans was standing before his friend who with his arm in a sling was sitting at his table looking through a lot of paper and smoking a cigar.

Later that morning Violet and her sisters finally returned much earlier than they were expected. After they entered the house, Joyce was straggling behind her sisters.

She noticed the door of her writing room open.

"That's strange," she thought.

"I surely remember I closed it this morning."

She was about to follow her sisters and pay no attention to it when again she stopped.

Suspicious of what she knew not what she stepped to the door and looked in.

She saw it was evident some one had been at her writing table. She even

found the ink bottle was upset, papers strewn all over, and the impression of some one having wrote on her tablet with a sharp pencil.

Looking for her writing pen she discovered it sticking in the floor near the table.

But her tablet with the carbon papers under the writing sheets had not been used.

She felt scared indeed. Some one had gotten in despite the guards. First thinking one of her sisters may have done it, she had thought it best not to call them, but changing her mind, she called in a number of soldiers, ordering them to scour the building.

Then she told her sisters what she had discovered and together they went to the room to see for themselves.

Being alarmed they looked through all their belongings but were still more surprised as they did not find a single thing missing. In quining for Pennock they learned he had been summoned before general Jack Evans.

They then examined all the writing paper but did not find a single clue as to who was in the room and left it in such an untidy condition that no one was missing here either.

This made their discovery much more surprising and mysterious. The guards were questioned but they said they were absolutely very sure that no one entered the building. Of course knowing that some one must surely have entered Violet and her sisters doubted the statements of the guards believing that that mysterious person must have either slipped past the guards, or passed as a sentry until he was relieved by another.

At this moment however Violet and her sisters did not believe a spy had invaded their premises. They believed that some soldier had probably wrote a letter to his sweet heart or parents and of course thinking it no wrong had used voices pencil and paper ignoring the ink and probably in this hurry had left the room in his hurry.

While her sisters investigated through the building a second time voice straightened up the room. Just as she had finished a soldier came and handed her a note. It was written by General Vrananna and before she opened it she called her

sisters and then removing it from the envelope read it to her sisters. The contents startled them. It was as follows:

To the Vranan Girl Princesses.

Your Majesties.
Your friend and guardian general Jech Evans just notified me by sending Perrod, with an order to have general Percwell Buster Johnston sent 400 soldiers to guard your house and vicinity.

He has received a message in forces handwriting demanding him to resign his command at your orders and signed as if by your orders.

As he suspects it's a forged message he's going to try to trace the writer of that note.

Fearing unseen danger threatens you the coming guards are instructed not to allow any stranger to even approach your place what ever. He also asks that he wishes to see you at general 10 a.m.

He ad quarters at once.

But for safety's sake take a strong escort with you. When you arrive he will explain everything to you.
General Vrananna.

Violet and her sisters looked at each other.

So that accounts for my room being in an untidy condition. And sending a lying note from our very place in my hand-writing.

And yet Evans was not fooled said Catherine. Then she turned to the guard.
"Send for my courier"
she demanded.
He bowed and ordered the

nearest soldier outside to summon the courier which he did. as soon as he was admitted Violet asked:

"Did you bring any note this morning to anyone?"

"No ~~Mr~~ Miss Violet I didn't. No one wrote any notes."

"No one? Yes they did?" she answered. Evans received it this morning."

"I have not been sent with any message at all" he answered without flinching. "If Evans received any message it may have been brought by some one else."

Seeing they could not obtain any satisfaction whatever they dismissed him and prepared to go to Evans immediately putting on their coats and breeches while ordering their horses to be brought to them.

Then with a strong escort they started off at a lively rate.

Evans was admitted immediately into the presence of Great General Idanson. After saluting and greeting him warmly Evans putting on a sober face said:

"Your Excellency I've got bad news for you. News that will be quite a shock for you."

"You have?" exclaimed General Idanson looking surprised. "What is it my dear boy? Is the enemy advancing again?"

"No sir I've been sent to you with the orders to resign my command immediately."

The general gasped and looked at Evans as if he had thought his friend had suddenly gone

crazy. "What?" he demanded "Resign your command?"

"Yes sir."

General Idanson looked fixedly out of the window for several minutes and Evans noticed that his friend was trembling. Then after several minutes the general said:

"Why Evans. my God. And leave us in a hole. Never. I won't let you. I won't accept your resignation. Why our armies can only depend on your leadership. And think what would have happened if you had not stayed. Manley's success at Inman Creek. Your resignation will mean the ruin of the nation. We'll lose the war altogether just when we are starting to win. Why Evans I think you mad. I think of how Holy our cause is. That to back out now by resigning is the same as deserting. Christ himself. The nation honors you. Emperor Vircon loves you as his own son. He wants you to take the place of his treasonable son who went over to the enemy's side."

"You are great a general as Con. centurian An. oh. bung. And think of your poor friends the Virgin Girl Primrose and all what I've done for you. And how they trust you."

They are surely Princesses in this country. They are mere little girls but they are almost as powerful as their own father the Emperor of Abyssinia. All of us generals, no matter who we be or what we do are supposed to be under their orders. Yet no one can believe I ought that a saint even can be like they are. I realize that you know yourself what they themselves have done for the cause what they have rushed and suffered when if they desired so they could have remained safely at home. And all the persecutions they have experienced of their own will since the war began.

They are Emperor's Virgins daughters Evans, Princesses of our nation but they love you Evans. They would even die to save you Evans. So resign now would be to desert them. And think what your resignation will cause. Without your aiding us there will surely come a disaster that will ruin our nation altogether. A disaster that will even be fatal to them.

Why my boy its utterly impossible. You can't do such a thing. The Government would surely withhold your resignation. You'd be treated as a traitor.

"I'm awfully sorry your Excellency but it can't be helped" said Evans. "I have to do it much against my will."

General Idanson jumped from his chair and stared fixedly at Evans. Then he walked over to the window and looked out for an intolerably long time. Then he swung around and asked:

"Are you sure that you know what you are talking about?"

"Yes sir."

"Do you really mean it?"

"I'm afraid I'll have to say yes."

"Why then you must be crazy man" Idanson exclaimed.

"In the name of God do not leave us in a hole at a time like this. In the name of the Virgin Girls who have suffered all for us and you please remain" beg of you" Evans knew his point was now reached. He had driven in his stake.

"Your Excellency I would like to" said Evans smiling in spite of himself. "But it is at their own orders."

"Their own orders?"

"Yes sir."

"I don't believe it."

"But it is so."

"But what did you do to offend them?"

"They requested me to accompany them on a scouting tour yesterday afternoon, but I failed to obey."

General Idanson surely gave Evans a look this time.

"My dear boy what have you been drinking to day?" he asked. "Only water sir. Nothing else." "You talk like to drink a full gallon of whiskey," said Idanson. "They did not go on any scouting tours yesterday. They were too tired to do so. I believe, you are giving me the jim jams. On other wise your long endured hardships has unbalanced your mind."

"No sir" exclaimed Evans. "My mind is positively sound. And I'm perfectly sober."

"And yet do you mean to say you received an order from your best loving little friend that you are discharged from the army for a very trivial offense?" "Yes sir."

Idanson stared at Evans. "I dare you any proofs sir?" he demanded almost angrily.

"Yes sir. Here's the message sir" and he handed it to the general. Idanson gazed nervously at Evans as he took it, and then unfolding the note looked it over carefully. But it seemed to him it was a fact. It was absolutely in Idanson's hand writing. But also the names of her sisters were written in her hand writing and not that of her sisters. He couldn't hardly believe his eyes. He looked at it and read it four times with

a trembling hand. Then he suspected a trick in it. If her sisters wished their names signed to a note they would write their names themselves. And if they wished to discharge any one they'd ask the government to do it. They would never send a discharge note to any one in particular, no matter whether they sign their names to it or not because it would be of no use without the Emperor's signature whether they themselves had power to discharge any one or not.

They want their fathers and the Government signature to any note they make out for anything except written commands to the generals. So realizing all this and knowing the ways of Violet and her sisters he felt sure it was a fake in spite of the hand writing and therefore he said:

"I don't believe this note is real. It cannot be. They surely wouldn't do it Evans. They haven't the heart. Why Jennie was here yesterday evening playing a game with me and while we played the cards she praised you immensely for your taking my command when I was disabled and saving the army from a disastrous defeat at Johanna on Francis Creek. When the enemy smothered irresistibly through and carried all before him you crushed him. She said her sisters appreciated your gallantry and said lots

about you. You are Conceptionian Anon-
burgs double. Manley fear you and
your army as much as he and
Conceptionian Anonburg asked the
Virian Girls to have their father
make you his assistant. They
told Conceptionian Anonburg and
even me that they will do
everything in their power not
only to get you a higher
command but have their father
adopt you as his first grandson
and make you the Chief Prince.
and their brother for they and
their two loyal idol brothers
love you and desire you
as one. And yet you get this
message. I really firmly believe
it is forged by some else.
Evans was now emotional and
Idanons words only too true im-
pressed him. Then he said:

"I know its forged I know why
I startled you this way I came
to consult you about this
Period who gave me all the
information brought me this orig-
inal note written by force to
general Viriamanna and it almost
has exactly the same number
of words in it and only signed
"The Virian Girls". No names
placed at all. I've sent Period
to ask them to come here
to see me in person. If
possible I'll capture the writer
of this note fraud. The
girls are strongly escorted
so no one will be able to
do them any harm."

"I'm glad you did" said
Idanons with a forced smile.
But this message is a

serious, a very grave and criminal deed,
and the penalty especially for its
purpose alone is death. I wonder if the
Great Gemini Seader is in the lines
yet. Idanons been out scouting this morn-
ing. I'll find out."

At his summons a colonel appeared.
"Is general Dargan in yet?" general
Idanons inquired.

"Yes sir," answered the officer. "He
returned over an hour ago from
a scouting tour. He is very excited
and angry about something."

"Will you summon him here please?"
"Yes sir, no need to say. He is com-
ing any how and will be here
soon. He sent word he wishes to
see you on something very im-
portant."

"Thank you," said Idanons.
The officer then withdrew. Idanons
got his own glass and going
again to the window examined
the original and the fake
note where Evans went to Idanons
own telegraph instrument and
ordered general Viriamanna
to have all strangers no
matter who they were arrested
immediately and held for
cross examination, and to
notify the guards to let no
one not even officers outside
the lines and to hold and
question those who enter.
"It may not be possible
to apprehend the writer of
the message," he said to
Idanons who was giving
the notes a cross exam-
ination. "But there is a vile
purpose behind that fake
message and there are all kinds of

it before it is too late. It is surely evident the message was sent to me with the purpose of some kind to get me far enough away so the vandals can assassinate the Virgin Girls before their purpose is known. Of course I first suspected the message was a fact but not for long for I suspected the truth. I'll tell Idanson my friend there'll be no quarter shown to all prisoners hereafter if Manley and his rebel gangs don't keep their vandals out of our camps and leave the Virgin Girls alone. This thing just infuriates me, drives me crazy.

Idanson smiled a smile that was grim to see and it suddenly changed to a fearful scowl. "There'll come a time when I'll give no quarter either if these brutalities on the part of the Gladelinians don't stop," he said grimly. "They are rebels traitors, and never did deserve any."

A few minutes had now passed and the orderlie appeared.

"Your Excellency," he said. "The Great Gemini Seader is here sir. He wishes to see you on something important sir."

"All right send him in," said Idanson. Virgin frowning in a perplexed way. "Tell him I'm glad he's here. I've something important too."

The orderlie saluted and withdrew. and in another moment General Dargan appeared.

He saluted both Idanson and Evans and then shook hands with both very warmly. Then before Idanson could speak he said:

"I returned from a scouting tour an hour ago and some of my men have returned after being in Manley's shattered army for three days." Then turning to Evans he said to him "I'm glad you had the Virgin Girls guarded. They are in danger from disguised Vandals within our lines. I've this morning received a fake message from General Idanson. Virgin my friend here, from the Virgin Girls from Jennie Turner and Gertrude Angelina and even you Evans that my services are no longer required. And the hand writing is correct as to theirs, Idansons, and your own."

Evans and Idanson looked at each other then ordering his orderlie to bring all his writing paper in to him. Idanson showed him the note sent to Evans and after giving him a lengthy detail about what had occurred Idanson asked Dargan to show him those he received and he did. He looked at them carefully and saw the one with his and the very hand writing of the others. Then the orderlie appeared and said.

"Nothing is missing sir except the duplicate copy of a letter you wrote to your wife."

"That accounts for my discharge message," said Idanson smiling. "Are there several and are they all the same?"

can detect the writing in any way." General Darger looked at them long and carefully with his powerful instrumental glass after reading their contents once more. He looked surprised and said:

"Here is a marked difference in the handwriting sent to Evans and me," he said. The instrumental glass shows it plainly. But I'm afraid I cannot say it is forged enough to start an investigation until the Virgin Girls see the notes themselves."

At this moment an officer appeared. "The Princesses have arrived," he announced. A big body guard accompanied them in and they wish to see you and Evans immediately. They are -

"Admit them at once and don't talk so much," thundered Evans. "What do you think you are a talking machine?"

The talkative officer withdrew. Their arrival was then announced by the orderlies and then they came in like seven fairy sprites and after greeting Idamson and the two others in their usual friendly way were brought to light by the about the notes sent to Evans and Darger.

They evidently proved that they wrote no note to Evans or Darger whatever and also stated that on their return from their scouting tour unusually early Joyce finding her room door open and knowing she had closed it when she left, went in and found five sheets

of her writing paper had been used, the ink bottle upset, the cork out, the pen stuck in the floor and the evidence of some one having wrote something with a lead pencil but not using the tablet with the carbon paper between the sheets. It was evident if he had he would have left clues behind him. No one had seen him enter the building or going out and the fact that the headquarters of Violet and her sisters was so strongly guarded made it look very suspicious to everyone.

Her sisters had not been in Joyce's room all day and therefore did not know what had happened though they could not help suspecting one of the sentries for it was said one of them got relieved from duty by pretending he had been taken seriously ill all of a sudden.

They had said all physicians had been questioned but none of them had received a guard who was sick. And he had disappeared.

General Darger examined all the notes and decided they were evidently forged by that "seriously sick" guard who wished by this trick to get General Evans and Darger out of the way so the Virgin Girls would be deserted without the desired protection of their guardian.

General Darger desired to examine Joyce's room and so they all set out for the Virgin Girls headquarters. When they reached it they found it as strongly guarded as Evans had ordered. They were admitted by the guards at the door and the all

went into Joyce's room and the great Gemini started to examine everything she had. But the writer of the notes left no clues behind him whatever. Searching that none of the Princesses missed anything of their other personal property general Dangan said. "Did you keep or throw away the duplicate copies of letters you wrote to any one girls?"

"We did not make any" answered Violet. "We are careful not to let our handwriting get into the possession of any one we do not know."

"What letters did you lose?" he asked of general Hanson himself.

"I do not know" he said. "The guard did not get them. But I'll send a speedy horse man to bring them."

"I'll go and get them" said Pennod.

"No my boy you stay here with us" said Violet seriously. "You are usually in as much trouble with enemies as we are and we don't want anything to happen to you. The horse-man will go."

It was five minutes before the horse-man appeared, and ten minutes more before he returned with the letters. They were examined and sure enough one of the letters sent to him by Joyce Vinton herself was gone, envelope and all. But Dangan said he hoped to trace the writer if possible by means of the finger marks left on some of the letters. All of his members including himself were great finger mark experts and could trace any one through them as all soldiers of both sides have finger marks taken when entering the army and he decided to begin on all strangers, prisoners and the like.

So he left to issue the order right away, but general Hanson stayed with them to talk of all that had happened concerning the note.

Violet and her sisters looked at Evans and then taking the fake messages read them once.

Then Joyce said: "I'm glad Evans that you investigated and did not act too hasty. Of course I know that you almost believed the note was a fact. You could not help it because the likeness of my writing would deceive any one. But Evans I'll bet you received quite a shock when you read it."

"I'll say I did and I believed the whole thing at first" confessed Evans. "But when I was most excited I suddenly remembered all the tricks rebel spy agents try to get rid of your guardians and therefore ordered the special guards to guard your headquarters against these vandals and and escort to protect you on your way to general Hanson's headquarters to see me. All strangers within our lines are ordered to be held for investigation and soon if it is possible we'll have the writer of that forged note."

"Yes you made a wise move" said Catherine. "But we observe from your experience it would be dangerous for us to hereafter send written messages to any one. I know that spies of all kinds always lurk within our lines in all kinds of disguises and pose as guards, retainers, priests, officers, mums and the like. Therefore I do not know what to do."

"Communicate with us generals by wireless telegraph" suggested general Hanson. "It will be safer and will surely reach us where a written message often fails."

"That may be alright for us but supposing some one will have the chance to really trick Evans again. We must think of some plan to prevent that by all means."

For a while they were at a loss of what they should do. At first they had thought it best to send Pernod to Evans when they desired to see him, but then they realized that also the spy agents would be keeping their eyes on him, and if he has a certain certain message to carry to any general they would surely seize him to get the information if possible.

Then suddenly Violet thought of a clever plan and first suggested it to her sisters and when they agreed she said:

"I believe I have a good plan if you agree to it Evans dear. I hat instead of sending written notes or messages to you when we wish to see you to come ourselves with a powerful escort."

After thinking for a while Evans said:

"I can't hardly approve of the plan. It seems queer for good dignified little Princesses to have to come to me instead of I to you. It does not look right to me at all. It is not at all polite for me."

"But for your own personal safety as well as ours it is the best and only way" said Evans geline Vivian. "We were not at your place when you recieved the fake message but I can understand what a shock you suffered when you at first believed it. And I'm sure you don't want to receive another such message. Those spies will do anything to get you as far away from us as possible. If you love us as we know you do you'll agree to our plan."

"I guess there is no other way out" said Evans with a smile. "I therefore I'll agree to your plans to send no notes but come yourselves."

"I hate the good boy" said Idanson exultantly. "Always give in to them Evans. They are wise little girls and always know what is best to do. I therefore to make it safer for you and the Princesses the best plan is as they suggested that they come to you themselves and not send you any more notes."

"Yes it seems impolite on my part but it is safer for them" answered Evans. But I must confess that I don't like the idea just the same. But I agree to it. It will be so."

"But how about the writer of that message?" asked Jennie.

"What do you mean?" asked Evans.

"She means is there any chances to cause or bring about his capture?" said Daisy.

"I'm afraid it is not possible now" declared Idettie. "It was long before the fraudulence of the note was discovered and he may be safely within some Glendale Prison camp by now."

"Do you think it is too late for general Daggan to trace the felonous spy now?" asked Evans.

"Yes said Violet. "It may be too late to make any attempt to trace the one who wrote this forged letter."

"Yes that's so" put in general Idanson. "His was discovered too late. The writer had ample time to escape to the enemy's lines or to hide where no one can locate him. He may not be among the strangers who are held because

he would not be foolish enough to remain within our lines where he surely would be captured among those in the wholesale arrests. Of course general Danger will make an attempt to capture him, but I do not think it is possible. And to try to trace a spy within Manley's lines, once he escaped from us is exceedingly dangerous work."

"I wonder if it was not written by one of those two Professional International spies?" said Joyce. "Those spies are so clever that there is nothing they cannot do. I've been thinking of them a long time."

"It may be at that," said Evans. "I've heard that those spies were hired special by the rebel government. They are crafty spies however and would not do that work for nothing. The rebel government pays them \$10,000 for every spying work they accomplish. They are foreigners though, though of what nationality they will not tell though they look decidedly like born Spaniards to me. If they felt sure which government pays them most for their services that government they would serve. If we paid \$30,000 to them they would leave Glandelin's service and do the work for us. It is not the cause they side for, it's the capitol they are after. And they'll do anything fair or crooked to succeed in their work."

"But which one of the two is the most dangerous?" asked the girls.

No Two.

"How hot is it there?" you mean how high was the temperature?" asked Darry.

"Yes" "I could not tell" she answered. "The thermometers there are French in style. I cannot understand the American kind either. But I came to be able to tell how it feels. The heat has an almost scalding feeling that goes through your clothes and all. It feels as it will even burn your skin. The heat in the sun feels like fire. I and Catherine almost passed out, and lost our minds for a while. Lottie could not stand it at all and she took a heat fever twice and completely broke down."

"It is the dampness of the air that makes it worse" said Lottie. "If it was not so hot those islands would be a paradise. When there is no breeze the heat was unbearable. Many of the prisoners there died of the heat during our stay on the islands and they have such awful storms there and so much rain. The windstorms we have seen there beat any we have ever seen. Lots of convicts died of the heat. I was afraid I would die too. We almost did."

I could never understand how you three little girls ever stood that awful climate," said Pernod. "I was worrying all the while I was on my way there fearing the heat would kill you yet." "But we are possessed -" began Catherine.

"Yes yes I know," said Pernod. "But can angels frustrate nature. They can prevent me or others from killing you but the power of nature is unlimited. But I'll ask the angel of the medal."

He took the medal and asked the question.

"If you would have been late you would lost your sisters," said the voice. "One more week and the heat would have killed them. It was God's will you should save themselves. Your selves. Their angels brought you to them before it was too late. And you did a just wise thing to put their enemies on the islands too."

"What did the angel say?" asked Idette.

Idad "I been a week late I would have found you dead" he answered. "Your angels led me to you. But by the way he added,

suddenly wrinkling his brow. "When the ship arrived near the island that first evening I heard my name called in so plaintive a tone that it cut my heart to the quick. It sounded as if it came from you Daisy. Did it?"

"Yes" said Daisy. "I felt so distressed I couldn't help it. I didn't know you were on the ship. Did you hear it all that distance. But I forgot. I know you can hear a cat walk."

"That don't make no difference," said Pernod. "Everybody on the ship heard it on deck and almost cried." "I could not tell for sure where sure where it had come from. The ship's crew told me sounds can be heard far in those latitudes. It made me have the urge to get you off that night but the sea was so rough that the Captain was afraid to land any boats at the wharf in the dark. Some of the crew believed you were already dead and that your spirit cried my name." "I heard that spot is one of the hottest in the world," said Angelina. "I wonder if it is true. I heard if it is terrible."

"No it is not the hottest spot in the world" said Pernod "It" —

"You mean I should have said on the world" broke in Angeline with a smile.

"No I didn't notice your mistake" said Pernod "But what I was going to say is that my youngest sisters were not in the hottest spot, and I mean in"

"But I don't believe Hell is really in this earth" said Angeline "It is a different —"

"I do not mean such a place" interrupted Pernod. "That spot is in California."

"California?" said Angeline "California, er-er you don't mean the terrible death valley do you?"

"Yes that's it, and that's where you all are going next to suffer."

"Going there? Be put there?" they asked in alarm.

"Yes"

"But Pernod" cried Violet looking distressed "I can't understand. Why? —"

"That is you're going if I am caught in a trap" he said. "Don't you little angels ever get it into your fairy heads that I don't know this. Mack and the rest of his gang

will go to any extreme to get rid of you to strike me. I overheard that plot in a restaurant and wrote down the conversation."

He fumbled in his pocket and brought out a sheet of paper. He tossed it over to Daisy who was opposite him. She unfolded it and read the contents out loud. Pernod had wrote it as he heard.

"Yes that's right that's my plan. If he gets them from Mack we'll kidnap them again. The whole shebang bring them to the death valley and lose them there so they'll surely perish from thirst."

"But can we do it."

"Yes surely is a dangerous boy. If he finds this out he'll go wild and kill us all if he has to go through Hell after us."

"But we can do it when he is off his guard."

"How can we?"

"You know his damn sister goes to that skinny or what you call it school on Jackson Boulevard and Abasco street, or what you call them. I heard sometimes he don't go with them, so we can the day he don't go kidnap them at the school."

"How about that giant Evans?"

"We can get him out of the way by writing a false note. I'll fall for it easy. We'll write him from a false address, asking for help in distress."

"Will he fall for it?"

"Yes," he'll do anything. He's such a softie."

"Well let's go out. If that boy gets his two sisters then we'll fool him this time for good."

"Where did you overhear this?" asked Grace.

Violet and her sisters were quiet for a time after hearing this. Then Catherine asked,

"When did you hear this?"
"A day before," and an
gelina noticed Violet and
"aisy in New York."

"Are we really in such danger?" asked Jennie.

"Yes, if all of us who guard you don't keep our eyes open. I've made plans myself."

"I know. You and Evans are staying at school with us."

"No such thing," said Penrod. "And more, you're not going to school. I'm going to give you over to the care of John See and his Chinese gang and trap your enemies into a fatal ambush."

"But would we not see you for a while then?"
"Oh yes, and plenty. Even if the spies know you are there they would not dare anything. The Chinese are too foxy."
"Where would we be brought?"

"To China Town. A section is on South Clark Street. At first you may distrust going there as they'll be strange people to you but you'll like them when you get to know them. They have many hiding places and every time we go to mass a good number of them will accompany you armed to the teeth."

"But could Chinamen be trusted?" asked Hettie.

"Trusted, I should say so. And I'd like to see any one try to take you girls from them. They would never be seen or heard of again. Make friends of Chinamen and you got a friend. I'm going to see John See this morning. You stay with Evans and all the child scouts."

"I'm wishing to see Mr. John Sam See."

"John See. I see. Little milligan boy sweet as girl. I see. Do you know him?"

"Yes, my name is Pernod Vivian."

The Chinaman opened his eyes wide. He shouted to some Chinese girl standing with a white boy across the street. She came over and as he spoke rapidly in Chinese to her.

She looked at Pernod for several minutes during the conversation.

Then she nodded to the Chinaman and turned to Pernod.

"John See is my Uncle," she said. "I will bring you to him, you could never get in there alone if they don't know you. They'd kill you."

She led the way down the street two blocks and reaching a building were soon admitted into a mysterious secret passage. The Chinaman looked at Pernod at first hostilely but she explained and they did not interfere.

They went through a number of strange secret passages before they came to a large beautifully decorated chamber.

"If you were alone now you'd never find your way out," she said. Then she called Oh Uncle John. Can I see you a

minute?"

"What do you want?" came a voice in a mysterious manner, from an unseen source.

"There is a little white boy wishes to see you. I brought him. Say, he knows you wants to see you about something," she spoke in Chinese.

As if through the wall like a spirit came John See dressed in full Chinese Custom. Pernod could hardly recognize him for in the street he dressed like an American citizen. But he knew Pernod.

"My boy I'm glad to see you," he said. But what brings you here where no one generally is allowed or left near even of my own race.

He offered Pernod a seat and the lad first told what had happened to his sisters how he had rescued them and what his enemies planned next.

"I'm awfully afraid if they do that my sisters would perish this time," said Pernod with great alarm in his voice. "I know all about China town here and how it is impossible for strangers

50
to get in or what their fate is if they are caught within those places. So I had planned to come here to ask you if you could guard them within your secret places untill my wicked foes are laid low?"

* For a moment Mr See hesitated to answer. Then he said or asked rather:-
"Are your sisters really in so great a peril?"

Pennod told of the strange conversation he had overheard in New York.

"And since what has already happened," said Mr See with a strange smile "you have lost confidence in Evans and yourself combined?"

"I am afraid so"

"Why?"

"Those spies take us so quickly unawares. I don't trust anything this time."

"Are you afraid they will succeed?"

"Yes. They would come in great numbers this time and this time I'm really afraid they'll do it for sure this time."

"Well it is an unusual request you have made and a particular one," said the Chinaman. "But for your sake,

51
and their sake more in general I'll do it. But it is a risky business too and their beauty may be a source of temptation to other more evil bred Chinamen. They will have to stay with me and my followers, and go out when we go. But you are taking a risk my lady. Many of my kind of people are pagans and may resent the presence of your sisters. If you feel you must do it then they will have to dress as Chinese girls."

"I'm afraid my sisters would object to doing that," said Pennod.

"Well I'll see to it that they are taken care of. When do you expect to have them come?"

"Would you mind coming with me and bring them here?"

"All right I will. But I must dress in civilian clothes."

Five minutes later Pennod and the Chinaman were on the way by street car. At first Violet and her sisters were a little timid about going to a strange section of the city where there were only Chinamen and most of them pagans, but they were more fearful of their enemies and therefore did not object.

Are all the Chinese Pagan?" asked Violet.

"Mostly all," said Mr. Lee, "But you must not worry, I and my gang will surely protect you. We will have to pass through the room of I do, but everything will be all right."

The little girl did not like the idea of going among a set of hideous Chinese I do, but the fear of the horrible thing made gang would do to them drove them on. They knew all about the horrible Death Valley and its terrors, and woe betide any one lost without water on that dreadful spot.

It is said the coolest spot in December is 155° in the shade. In the summer it is nearly as hot as a vast volcanic crater with lakes of seething white hot lava, and the ground consists of salt sand and deadly poison water holes. Since blasting hot sand storms blow and the heat itself it is said would stop your blood from circulating.

So a shelter some where in China town was much better than a horrible death in Death Valley.

Many would have believed that Pernod had really done a very unwise thing in placing his sisters among Chinese for protection.

But listen here. We know about Chinamen all over. Make friends out of one and you have an faithful a set a friends as a faithful loving dog is to his kind master.

I read in a book once, which was a true story, where a good rich man in China saved a little Chinese boy and girl from a cruel slave dealer and restored them to their parents.

The Chinese couple took their children to America and lived in Chicago.

The rich man had three children pretty ones aged nine, eight and eight and one half years. The three were girls.

This rich young man had long been persecuted by some secret wicked cult whom he had been frequently a fugitive from.

On several occasions they had threatened to kill his children by seizing his children some dark night open their bodies alive and sacrifice their intestinal organs to

some heinous God they worshipped. The father learned through friends the murderers were coming and he fled with his children seeking the protection of this Chinaman and his sister.

The wicked members of this cult learned of this and got after him and his children.

The Chinese allowed these rascals to come in after the children but as the story says the children were safe from harm and the wicked ones were never seen or heard of again.

When any one is under the protection of the Chinese even the police would not dare do any harm to that party. And if you did succeed and did anything out of the way you could not escape the Chinese if you fled all over the world.

What they would do to you if they then got to you would be terrible, and a Chinaman does not forgive a crime. The real truth is that if Pernod had not put this plan into execution he would

never had seen his sisters again. Dad Mack had his chance now Violet and her sisters would have met an awful death in the great Death Valley and Mack and his gang would have seen to it that they were not rescued either.

When Pernod did this he defeated these fiends at every turn. For them to try to get Violet and her sisters even from a Chinese' escort is committing suicide.

When you get on the wrong side of Chinamen, they are very dangerous foes. They have immeasurably powerful protective societies and they can successfully protect any one from any evil characters.

I've seen a movie once claimed taken from a true story where in China a rascal strangled a little white German girl to death and mutilated her body.

Her parents were wild with grief and the mother went insane. The little girl had been a favored friend of a good number of Chinese.

In their queer way they showed no grief what ever. They appeared

as utterly unconcerned
as if it never happened
and the man, the fiend-
ish assassin, escaped to
America unseen by any
body. He went to New
York. A month later
he was found stabbed
to death.

Detectives investigating
the case soon caused
the arrest of a body of
strange Chinamen who
confessing the deed was
also able to prove
why they did it.

The murderous assassin
had been trailed by
these Chinese friends
of the murdered child.
They got into his
home at dark and
surprising him in
his study killed him.
When they cornered
him their faces show-
ed their wild fury.
The loss of their little
friend had affected
them as much as it
had affected the poor
parent. But they struck
with a terrible revenge.
Their proofs of why
they done it showed they
had seen the man
attack the child but
were at the time too
far away to interfere.
They secretly followed
the fiend where ever he
went, but didn't get

a chance for their revenge
until they got him in
New York. He knew they
were after him and had
tried in vain to elude
them, and hire detectives
to protect him.

At the trial the Chinese
were found not guilty
and released. They had
been on the same ship
with him too but even
there had no chance
to get him.

There are many other
other proofs that shows
that Pennod did a very
wise thing.

Mr See brought the
little girls into his own
quarters and his little
daughter a pretty little
thing furnished the
clothes for them. As
pretty as they are the
little girls did look a
little like Chinese in
their oriental customs
and yet more cuter than
ever.

Even Pennod smiled with
satisfaction. The little
girls however felt a
little embarrassed in that
attire and Violet said:
"If we have to have
our hair bobbed like
Chinese girls, we won't
go through with this
and -"
"No, no, hastily spoke
up, Mr See. There's lots

of Chinese girls here who wear their hair like you do, and in braids. You keep your hair as it is, and wear your own clothes when going to church with the escort guard. The spies won't attack the guard as that would be suicide. So don't worry. My men won't make you do anything against your will. But I must warn you against some things. Do not do any loitering in the idol room as the Chinese worshipping there won't allow it. It's dangerous.

If you do they will forcibly drag you into the street and won't allow you in again. And do not go into rooms you are not permitted in, as they will do the same thing there. There are lots of rules you'll have to obey if you want to stay here. Keep out altogether when they are worshipping and don't go through the place during that time unless I'm with you. You are white girls and they will take it as a sacrilege and you'll pay dearly for it. Do not pay any attention or talk to any Chinese men you do not know. Don't associate with Chinese children other than mine, for safety sake. These Chinese men are very strict in their way. Go no where alone. I may be tempted by your appearance and kidnap you. So associate with my kind only."

Then he left them with Perrod, and his own little girl.

"We will feel lonely without you Perrod" said Jennie tearfully. "Oh dry those tears" said Perrod. "I'm not leaving you outside of rounding up those spies I'm here too. And when I've got them out of the way we'll travel to the places I've been in this country. The plans I've got in my mind will work wonders. In the meantime I sleep in the same room you do. It's better."

"What food will we have" asked Angelina.

"Whatever you want" said the Chinese girl. "You will have to order that yourself, and I recognize your brother Idris, the boy who saved me from that bad boy who wanted to beat me."

Through the rest of the day the little girls found themselves in perfect security and had just what they wished to eat, at the times they wished to go to bed they were shown their sleeping quarters. The bed room was a vast room beautifully decorated in Oriental style and beds were

also that style. The Oriental night clothes were the style of short sleeveless, neckless bathing suits and violet and her sister giggled as they put these on. Period night clothes were sleeveless, but not legless.

"How about going in the street that way?" said Period.

"Then we would be foolish" said Jennie. "And we would be arrested, as beautiful as our bodies are."

"and a temptation to those weak minded men whom we hear like to brutalize and rape little girls," said Joice.

"What is rape?" asked Period.

"According to the dictionary it means to undress a girl and cut her open to see the insides" said Joice.

"What you want to do, make me sick before we go to bed?" grinned Period.

"Well you asked what rape is?"

"I'd hang his insides on an iron fence" said Period. "But let's talk pleasant things. You look nice like angel that way and therefore I am glad you are

here, where I can enjoy you with me in peace. But did you use any perfume?"

"No" said Angelina. "We sometimes do but we have none now. Why?" as he drew her close to him in a fond loving embrace.

"I smell it and it surely comes from you and the others. I believe you carry a trace of heaven and its beauty with you, and I've got to protect that at all costs?"

"I've learned you've told Period Jack Evans" said Violet sitting on his knee and laying her golden head on his shoulder, that as holy as we are we have two extremes in that true?"

"Yes." "What is it?" they all asked together.

"Well I thought you knew" said Period smiling.

"Please tell us" and they crowded about him.

"The two extremes are there. At times you have been the most unhappy little girls in the world and then too you have been the happiest."

"We were sure the happiest the day you

returned to us" said Violet. "and the luckiest too added Catherine "See what he has rescued us from and how good he is to us" "and oh how lovingly he likes to hold me so long" said Angelina. "His embrace makes me sleepy" and nestling her head against his bosom she began to nod.

The conversation went on as she happily fell into a sound restful sleep.

"And God will reward you handsomely for all you did for us and putting us here for sure protection," said Lettie.

"Well there's one reward I would like and that's getting Mack and his gang."

"And you will" said Violet. "I know it."

"I believe every thing you say Violet because it always comes true" declared Pernod. "But let us get to bed as it's getting late."

and so they retired. Pernod putting Angelina to bed himself.

The darkness of their Oriental bedroom caused Pernod and his sisters to oversleep till John See awakened them.

"Not used to darkened rooms like this" "I see" he said.

"What time is it" asked Pernod.

"About half past eleven. We let you sleep on because we believed it would do you a lot of good. Since you missed breakfast, an early dinner is awaiting you. all. Hurry and get dressed."

After their morning prayers they dressed themselves and were soon eating with John See. The meal was eaten in profound silence. Pernod never said a word. They wondered why.

The reason why was because Pernod was thinking deeply. After breakfast he gathered his sisters about him and said it.

"I have understood that Mr Mack also the 'weasel' has not only a gang in Chicago. He is the head of an immense string of spies who are in New York, St Louis, San Francisco, and Detroit. Now if it should happen that they find out you are here and they know they cannot get you, they may think up other schemes to destroy you. I want to warn you. Little sisters of mine on one very important matter. Do not accept tasks."

that comes from strange and mysterious sources and whose hand writing you are not sure of. Those spies may send you poisonous snakes, explosives or any terrible thing to kill you little girls."

"Would they really do such a dreadful thing?" asked Violet.

"Their kind will stop at nothing. I have tried to keep out, going in here a secret, but I do not know for sure whether our enemies know it or not. I hope not. But nevertheless I know their kind. So do not receive any packages that you do not expect to receive from any source. Our own relations were warned to bring anything they wish to give us and not send. Now I am going out to try and get a line on the spies. I'll be back for supper.

"We got a pass that will admit Jack Evans to keep you company. But only him. If you wish to go anywhere, tell Mr. See first. But for heavens sake keep away from the skinner school."

He kissed them good by and was soon gone. An hour and a half later Jack

Evans came disguised as a big Chinaman and in possession of the pass. On going his particular rounds Pernod was unable to find out anything about Mack or his gang or what they were up to. He wasn't too sure whether they really had come back from New York or not.

His own doing of spying around his long walk and the cold May air caused him to desire a slight lunch and a cup of coffee. So he went into a downtown Chinese Cafeteria and ordered a few doughnuts and a cup of Java. He took his time about eating as it was only one thirty.

To his surprise Jed, the repentant offender of his sisters came in sat at a table some distance away and ordered a dish of Chop cewy. For a time he acted as if he did not see Pernod. Then without warning a slip of paper fell by Pernod's cup, landing beside, in the saucer.

Pernod looked at Jed. He still acted as if Pernod was not there. Pernod read the note.

It said.

"Don't pay any attention to the way I act. It must not be known I know you. Meet me

on the Adama street bridge. I
have something to tell you.
Yed Peters."

Pennod folded the note
and put it in his pocket.
He finished his lunch
paid his dues and
went out. He walked
slowly east and then
down Desplains street
to Adama and then
for the bridge. There
he waited. He had
a long wait, and was
getting impatient when
he saw Jed and
Gally Fielders coming.
She was dressed
her best.

They came to Pennod
he choked him to follow
and led him into a
dark alley where they
would not be obser-
ved and overheard.

"Gally overheard this
with me" said Jed.
"Don't send your sisters
to the Skinner
school the day after
to morrow. They are
in danger."

"Why?" asked Pennod.

"Some gink by the
name of Mack Meany
planned with a
number of men
to trap your sisters
at the school and
carry them away."
said Gally.

When are they going to
do it?"

"The day after to morrow."
"Oh I see," said Pennod.
"And to the devil island
and Molokai again?"
"No worse" said Jed him-
self. "I don't know exactly
where it is but Mack
don't he plans to take
them to the death valley
bury them deep in the
hot sand and leave
them to die of heat and
thirst. Better look out.
He and his gang may
do so. We overheard
them in a saloon
by the door."

"Are you positive?"

"Yes, positive."
"What time; the day after
to morrow?"

"A little after school
time. So we advise
you don't send your
sisters to school."

"I won't" said Pennod.
"anything else?"

"No."
"Do they know where my
sisters are?"

"Yes."
"Where?"

"201 Idalsted street I
said so. I don't want try
anything there, for
he said it would be
too dangerous with that
big gorilla there and
you and the red
scouts."

"I'm glad you told me. I'll do as you suggest. keep them home."

They both bade him good by, looked cautiously around, and beat it. "So" grinned Pernod as he walked away. "The fish are going to give my sisters the sweet Death Valley treatment. Well, it's time I should go fishing. The bait is easy to find. I can supply that. No use notifying the police. They burgle everything. I'll take the matter up my self. But in case there is any shooting the teachers must be warned. to keep the kids out of the play ground."

He walked back first to the place on Adams street, and sent Tim for Angelina Cronburg and the girl scouts. He only had half an hour to wait for them. They all came including the boys.

Pernod told them in Abbieannian what Jed related to him. But how can they when your sisters are snafely hidden away? asked Jennie Turner. "On do they know it?" "No" said Pernod and there's where I wish to lay the bait."

"But where's the bait?"

"The girls here with the golden hair are the bait." "That's what you think" said Angelina Ritchie. "Those friends would recognize us and make their get away. The seven of us you mention are safer in that way, and pretty too, but in comparison to them we are the chickens to the Roses."

"Yes but your hair could be easily fixed so you'd look like them from the rear" said Pernod. And you could wear their clothes. The devils could not recognize you from behind. The other scouts could lay in wait in the school yard and elsewhere. Then when they come forward to seize you, you your selves would have them at your mercy. For I know its like grabbing a rattlesnake by the tail to attack you."

"Yes" said Jean Saunders. The rattlesnake would have fair play."

"Will you do it?" "Gladly if you can fix it so we won't be detected by the rear. How do they wear their hair going to school?" "In braids."

"Where's the school?" asked Mildred Maxwell.

On Aberdeen street, The playground faces Jackson Boulevard.

"How do you get there?" asked Angelina Aronburg. "Jackson Boulevard is the next street south of here. You go west on Jackson, you'll see it on the north corner and you remember too not to wear stockings as my sisters go bare legged summer or winter. I'll give you their shoes to wear and their hats. When you are on the way don't look any where but front ward so your faces won't be seen. They won't try nothing untill you are in the school yard."

"And it's the morning after to morrow at school time."

"Yes"

"Any police in the game?"

"After the fight begins,"

"Yes"

"Who fix our hair. We must not go in the Chinese quarters and you must not bring your sisters here" said Jane Mallott.

"I can do it myself" said Pernod. "I often help them. Six of you are to be the girls. I'll disguise and dress as my sister Violet."

"Which of us do you select?" asked Angelina Aronburg. "You could select me as Jennie or I am of her size. Angelina Buckle could be Angelina and Mildred could be Hettie. Susan Farnol could be Joyce. Jean Saunders could be Catherine. You are Violet. Helen Rose could be Daisy. Is that all right?"

"Yes"

"And oh we will be so like scardy cats when they come" giggled Helen. "We'll fall on our knees (she demonstrated it) and say, Oh mercy mercy"

"When shall we disguise?" asked Jean.

"Come here before school time, day after to morrow, but come early."

"All right?"

And he and they repeated Pernod heading for China town. Some would wonder how this would result. Well the reader knows the child scouts too well to doubt the result. Pernod returned to his sisters in China town ahead of supper time. When he came they were playing the game of checkers that is some were one was sleeping peacefully and the others were reading. He asked the angel

of the medal!

"I shall I tell my sisters of my plan?"

"Yes, its best to. You'll get advice and help from them."

He took off his hat and coat and sat down on a big Oriental lounge. They like us all crowded around him.

"Sisters," he said "Mack has planned to seize you the day after tomorrow at the Skinner school. Jed overheard the plot with Sally. That shows he does not know you're here. I'm laying a making the bait to catch the fish. Angelina's Aronburg and ~~one~~ of the golden haired girls courts fully armed, disguised as you and I as Violet are going to be the bait that catches the fish."

"Oh I hope you'll succeed," said Violet. "I'd dread it if Mack and his gang escape now."

"They won't I'll assure you that."

"But we could have acted as the bait."

"No," said Pernod. "You little girls are not like those girls courts and they if grabbed you would use you girls as a cover to prevent them selves from being fired on and get away. But it will be fatal for them to meet with the scouts. That's why I'll use them. I'll help Mack and his gang."

And you'll succeed," said Daisy. "I told you you would have good luck for being so good to us!"

"Good luck. Why I'm even doing this for your sake. What would you call that?"

Poor Daisy didn't know what to say but she smiled just the same.

"We can help you disguise like Violet like we did once before," said Angelina.

"That's one way we can reward our hero brother."

"Idiot?" said Pernod. "Say listen here. Where am I a hero? If there's any one a hero you girls are. Never in my life did I suffer anything. Like you little angels did."

"And if we can help it you won't," said Angelina kissing him on the cheek. "And we'll do anything for you. You deserve all our love and consideration. Oh happy day when we found you. God was sure good to us."

"And just as good to me," said Pernod. "But now let's eat our supper. I hear John see calling."

And off they went to supper. While at supper Angelina said: "Pernod dear while you held me in your arms and I went to sleep, I dreamed I was in the arms of an angel."

"maby mabeey you were at that" said Violet. "Some times I think Penrod is an angel in disguise" "What do you mean in disguise?" he asked. "That you took the form of a boy."

"Well that's a rich one" laughed Penrod. "I suppose you will say I'm the great Archangel who defeated Satan next. What makes you think so?"

"Because no one can do you any harm and you have saved us from dangers that to us is impossible to escape from" put in Daisy.

"We would have tried to escape from the Devil island" said Catherine. "but the guards warned us of the grave dangers of even trying it. Do you think they were right or that they would not let you us go?"

"If you made it you could do better than me" said Penrod. "You are the three youngest of my sisters. I've read a true story of a hundred and fifty convicts who escaped from the islands but in their flight they were accosted by such dreadful perils

that only one got even as far as Central America. When they failed I don't see how you three could do it. And if you went by water you'd have six hundred miles of sea to Panama in a small frail boat. If you went by land you'd have impassable jungles before you, countless dangers of all kind and you'd surely perish. The most greatest danger I can think of is the big wild cats and swarms of migratory or flesh eating ants and bees. They are almost impossible to escape from. Even if you surrounded yourself with a circle of fire those insects would besiege you until the fire goes out.

To try to escape them by a stream is impossible as the ants can find means to cross as fast as you do and are good swimmers.

And the streams are full of Crocodiles too. I've heard of those ants attacking Crocodiles too right in the water. If you tried to cross a river on a raft the Crocodiles would be on the raft down under water and get you. You can tell their approach by a strange foul smell. If they swarm on you

you will meet a painful and frightful death. The lites from so many make you feel as if you were on fire. You cannot destroy them by any poisons. And they can easily outrun you. I have read though there is one escape, that is if they swarm on some other prey before they reached you, and satisfy their ravenous hunger on that.

Another peril equally as great is the fierce Indians. Your beauty might cause them to spare your lives, but they might carry you far away where you might never be seen again. And escape from those Indians would have been impossible. So you were very wise indeed to remain until I come. And that was doing a braver thing than making a flight."

"And you came to our aid" said Daisy "and yet we never rewarded you."

"You didnt?" asked Penrod "I dont understand how that can be. You have proved to me that I am really your brother and have loved me more than ever before. And you even gave

your selves to me. And you have done everything you could for me. And each one of you cooked the best things you could buy for my meals. You have done for me what no other little girl has done for their brother. You are really little angels to me. And you accuse yourselves of being ungrateful. Can you prove it?"

The little girls had nothing to say. After their supper they went into their bedroom, where they got ready for bed as to talk it but never the less sat up for a while to talk while Penrod went to bed. He lay in bed facing his sisters. They thought he was asleep, but he really was looking at them steadily. He looked at their beautifully formed heads golden hair and at their angelic faces and beautiful and most perfect form and wondered how and when he ever deserved to have little sisters like them. He thanked God with all his heart for this his great blessing and continually watching them until a strong love for them took even filled his heart.

He could not bear to think of Mack trying out his new diabolical scheme and as he looked at his dear little sisters conversing in low bird like tones he said in a heart felt whisper

"Dear Jesus. If it is true that good comes to those who try to make the lives of my sisters happy, then for me doing so I ask a reward. But not for my sake, only theirs. Keep me and my followers trap Mack and his gang if it be thy will. Amen"

He might have whispered more loudly than he thought he did, for Daisy who was sitting on the foot of the bed asked:

"What did you say Pennod dear?"

"I was only whispering an extra prayer for something?" he answered.

"And I thought you was asleep" she said.

"I ought to be but while you and the other little girls are still sitting on your beds I can't keep my eyes away from you"

"I believe you love us more than we deserve" said Daisy getting up

and sitting closer to him. You have done more for us than ~~we~~ have for you and we could prove it."

"You didn't have the opportunity to do so" said their brother. "But I'm not doing it for returns. That I have you and your sisters is reward enough."

But it does not seem fair that we do not do something for you" said Violet - "Well" for you" said

"Aw forget it" said Pennod drawing Daisy into his arms. "Try to think of - of something else."

"There is something I was always thinking of since you told us of the two extremes we got" said Daisy resting her head on his shoulder. "And what is that?" asked Pennod stroking her golden head gently.

"Why" she said "it is that I believe firmly that you'd give anything if we were the happiest little girls in the world always"

"No" said Pennod "that wouldn't be enough" "Would not be enough" exclaimed Angeline. "What else could we be beside that?"

"I would rather see you be the happiest little girls in heaven also."

They looked at each other and then Jennie said:
"And in the same situation we hope you get the same reward with us too!"

"Why me" said Perrod. "What am I? It's only you little girls I care for. I do not worry about myself. I can only be happy when you are the same."

"For the way you feel towards us" said little God will bless you immensely for it. But let us go to bed and get some sleep. Keep little Daisy in your arms all night if you wish but let's get some sleep."

Later that night Perrod was awakened by Daisy shaking him. "Perrod" she said "I'm so thirsty but I cannot find where there is any water."

Perrod got up. "Wait and I'll get some" he said.

However he was gone two minutes. Instead of coming back with water as she expected he returned with a tall glass of cold grape juice.

"But Perrod you did not need to bother for that, I only said



a glass of water."
"Never mind. This will quench your thirst much better" he said. "I made it."

"Oh Perrod how good you are to me" she cried tears of happiness in her eyes, and the grape juice was indeed a relief from her thirst, the only thirst that she or her sisters will ever know.

"I'd do the same for the others" he said. "I know it said Daisy. 'You do anything for us after that one hot night you brought us all nice cold lemonade when we asked for water'." The two went back to bed.

However the next day there came a tragedy. Somebody had spotted Sally going to warn Mrs. Masters to keep her children safely in the house.

The spies planned to kidnap and kill her fearing she was a spy of Perrod and knew too much. A description of her had been given to them. Now there were a good number of little girls who wore the same style of clothing like she did. Two of the

spies confederates were chosen to trap and kill her. They were given the description of her and that she went to the skinmer school. When they trailed the little girl they however shadowed the wrong one. She was the daughter of a policeman.

They followed her until she came to a part of the street where few people were. Then they rushed up and grabbed her one placing his hand over her mouth so she couldn't scream. They despite her struggles carried her into a dark alley.

There a dreadfully foul deed was enacted. They first cut and tore off her clothes until she was stark naked. When she had a chance to scream and did so one of them a strong man grabbed her neck in a vice like grip and her eyes bulged and her tongue stuck way out. He then to make quick work barged her on the forehead with a hard piece of wood fracturing

her skull. Then with knives they tore or cut her whole body wide open threw her dead against the side of a building and disappeared. One man left his hat on the ground and the other two bloody knives in their haste to make themselves scarce.

"I believe the plan will be successful Period" said his companion who was Angelina Aronburg. He and three girls were walking down Jackson Road.

"It's been proven" said Angelina Ritchie that those that do good to your sisters have good luck. Who's been as good as you have. I'll not be afraid to be anything that you'll win to tomorrow."

"I believe so too. And I'll sure settle the score. Placing three of my sisters on a convict island as if they were the worst of criminals. That was more bitter than gall and wormwood to me. And four of them among lepers hoping they would catch it. Such a fate. And now since I've cued them to the death valley for them. Those of those

whom I capture will wish they had never crossed my path."

"Your poor little sisters have suffered too much already" said Jennie Turner. "You Pernod don't know half about it as we girls do. And for all else it is beyond words."

"My poor little sisters" said Pernod bitterly. "They are so lovely I don't see how any body could be cruel to them. I--"

"Oh Pernod, Pernod" cried a boy running up to him and the girls. "I'd ave you seen my sister. She did not show up at school and did not come home. Mother's worried."

"No I didnt said Pernod maybe she played hooky and is afraid to go home." "No no she never even was late to school" said the boy.

"But I was not near the school" said Pernod. "Don't worry Ned. She'll come home before supper I'm sure."

And they parted. "Ned is a sure a nice boy" said Jennie Turner. "See how respect fully he tipped his cap to us." "Yes said Pernod as he neared an

alley and looked in "7-7-1" His eye caught something some distant down that made his face turn white.

"My God what is that I see he cried. He walked in. The girls followed a short way but at what they saw could not look and they turned sick and leaned against the wall.

By the torn clothing clothing and hat of the dead child, Pernod thought it was Gally Fielder.

But one look at the face will open mouth and still protruding tongue told him different. "Oh my God" he gasped "Ned's sister. She's been murdered."

The three girls were too shocked to say anything. They remained where they were too frightened too sick to move. Jennie vomited.

"Get out of the alley where you went see this" he yelled. "Cousin get a police man. I'd worry."

They slowly obeyed while Angelina went to get a policeman. Pernod saw the hat lying there and picking it up looked it over. Then he observed the knives. He did not touch them.

for fear of getting his
finger marks mixed with
those of the murderers.
Then he noticed the
condition of the child's
body. The bowels were
out protruding from a
gaping fissure in the
belly. A blood lay in
a pool all around
her. He recognized the
knife and the nature
of the murder.

"My God those spies"
he roared. "I'll bet they
mistook her for Sally
Fielder. I wonder if they
knew her intentions."

"Angelina returned with
two police men. You
couldn't make her go
in if you pointed a
cannon at her.

The policeman ran
up to the spot. One
of them at the sight
faltered and staggered
with a hoarse cry
against the side of
a building. Both knew
Bernad.

"It's my little girl"
the police man sob-
bed. "This'll kill my
- my wife. Oh I can't
bear it. I can't."

Bernad came late
for supper but could
not eat. They
could see his face
was white.

"Are you sick Bernad"

they asked.

"No" he answered hoarsely.
"The spies got the better of
me. They brutally murder-
ed Ned's sister May & came
across the body. Angelina
Jennie and Angelina
Richie."

"Oh Bernad you are fooling
I'm sure" said Catherine.
"No I'm not. They mistook
her for Sally Fielder. I
was found out why. I
one of their number saw
her go to Mrs. Masters
last night. I went right
away to Sally and
warned her. To protect
her Evan is bringing
her here until this
storm blows over."

John Lee bringing
in a paper confirmed
the report. The paper
gave a lengthy report
of Bernad finding
the naked body, the
nature of the murder
and so on. The mother
dropped dead at the
shock of the news and
Ned was grief stricken
and ill. The father
prostrated had to
be taken to a hospital.
His comrades took care
of Ned and his
elder sister Mabel.
The police had thrown
a dragnet in all
directions but the
criminal eluded it.

Violet and her sisters were horrified at the news. It was lucky they ate supper earlier, or they would not have been able to eat any now. It was not long before Evans came with Sally Fielders, and her mother too.

Sally was whimpering and looked awfully scared. She felt relieved when she saw Pennod and his sisters.

"Did any one see you enter Mrs Masters home?" asked Pennod. "Yes," she said between sobs, "One flung a brick at me. I was afraid to go home. I stayed all night. Mother came for me this morning. I didn't dare go out all day. I was so scared."

"And you know of the awful murder?"

"Yes," she answered, "May was my classmate."

"What was done by those spies?" said Pennod. "Thank God it was not you they got. But they meant to kill you. They

killed her by mistake.

Do the spies know why you went to Mrs Masters?"

"Yes. Some one told them, they were going

to kill Maryone and Margaret. The place was guarded by police. The spies say the kids know too much."

Pennod looked at Evans. "They too must be brought here. Hurry," he said. "They might kill them yet."

Evans hurried but he knew where they lived. Sally had been so scared she was sick and had refused to eat anything all day. John See brought food and told her she must eat and that she was positively safe here. Evans didn't walk to Mrs Masters. He took a taxi. He reached the place and rang the door bell. Mrs Masters came to the door.

"We come to get your little girl," he said. "They too are going to be killed. Quick, before it's too late."

The woman looked white. "Wait. They can put on—" "No, no. No waste of time. You come along too. Put nothing on. No can wait. Hurry."

Mrs Masters got her two little girls and hurried unseen into the waiting taxi. The taxi driver was astonished as to the destination but he obeyed,

The mother and the two little girls were brought softly in. Later a band of men, rough looking fellows armed with guns broke into Mrs. Masters' quarters from the rear. They were furious to find their prey had escaped. They ransacked the place hoping to find something of a clue.

They telephoned Mr. Meach the facts. By another gang Mrs. Felder's home was raided. Evidence there proved the wrong girl was killed, and Sally had escaped.

Regardless of the fact that other people lived in the building they set it on fire. A little girl seen by them was seized, grabbed by the throat and threatened with a horrible death if she told anybody. She was so scared that she promised desperately. They beat her and chased her away and made their own flight.

When called the fire department could not check the fire and had a difficult time seeing along the tenants.

At Mrs. Masters' home they didn't set no fire as the place was

fire proof and wouldn't burn. They didn't take anything as they had no order to do so. Beginning to think Mrs. Masters was out with her children they remained for a while. One of them saw a four year old child pass with short bobbed hair, and as it was warm in an armless dress, the demons thought up a horrible scheme. One of them ran down the steps, seized the child and carried her squirming and struggling up the steps, and into the house. The child screamed and struggled and tried to bite her captor. They didn't care what they did to her as she though well formed was not a good looking and had a dirty face. Her tongue protruded out far as her strong hands crushed her narrow robust muscled neck. The face showed her terror and suffering and her body writhed with the pain of it as she desperately clung with her hands at his arms. But he hung on as tight as he could. Her arm fell away and hung back wards limp and her struggles

grew weaker. Even after her struggles ceased he hung to her throat until the leader said: "Enough. lay her body in the bed. there" He obeyed. The leader with a sharp knife slashed the belly open wide, drove it through the chest and then with hook like instruments pulled the body so widely open that it was almost apart. Then with the under bed sheet covered with blood one of them threw a bed covering over the body and left the premises.

A note was left on the bed, saying "This is what we'll do with your kids next if we ever catch them. They trifled with us by aiding Prince Pernod and his sisters. It was not until two days later before the little body was discovered. after its parents had the police search in vain. It was then too late for the police to do anything as Pernod had beat them to it.

Chapter 7 Disaster.

Over what had happened however Violet and her sisters were agrieved, frightened and almost ill themselves. They undressed but didn't go to bed very soon. Sally, Marjorie and Margaret were given beds to sleep in the same place. Little Marge was scared and shivery at Violet in Abbeemian told Pernod to let her sleep with him.

He brought the child to her bed, and placed her in on the side by the wall. Marjorie said:

"It must be an awful thing to be choked to death like that."

"Don't we know it," said Violet. "It's an awful feeling too. We were often choked like that but were always able to save ourselves. They killed May thinking she was Sally by the clothes she wore. They strangled her, and beat her head in with a club."

"I wonder how it must feel to be strangled?" asked Sally.

"Your throat hurts awfully and there's an awful tickling feeling that makes you have a desperate feeling to cough," said Angelina.

"The worse feeling is to get no air. You can't breathe, and your lungs feel like on fire. It does not take long to lose your senses though. The pressure on the throat forces your tongue out of itself."

"If some one saves you in time, you'll have a very bad sore throat for several days and the tongue too feels funny in that

"I never thought those spies were as mean as that" said Marjorie.

"They'll do anything if they're pressed. They know that Sally and you have helped us and they want to get even. But I believe our brother will stop this. So let us try to sleep. And I hope we won't dream of those awful things."

When they finally got to sleep, they fortunately had a dreamless sleep. Pernod did not sleep much, as his desire to strike was too strong to allow him much sleep.

7 When morning came Pernod was up very early and got his own breakfast. Just as soon as he was eating his sisters were also getting up. They knew why he was up so early and included with their morning prayers they said the Rosary for his success.

Before he left he warned them not to go out anywhere that day. And to guard Sally and the others in a bundle he took what he was going to use for the disguises for himself and the six girls. And there sure was going to be that day an incident that would surely fill a number of pages in the newspapers.

He rode down 22th street to Idalsted, and thence on a north car bound car to Adams.

In the old residence there he waited for the girls. They came sooner than he expected. He then sorted out the clothes for each, and they went to another room to put them on.

Angelina Anenburg and Rechas were very sober girls to day, but there was a glint in their eyes that made Pernod know they were going to be as mean as he wanted.

He fixed their hair accordingly. Then he disguised himself. When he reappeared he certainly did look like Violet.

"Where, the others?" he asked.

At their respective ports" said Idalen.

"All right. That's good. Remember I'm the only one to look back at times.

If we are followed or shadowed, you must not let them see your faces. You my cousin resemble one of my sisters almost so I do not care what you do but it's better not to let them see we know we are shadowed. If they get suspicious my plan will be foiled and they'll escape us. Some will shadow us foot, the others will come in cars. And (remember) remember do not give any quarter. Those shunks are not worth it."

They shook their heads "yes" but from what happened yesterday they were not in any mood for lark talking. He supplied them each school books fastened by traps and they started on their way. They wound their way down Idalsted street, without seeing Evans or any one with them. They wished to make themselves seem as unprotected as ever.

"Look out Idalen" whispered Pernod. "Don't let any one see your hip cannons. They're showing." She closed her coat.

They reached Jackson. For a moment there was so much traffic that they had to wait. At that moment Pernod took a cautious look around as quick as he was he took in everything at one sweep. He saw a man's head dart out of sight by the doorway of a tall building.

That convinced him he and his companions were followed.

The battle of Skinner School.

From the traffic slackened and they crossed Idaho. They went down at a swifter pace. Pernod noticed that strange black closed Automobile followed down Jackson at a distance.

"Keep on guard" he whispered. "Auto's are following us."

They were, however for they were observing every thing out of the corner of their eyes. Onward they continued till they reached the last street before Aberdeen.

Pernod cautiously yazed around. Then on they went till they reached Aberdeen.

"Shall we enter the school by the main entrance?" asked Rose.

"No my sisters always entered by the playground."

As they approached they saw that the school yard was deserted.

"I thought the playground would be full of children," said Fred who was well.

"No" said Pernod. "Burns sent the teachers a note warning them what might happen down here."

They now entered the yard. Pernod who entered last closed the gate behind him. Pernod whose quick ears could catch the slightest sound heard a man say

"Now, our chance. They're alone. Not even the Goillie's is with them."

The gate was flung open and in rushed a body of fierce tough looking men. And to the surprise of the others they wore the garb, something like Glendorian soldiers. Pernod looking up saw children looking out of every closed school window. It seemed as if they were an audience waiting for the drama.

The men eleven in number came rushing into the yard. Pernod and the girls suddenly scattered, flung the school books to the ground and swung round with drawn army revolvers. Rose was the first to open fire and drop her man. Pernod threw off his wig.

"Back men. We're tricked!" cried some one. "It's fine Pernod and those rattle snakes with him."

They retreated but the seven opened fire and dropped seven men. A panic seized the others. They jammed each the gates. Some answered the fire but missed. They cursed and swore and fought each other to be the first to get out.

Then from hidden parts more child scouts rushed forward some opening fire. Two more men fell.

Other men who were coming out of Auto's tried to aid the others to get in.

Then into this barrage of bullets came a well meaning house wife in an old car, driving southward for some shopping. She drove around the corner right into the fracas. She was unconscious of the battle untill one of the men whose name was Francis caught up with her car.

He jumped (if not pumped) on the running board and yanked open the door. She screamed and grabbed for her small daughter Joan, five years old. Francis growled:

"Go on get out" and punched her with his foot (he toot?) She tore open the door on the drivers side and half fell out but still holding the girl.

She ran for safety. Jennie Turner saw her. In her third floor school window she held her fire courageously untill the woman with her terrified child could reach a doorway across the street.

While she ran, Jennie poked the screen out of the school window with the rifle barrel and rested it on the sill. She knelt down resting the barrel firmly to give her a better aim. Her worst targets were a block away now, down street. The house wife had reached safety. She and her child was out of sight.

The Glandelinian with the wounded arm limped to the side of the car and begged Francis to open up and let him in.

The car was in the middle of the street jerking along bumpily in low gear.

Francis couldn't shift it. It growled along a few yards and

crossed Aberdeen street. He wasn't the expert driver his partner was. Jennie Turner had a perfect bead on the automobile on her sights but she was trying to save the car from damage if she could. The wounded man was still on the running board. Jennie's rifle barrel reversed slightly from the car to the wretched man's head.

She took her time to fire the shot. It was a beauty. It picked the man off the car perfectly. The bullet caught the fugitive spy Confederate right in the forehead, picking him upward as if a strong man had hit him under the chin. He turned a back flop and came down flatly on his face and chest. Probably he never knew what hit him.

The bullet had gone right straight through his head, (both bullet and taken the whole rear side of his skull out. And this was a range of over 200 yards down street. Jennie Turner missed the side of the car about two inches with that shot. It remains one of the finest examples of marksmanship under pressure probably in the city of Chicago.

Francis abandoned the car in a hurry when his pal was hoisted off the running board. He knew it would be his turn next. So he got out of the stolen car and ran in an oblique manner along the sidewalk towards another machine. Jennie waited for him to get free of the car and then winged him with a very pretty shot that went clear through the detour muscles on the left shoulder. It passed just his whole left arm.

In this condition dripping blood brandishing a huge rifle, half dead with fright wild eyed and hysterical Tony Francis suddenly appeared along side the second car. There was another house wife with three small children in that car. Two were girls and one a boy. They saw the horrible apparition and the mother clutched her children. Tony fumbled with the door slumped into the seat and kicked at the woman with his foot. She wouldn't go and screamed for her husband.

The husband heard her half a block away and came running at top speed. In this car he could have escaped. It was a new model in excellent condition. The motor was turned on the gasoline tank was full and it had a new set of tires.

He could have gone out of the city before having to refill the tank.

It might have been the way out for Tony Francis, except for one thing. The car was a Ford a strangely made fad with an electric gear shift device advertised by that Company. It's small metal car about the size of a snuff box was under the steering wheel. It had a tiny lever hardly more than an inch long which does the shifting.

The mechanical gadget beat him. That device licked the spy confederate and stopped the rest of his get away plans. He had jumped out of one car that he couldn't

shift and into this one, which he even couldn't start let alone shift. He was weakening from loss of blood but still he fought. Frantically he turned all the levers and pushed all the buttons he could find.

He turned on all the lights, rapped and pounded on the gearshift bar, yanked and pushed on it until the strength of his desperation bent the steel lever.

But nothing happened. The radio was emitting frightened squeals and rattling off with static when the woman's hand got there. He came at Tony Francis with both fists but the wounded spy covered him with his rifle which he held in one good hand trying to pull the trigger. He was too weak. The woman and the three children were safely out of the car. The husband remembered having seen a policeman up the street a short time before and looked for him.

The policeman had heard the shooting and was running down Aldern street when he saw the body of the dead man. That's where the husband met him.

In the few minutes the husband was away Francis elbowed his way feebly out of that car and stumbled down Jackson, Paul going west. Near a factory office, street floor he saw another car a Packard. He was getting dizzy and he hardly had enough strength left to open the car door and fall heavily into the driver's seat his rifle still beside him.

The owner of the car saw the garping spy enter the car. To him and a friend of his it was just a case of a auto thief. They could take care of that themselves. Van Doren spoke first.

"What do you think you're doing?" he growled at Francis.

"Get the hell out of here or I'll kill you" muttered the spy. Then he fainted. The police man reached the car within a few minutes. He opened the door and yanked Francis out by the collar but the spy recovered some what and again attempted to go for that rifle.

The police man held him down on his back with one knee while the others looked at the wound. Excited towns people came running up. Among the first to arrive were two more police men.

"This guy is one of them who attached some little police or soldier girl near Skinner school" said one of the police men. "His pals lying in a heap out there on Jackson. They tell me those girls fought it out and killed seventeen of those fellows."

"Some thing was 'wrong' said another. "They may have been those strange Abbe woman girl scouts. Mistaken for those poor little Mexican children most likely. Help me get this fellow to jail. Call a doctor. So it finally happened did it? Perrod at last is getting his revenge? Well."

Gradually one bit of evidence at a time the story was pieced together. Francis was in a state of coma when the doctor examined him in the jail. muttering incoherently. An undertaker was called to remove the body of the dead man from the blood stained pavement.

In the meantime the spies in the rear of the cars had strove with might and main to get away from the furious boy and girl scout, who strove with equal energy and desperation to prevent their escape.

But one car got started and got through the heavily armed police patrol which had taken to the streets in an attempt to check their flight. They tried to flag the car but the driver stepped on the gas.

Then followed another car loaded with girl and boy scouts heavily armed. They were not stopped and gave chase down Jackson East. The fleeing car was hawling close to 75 miles an hour however and the two cars loaded with the child scouts could not go so fast their drivers being mindful of the safety of other drivers and pedestrians and therefore could not catch up with it. Then a motorcycle cop gave chase but lost out.

Perrod in the first pursuiting car knew why the fugitives traveled at that speed. Regarding traffic cop, traffic and every thing else. They were now guilty of reckless driving and therefore endangering human life.

Just at a crossing where traffic Cop Mike stood blowing his shrill whistle Pernod whipped out his pistol and began shooting at the tires of the fleeing car. His first bullet crashed into the rear end of the machine. Then a flash of pistol fire came from the fleeing car, and a bullet ripped through the top of the pursuing car.

The occupants of the machine ahead were firing through the glass of the rear window. The followers of Pernod accepted the challenge, and several volleys were exchanged. Yet no one was hit.

By this time the autos were nearing down towards Idalito and where from a building having been torn down near a left turn, caused a dead end for any too abrupt a turn.

Apparently the driver of the fleeing car did not know this or had forgotten about it in the excitement of the chase.

At any rate he kept speeding down the avenue at 70 miles an hour heading straight for the dead end and a 20 foot embankment running full length on the corner of both streets.

Pernod driving his own car realized what was coming and put on the brakes. But the fugitive car sailed down the embankment at full speed.

For an instant it seemed certain that the other car would roll over and probably kill all of its occupants, or at least

four of them inside. But miraculously the car landed on four wheels and came to a sudden stop among the remaining house debris below. All the child scouts were out of their own car and at the edge of the sidewalk almost before the other machine had stopped. As they watched the occupants of the other car jumped out and started running to the other side where it seemed easy to climb out.

One of them paused long enough to fire two shots at Pernod, neither of which found their mark. Pernod took steady aim and put a bullet squarely into the back of one of the running men while his followers dispersed in three directions to head off the fugitives if possible.

The man shot at fell in his tracks and was dead after the pursuers could get to him. The other, climbing to the sidewalk on the other side fought fiercely to pass the child scouts who used their rifles as clubs.

Some of the spies broke through and ran down an alley. Angelina Arambury and Jennie Turner brought three of them down before they got far. A bunch of work men, knowing something was wrong, closed in and blocked their escape.

One of the spies drew a pistol but it was knocked out of her hand. The workmen closed in as the girl scouts rifle in hand came up with three police men.

"Thank for blocking their escape" said Angelina "We generally don't give no quarter, but since they're captured and unarmed and out of the fight we'll have to."

The rest of the gang caught on the deep hollow were now also attacked by police coming to the scene of the fight, and after a desperate fight in which two men were killed and three wounded, the survivors gave up and surrendered.

The others of the enemy in the two remaining cars escaped but with two of their number dead and one badly wounded. The captured ones, scratched and bleeding were hurried to the Dearborn Street Police Station.

The wounded ones were taken to the Brede well hospital.

And all that exciting fight happened through the early morning.

However Mack and his Chief aide did not show up at this scene. He had left all that to his Confederates. He saved like a mad man when by phone he heard how they had been tricked by dangerous girls, disguised as the Vernor girls and led by Pernod, and a great number of their members shot down, and a full gang captured.

He suspected that Sally Fielders and Mayore Walters had slipped Pernod the news, giving his scheme away and strove to find means to escape their capture. Later that day

but it was in vain. Photos of Sally and Mayore and Margaret had been found in their homes, and so Mack the next day had spies in disguise or policemen and plainclothes men, watch all little girls going to school in those districts, but to no avail.

No children answering those photographs were seen going to school. Mack had no idea they were safely hidden with Violet and her sisters in Chicago's Chinatown. As to Jed Patern Mack knew nothing about him being complicated with the three girls.

That boy soon was going to be the ruin of Mack and the rest of his Chicago gang.

On the day of the fight at the Skinner, there because of the excitement was no more school. Pernod spent the rest of the day questioning the prisoners about the shocking murder of little May, but they insisted that those two who killed her had not allowed themselves to be known by any of their own comrades which was the strict Glan delorian rule.

Pernod could see the prisoners really told the truth. "Were they in the fight?" he asked.

"Yes."

"Were they hit?"

"No, they were in the last car."

"What was the purpose to seize my sisters and maroon them in the death Valley of California?"

He was not going to do that right after he had mapped them. He was going to force you to a compromise. "And what was that?"

"To leave off harassing them and take your sisters and go home."

"I would have left you alone if you had not picked on my sisters in the first place. We came over mainly to learn the schooling here. What if I did not come to a compromise?"

"He would have kept his word and you'd never have seen your sisters again."

"Does Mach know the wrong child was killed?"

"Yes he beat the two men up terribly for their mistake. He'll get her yet I'll bet."

"Does he know where my sisters are?"

"Yes."

"Where?" asked Pernod feeling uneasy.

"He won't tell. A man disguised as a police man told him."

"Is it at 201 Mulsted Street?"

"I suppose so, but he learned to day after the fight that you hid your sisters softly away however, where it's impossible to reach them. I'll say you beat us to it."

"Will he try to get at my sisters there by any means possible?"

"Do you think he's crazy? He aint got the nerve to tangle with Chen a man. They do terrible things to those who try to get at anybody

they are protecting. And there's no getting away from them. They're a thousand times more fierce than your Abbeonmar child scouts."

"Why did Mach intend to kill Sally Fielders?"

"He heard she knew of his plan to seize your sisters and wanted her killed so she couldn't warn you. He intended the two other girls after Sally was seen going to their home. He believed they told her."

"If he knew this why did he try to carry out his scheme?"

"He thought Sally was killed before she could warn you. It was only when you whipped us that he learned the wrong girl had been killed. He'll get her yet I'll warn. There's no getting away from him. He knows ways to do it. And he'll get your sisters yet too."

"But if I can help it," said Pernod. "You have unconsciously warned me. It'll increase the illigiance of the Chinamen. And where is Mach residing or his quarters?"

"He has no special head quarters. He takes any place he chooses."

Pernod after telling Burn what was going to be done to them, finally left the station for home.

What had already occurred caused the news boys and those at the newsstand to shout wildly the next day. John See (riding on a flea) hearing the "Extra" went out to get an Evening paper. This he brought to Violet Pernod.

had not returned yet. It was soon going to be supper time. She and her sisters looked over the paper and were surely thrilled at what they read. There was big black (cat) headlines announcing the facts of the battle and the results.

It told how three car loads of big powerful armed men were sorely and beaten at Skinner school and routed with thirty of them killed, by a swarm of strange girls and boys in two colored uniforms, rushing to the aid of the little Virgin girls.

This show the reporters did not know these too were child scouts disguised as (child) the Virgin girls.

In the paper pictures engraved in drawings showed of the fight. It reported there was no loss on the other side, though 4 police men had been knocked down.

It told of the escape of two cars of men and the capture of one and its occupants. There was two sheets telling everything and plenty of pictures. All this news sure caused them to be so excited that they forgot all about supper time. Just as they were at the most interesting part then Pernod came in with a load on his face as if

nothing unusual had occurred and asked:

"Well my little fauer of Idavon, what the news?" They looked up at his approach. "I think you should know," cried Jennie bringing the paper towards him. "You did far more than we thought you would. You licked three big gas buggies full of men and captured those out of one automobile."

"Why give me all the credit," said Pernod. "Jennie Sumner from the school window did the most remarkable shooting on record. She brought down two men at long distance range and prevented the escape of a third. And she also with our team, captured fourteen men."

"But you caused it," said Violet. "And that will learn them to leave us alone."

"But I found out Mack knows you little girls are here, and his spies are striving to locate Sally, Mayme and her sister. So under any conditions they must stay here untill all this blows over."

"But whether he knows it or not he can't surely get at us here so why worry," said Angelone.

"There's always a way to do it," said Pernod, "and untill he's put out of the way I won't be able to rest easy. That sound reel is very foxy. But let us get on supper and then think of it."

where and how we can get Mack and the rest of this gang. (clang clang) and before he does succeed in getting you and the three girls.

The ten girls ate their supper in silence. Sally was still very apprehensive and had not left the room all day and gave a frightened start every time some one entered.

The thrilling reports of the new papers did not comfort her, but little Margaret had lost most of her fear, and all the Oriental design and lanterns was a great curiosity to her.

During supper Violet and her sisters spoke in Albanian so that the three others would not lose their nerve from the conversation and grow parakey.

"Did the prisoner really tell you the truth?"

"You mean about Mack knowing really where you are?"

"Yes."

"He told the truth. Of course he said Mack is not crazy enough to try anything himself but he could find some means. I fear he could even outwit the chink. He is a very clever old fool and we must

all be strictly on our guard. He could even bribe some evil minded Chinese to do something. See warned us you know that only his gang could be trusted."

"Then I suppose were not safe anywhere we hide."

"I can't say yes or no on that matter," said Pennrod. "And I only wrecked one third of his number. And for this he may be bent on getting revenge. His very face shows that he is a dangerous foe to deal with at any time."

"Then what are you going to do Pennrod dear?" asked Daisy. "I'll have to have Evans stay with you and never leave you. A hundred men even armed can't take you little girls away from you. I've noticed he didn't leave you all this time. That shows he ain't so sure about your safety either."

"There's comparative safety in the daytime," said Idelle. "What we fear is about the night. That is just when they would try anything and we can't trust all the Chinese. I'm afraid."

"But See said all those here can be trusted."

"Maybe said Violet but we have found out that most people here are stark crazy about money, literally."

make the money their god. They say it is easy to bribe there or any Chinese and if Mack can get a number of Chinese on this side by means of money they may attack See and his gang and attack us. and cover Evans with a ring of pistols before he could do anything. And so you see we are worried."

"I'm afraid we may see the Death Valley yet" said Jennie.

"You are always a pro mortigator Jennie" said Pennod this time in English.

"What is that?" asked Sally.
"I might be a pro mortigator but it sometimes happens I'm right." she answered not paying attention to the question.

"What is that?" asked Sally again.

"What is what?" asked Jennie.
"That name Pennod called you?"

"He did not call me any names."

"He did too. But I can't say the word."

"I know what she means" said Pennod: A pro mortigator is a person who tells of a disaster or misfortune coming.

"You see Sally" smiled Jennie, "I'm a calamity Jane."

"And what is that?" asked

Sally.

"Pennod just told you. We who predict a misfortune of some kind. And we sure had lots of misfortunes."

"And you seemed to have lived too long through all that" said Pennod again in Abbieannian.

The school children gazed at the three curiously as they marched off with the child scouts following.

The two children were hustled into a waiting automobile or gas buggy as the Virgin girls call them.

Then away they went. They were taken to where Pernod sisters were quartered. Violet was there because despite her condition he would not allow her sent to any hospital.

He was afraid Mack gang would get her there. It was wise in keeping her here.

Violet and her sisters were surprised at the appearance of the two, though Angelina acted as if she knew "big eye" Mack, but then she looked away.

"Who are they?" asked Joe. "Are they threatened by Mack gang too?" "No," said Pernod. "They are Mack's two children. Because what Mack has done to you girls I'm going to strike him through them."

"Oh I hope you won't be cruel to them," said Jennie. "I'm sure they are not to blame for what he does." "No I draw the line on that," said Pernod. "I've got other plans."

"Ain't it a dangerous thing to do?" asked Violet rising up on one arm on her bed. "Do you think it will really make him come to terms?"

"I had no idea of that sort of thing," said Pernod. "They are children of our dangerous arch enemy Mack. Remember Devil Island and Malibu. Remember May and poor Sally and her brave brother. Remember the trained panthers his men brought to bite your necks. And yours was bitter for worse. It is my intention that if he does not lay off from attacking you I'll send them where he'll never see them again."

"I'm afraid that would place us into much greater danger," said Daisy. "I'm sure don't do it. We are not against it for he does not deserve our slightest consideration or sympathy, but your plan would be a boomerang to us. I advise to let them go."

"I know what said Angelina. I consult my physician about that matter. Do as he advises. I will," said Pernod. And he asked:

"Did I make a sure move?" "It would have been if their enemies did not know where you and your sisters are. With their knowledge of you whereabouts your move was folly. Better not warn them or let them free. They won't tell what you did. They would be afraid to." Pernod had some sympathy of Mack's sister but not for Mack. Intimately he and his

sisters had spoken in Abbreannian so that the two little meany children children did not understand a word. Pennod decided to use his mistake to another purpose. He beckoned Angeline to him.

"Is the boy who always snubbed you when you went to the skinner school?"

"Yes" she answered, in (English) English. "But I did not know he was Mr. Mack's son. He insulted me once when I caught him cheating in school and told him about it."

"He did not do anything else out of the way?"

"No Pennod he didn't." "Then I'm satisfied."

Pennod turned to the two. "You Jean go over there and sit down. I am going to speak a few words with your brother."

She obeyed, but was shy and too turned to sit near Pennod's sisters.

"Now listen here" said Pennod to Mack. "I brought you here to show you who my sisters are as you have only seen one of them. But this little girl I called over to me is my sister Angeline. I'm telling you that in case she goes to school

again I won't have her snubbed. You must show her all the respect that is due to her, and she is deserving of it. I don't want to hear of it again. I could have made you and your sisters my prisoners because your father is our enemy. That makes you our enemies too. So you see for what your father has done to my sisters, I could even not do as I please with you and your sister in return, since I have you here now. But my country does not war on girls and boys like Glan Delina does. So I just took you here to warn you. Now I am going to have you sent out but blindfolded so you won't know this place, you'll be released now but I want to tell you when Angeline goes back to school you are to treat her even as a friend, and if I ever hear any complaints from her, I'll surely make it hard for you. I won't have any of my sisters treated with the slightest disrespect by anyone, no matter what they are or what they did. And I suppose if I asked where your father lived you wouldn't, or dare not tell."

"I will not and cannot treat your sisters with respect no matter what happens" said Big eye Mack. "I dare not go contrary to my father's will. I won't do anything to them but I dare not talk to them. I do not mean no harm but I am watched secretly. The worse of it is, I'm sure

father (Mack) knows 'by now what you did to us'." "He does?" said Pennod and his sisters with one accord. "And how could that be? Who watches you and where?"

"I cannot dare tell that either. And that is not a fair question to ask us for me" declared the boy. "For if I told you truly you might injure my father altogether and if we told you an untruth we would be naughty and deserved to be punished. And my mother who was killed in a fight said, no body can imagine what horrid things your sisters are. She and father said to that to them 'your sisters are uglier than the Gargoyles'."

"But say your father and you too better be careful how you criticize my sisters. I don't would

you like to be called ugly looking creatures yourselves? As a matter of fact my sisters are the most good, the most important, the loveliest and prettiest little girls in all the world!"

"And you are seven little queens." Jean exclaimed. "No answered Jennie" you are wrong about that. If it is God's will we may be better than queens some day, but just now we are princesses."

"What's that?" asked Jean gazing with awe at Jennie. "Young queens of course but we cannot call ourselves queens until the proper time" was the reply. "Even in Abbaannia, good as they are, the high rank people are very proud, but mother said, that despite our age, we are very powerful in rank and should be the most respected and important little girls in the world."

"Where is your father's spies now if your father knows of this?" asked Daisy anxiously looking around.

"I'm not afraid to let it out as you could not detect them any way. Did you not see a boy go out of the room or seen, as

you took us. He has gone to tell father."

"And will he make a desperate attack here?" enquired Catherine drawing back.

"It is very probable he would." And - and - do you think he would succeed this time?"

"To be sure, when he can get all his men together. But most of them are afraid of these Chinese" answered the boy in a regretful tone.

"How old are you?" inquired Violet who noticed that he stared at her and her sisters as if fascinated.

"Quite young? I grieve to say and my sister that you have here is practically my own age. I remember rightly we are each nine years old the day before yesterday."

"But that isn't so young" cried Violet in amazement.

"No" drawled Pig eye Mack "it seems to me very babyish."

"How old is your father?" asked Jennie.

"He is about 66 years old. He is a little fuzzy you know and afraid of growing old. Being still in his prime."

"I should think he would be" agreed all the girls together.

"After a moments thought Jane asked.

"Because my father torments us are we friends or enemies? I mean will you be good to us or do you intend to make us prisoners?"

"As for that we princes would like to make prisoners of you two, Jean, since you are children of our enemy who persecuted us, and sent us to two dreadful islands but unfortunately we have hearts that are merciful so that we can not have the meanness to do so. Of course that does not mean that we can be friends unless you chose to be on our side. If you chose to do that we might consider, but even if you do not, you, if you leave us alone will be quite safe."

There was a regretful account in Jennies voice and at the words all the other little girls sighed dismally. Jean and Pig eye Mack felt relieved. Presently Jean asked.

"Why do you refuse to make us prisoners?"

"Well because we no reason to punish our brother really know what he about but he made a mistake this time in bringing

you here. We could be friends if you took to our side and you probably won't do that." "No indeed," said "peg eye" Mack. (sat on a tack) "We don't even wish for the company of such awful girls as you are." "Permit me to say," returned Jennie somewhat angrily, "that you are impolite to call us names, knowing that we cannot resent your insults."

"Yes," added Penrod, "I consider my sisters very beautiful in appearance, and we are of an excellent family and have a pedigree that I challenge any human to equal as it extends back about twenty thousand years to the time after the flood. Can you match that pedigree?" "Well," said Jean, "I was born in Chicago and I guess that being just as respectable and thought, as being forced to stay on the Devil's Island, and Molokai will be a climate every where. If it isn't I'll have to stand it that all."

"You would not have stood the climate of the Devil's Island one day," said Daisy. "But my father did not send you girls to those islands," said

Jean. "I did not know you were even sent away and neither did he or my mother." "My father is blamed for many things," he did not do that is why he is so hot against you. But after to-morrow you'll never see him again. Another man is taking his place, and he's quitting the job here. But no matter what you will do to us we will not—never will tell who the ones were who ordered you sent to those islands because one of you in that battle they killed my mother and almost blinded my mother?"

"But that can be done easily," said Penrod. "I don't know if you like to face the third degree?" "You're statement shows you are with my enemies through thick and thin and why did she beat up my sisters then? That's a criminal offense. If that's the way you feel then I'm not letting you go. I threw pepper in her eyes because she did the same to my sisters. No one shot her. She escaped in spite of the pepper in her eyes. You say

you know about that and I will refuse to tell us the third degree will compell you. You won't be able to stand that."

"From what I heard of the third degree everything I and my sisters went through is nothing" said Joyce. "It is a miracle if you can remain silent in the face of that."

"And you would really do that to us?" asked Jean tears flooding her eyes.

"It is not us" said Jennie. "Our brother and the police will do that. It seemed mean that was done to your mother but she had no right to throw pepper in our eyes and steal Violet and Daisy. If she is captured she'll go to prison and you'll be looked on as the children of a jailbird. Oh we're very good all right but we sure can strike back hard. If it is fair to do those things to us it is fair in war for us to quit being the gentle fool doves we were and turn into danger our rattlesnakes. So if we like we strike we could hold you alone for saying that. And we will

even if it is dangerous to do so unless Pernod decides (other wise)

"We need not worry whether he tells us or not" said Pernod. "But listen Angelone when you go to school again and he acts the same towards you as before just let me know that's all. And I'll deal with him and his sister just the same as his father dealt with us." Then he called to one of the Chinese friends who came at his bidding. Pernod first wrote something on a piece of paper and placed it in an envelope. Then he turned to Mack's son.

"I'm giving you this to give to your father. But don't think it is an explanation of why you were brought here for it isn't. See that he gets it. (not a fit) I'll see what it says. Now young" to the Chinese (do him) - See that they are blindfolded and taken to the street."

And they were led away by the Chinaman. Was it a compromise who you wrote to Mr. Mack (lying on the bed) asked Angelone.

"No sur-re-bob. I don't compromise with any one. It is only a momentary truce if he will accept it. If he

does we'll see him to-morrow. Otherwise not. I've got to think of something to stop this. Mr Mack is an American not a Glandelinian. But he works for them. And they pay him well. But if he is caught, he'll first serve a prison term, and then exiled a man, without a country."

"Do you intend to try to convince him, then, on the wrong side?"

"No, I never thought of that. But I going to try to get him to listen to reason on one thing. My father had suggested that himself."

"And what is that?" asked Violet.

"You'll all find out if he comes at I suggested alone, unarmed and wearing a white truce suit."

"What if we don't see him?"

"Then you'll have to disguise as pauper boys in order to even go to Idoly Communion. It is either Mack or some one who is causing all this fracas of our being barred from St Patrick. No one not even the priests or the sisters will believe you are so good that you do not need to go to confession."

"That situation is the talk of nearly the whole city. Tell you dear sisters is it very dangerous for us in this city. I did not hide you here merely from the spies but from the public in general. I did not like the conversation I so often heard. I fear the people not the spies." "How could they be worse than the spies?" asked the little girl, altogether. "They are not."

"Glandelinians? of course not," declared Bernad. "But Glandelinians are nothing compared to these people, and people of a nation which could lick the world. They're supposed to be Christians but God knows as well as we do that there is not a single person sinless here and there are crimes committed by the million throughout the country."

An wicked as Glandelin's is the God knows is free from crime committed. Commit a small crime there and there's hell to pay. In this country every body sins except the insane and they only even then notice the sins of others. They therefore knowing this don't themselves believe there is any body in the whole world."

who can truthfully say
 "I have never runned" I therefore
 when we came over here
 and tried to show it is true
 about us, they either laughed
 at us, or became hostile.
 I don't doubt one, but that
 the spies finding this
 out, took advantage of it
 and must have secretly
 increased the hostility of
 the people by circulat-
 ing a lot of black lies
 about us. I have disco-
 vered and captured some
 of those lying circulars.
 One of them stated that
 we hate this country
 because it is not our
 own and that if we
 had the chance we'd
 tear the stars and stripes
 and trample the flag
 under foot -"

"Oh is that so" said
 Jennie with great heat.
 "I've never seen any
 one even raise their
 hat or salute as they
 passed by or under one."
 "I could have shown you
 little girls some of
 them" said Pennod but
 it would ruin your
 modesty and make
 you blush with shame
 so to make it worse
 the most of the
 people believe all
 that. Some of the
 circulars even say that
 we came to this

country to spy into its own
 secrets. All those false reports
 have caused most of the people
 to be so hostile towards us.
 What only saves us, is that
 the Chicago police are wise
 to the situation, and it was
 Burn who advised me to
 place ourselves here. I do
 fear the more hot-headed
 and evil natured people
 are going to rise in immense
 armed mobs against us.
 I myself dare not approach
 within sight of St Patrick
 Patricks Church. None of
 the priests or nuns will be-
 lieve what I say and they
 look on us as either
 diabolical or crazy. We are
 looked on every where as
 base deceivers and enemies
 of their country disguised
 as unusual saints and
 therefore no one will have
 to do anything to do with
 us, and we are rejected
 every where now."

"That shows that the spies
 are trying to win their
 purpose by running our
 characters" said Joe. So
 I know that we are in
 grave danger. But I thought
 we were only brought
 here because of the
 spies."

The next day came
 hot and windy for
 the last part of May.
 Pennod waited for the
 coming of M. L. C.

58
Pennod did not know exactly what time he would arrive and how he would arrive, but had sent him a pass with the note. The question was:

"Would he come?"
They waited patiently however for they had no idea when he would come as Pennod in the note had not mentioned any particular hour. They had been up early and ate an early breakfast. The Chinamen had been instructed not to let any one else in with Mr Mack. (sitting small table)

But Mr Mack came. He was dressed in a white Duck suit and wore a large white straw hat. His shoes were also white with the instep section black.

He was a tall stout man and wore a small black beard, and Harold Lloyd style of spectacles. But he had no mustache. He had a stern fierce fighting face, and true Irish features. Pennod motioned him imperiously to a seat. Mr Mack sat down without removing his hat. Though Pennod's sisters were there seated also Mr Mack either did not see them or acted as if they were not there.

113
It was the first time that Pennod and his sisters had ever seen Mr Mack face to face.

"Well?" he drawled in a loud rough voice "What did ye mind fer me fer?"

"First thing" answered Pennod, "I want you to take a look at my sisters, and whether you wish to or not."

However Mr Mack did look and was so startled by their dazzling beauty in every way that he was filled with the greatest amazement.

"Yes I see them" he said.

"Well did you know that through the work of your spies the youngest were sent to the French Dervs Islands, and the oldest to the 'land of the living death' called Molokai?"

"For why are you asking me that question? That incident does not concern me at all."

"I know it don't" snapped Pennod, "but I want my answer."

"No I didn't until I read it in the papers. And at that time I felt greatly relieved. I wondered how you got them back."

"That was easy enough. I got help from God and home. And

Are you the main leader of my enemies?"
 "I was. I've resigned my commission and another man will take my place to night. Why did you bring my kids here since I saw you did not injure them. I myself saw you take them from the Skinner school?"

"You got my note did you not?"

"Yes."
 "Well that was the reason. I took your children first to warn Mack Jimson to be respectful to my sister Angelina and to give him that note for you."
 "And why did you resign your commission?" asked Joyce.

"I was forced to resign" you was. And what for?" asked Pernod.

"I was reported to the Glandelinian authorities because you Prince Pernod got the best of me for every move. You'll have an enemy in my place you won't be able to trifle with."

"Well if I could trifle with you I'm sure I could trifle with him. If you had really resigned your command than I'm afraid my sending for you was in vain."

Mr Mack looked greatly surprised.

"Anyhow you who are a born American had no business to help or lead those scoundrels even if the Glandelinian government did pay you well for it. I wanted you to come here because I thought the sight of my sister would touch your heart. But I see it is in vain. You're going back to Glandelin? I suppose?"

"No. even though I helped your enemies I never was there. But after this day you'll never see or hear of me again. I'm going to unknown places and you'll never be bothered by me or my wife again. But enemy though I am I'll give you fair warning just the same. Look out for the one who takes my place to night. I'll be compelled to tell him all about you."

"and who is he?" asked Pernod.

"I do not know his name yet though I've heard of him. Did you ever glance over the Daily News?"

"Yes" "see 'Mutt and Jeff.'" "Yes"

many of Lee
members of the Assembly
bar dropped in and out
and then I came in and
took my seat I occupied
what time in trying to
judge from the faces of
the assembly what Klein
meant was going to do.

Many looked ruefully tired
and sleepy, then I said
Are you agreed gentle-
man as to the verdict
you find in this case?
"Yes" and "In Danger"

Lee however, refused to answer
Do you find himself
guilty of being an
unfortunate ex-felon
in this?

Very gentle "In Danger"
All right, must have
been some giants

explosion of Lee 1243
atmosphere. So also in
guilty for all else done.
"Very well gentlemen"
I said "It is your
verdict not mine"

at Lee's foreman word
a seven child had ran
through the Assembly
Hall for when it was
known the evening
before that eleven was
one and one the other
the belief had been
general that the Mayoral
was Lee's proclamation
of guilty. I had so
understood it and the
verdict was of course
a complete surprise to
me and showed that
no fear had fallen
given in to the rest

I myself of 1244
course retained mine
under it now and
my friend Reuben
Whitney pushed forward
and and shot me
warmly by Lee's hand,
not my own hand.

I had God for that
verdict against Edward
But Mr. Dwyer I am
indeed rejoiced and I
owed I hardly expected
it despite all else done.
I did not expect it all.
I said in a very much
rejoiced voice

You brought it in and
congratulate you further
Mr. Dwyer Mr. Ellis
Lee's Chief engineer
foreman said fullness
the hand or my
shoulder and that I do

The farmer had 1243
washed at So Falls on Lee road
until ten o'clock on the
previous morning, however,
and had driven over against
the first thing on the
morning so anxious was
about the accident, I really
did believe Swales was
guilty at any time about
what was right before
the first I was glad
indeed to hear the ver-
dict for after I arrived
and running I was
really angry, I had
been I believe the
bouncing off of Gleason
the unfortunate came
Swales was into getting
himself into this
awful affair. Had it
not been for that
no one would have
ever doubted for ever

moment that built 1246
of what happened when
the deflector from Western
Gleason City
I was in something very
mistaken about it though
which was more he
solved "in all cases"
I said "yet I never
really blamed Gleason
city for it from the first
and ever had I done
so something about the
western part would
have made up many
times for any deflector
the western may have
made it for."

I had in mind the
Dangers "the farmer
said I am glad the
matter is made up and
my construction work,

was met at Janet 1248
and now I will meet
keep you for I know
you will want to be
off to prepare for probably
a still more if not last
meeting.

at the next meeting
three days later I
myself started I do
say!

Alto H. Tullman
Superintendent of the
United States Coast and
Geodetic Survey that the dedicated
suspended magnetic needle
of the two coast and
geodetic survey of
reservations is one
situated at Challenhor
M.D. six or seven miles
southwest of Wash-
ington and the
also at Baldwyn Kan.

similar meter 1249
south of Savannah
were disturbed beginning
at about the time that
Savannah was concerned
upon Banningburg is
reported to have occurred
and fact as far as
likely miles west of
Jameville could any one
here explain how
Savannah could cause
this. Was it the unusual
noise and more

That is hard to answer
said Gaudin because
Banningburg it went on
a firing that only
God could explain
Because of this the
magnetic disturbance
began at Challenhor
Observation at the time
corresponding at the

1248
The whole island was
shook on at Bunnybury
at 5:75 So. S. all
was, The delicate
apparatus installed at
these observations is
so arranged that it
registers automatically
by photograph means
the minute variations
in the direction and
intensity of the earth's
magnetic force a more
wonderful fact that no
scientific observer
had ever reported
a seismic disturbance
before. Since the
case shook on at
Bunnybury. If all
did so, I can understand
what how else could
have ever caused

seismic disturbance 1249
during the summer of 1937
at Bunnybury and
from Glen or as far
as Glenville or further
but it was forer it
did occur. But how could
else do it. I mean
unmistakable beyond
words. These things
are supposed to register
"analogically".

The same observations
had a magnetic dis-
turbance also at the
time the terrible
eruption destroyed St
Pierre. and at
St Pierre time when
the waves of fire
struck St Pierre at
about 8 o'clock AM

May 8 1902 and 1922
a clock was stopped 1252.
at 7:50 A.M. 7.5
and at Chellinham
Observatory carried a
corresponding time to 7:53
local mean time at
at Los Osos and
San Jose at 7:55. It
P.M. time

Yes but that death
cloud was not Swale
Pee but an eruption.
Of course that happened
also But the fire of
that eruption could not
be kind way equal
the fire of Swale Pee

Flame of town forty
miles away reported
reported under mountains
from Swale Pee

about and vibration 1253.
said Donald A. and 7.5
in general effects due
due to eruption of volcanoes
have been recognized
at magnetic observations
before for usually then
mechanical vibration
are caused by earth
quakes and are have
been suggested by
the discharge formed
magnetic motion But
how could Swale
Pee of have affected
them. Even though
the observations in the
day cannot explain.
So how could we have
7.5 in water recorded
instances of some volcanic
earthquakes of last April

125 18th which was 1253
recorded by remagnetization
at various places but
also at Charleston
magnetic Observatory of
the Coast Survey. The
earthquake simply caused
a much more vibration
of the magnetic needles
about the mean position
of rest and lasted
one half an hour
whereas the disturbance
of August 15th began
near at Bismarck
was a severe abrupt
distinct magnetic effect
pulling the needles
aside from their usual
direction and lasting
many hours. How could
Bellevue Pass have
accomplished this?

1254
Wasn't there any report
from witnesses that
the violently vibrated
the ground. As we
stood on the way?
and I am sure.
Not that we know of
anybody else. I believe
as was said there had
been some place before
the animal shown an
earthquake on the 18 of
April. The which had
been registered by the
delicate points of
magnetic needles but it
was a mechanical
vibration of the magnetic
needles in said direction
about the mean position
of rest and lasted
about one half an
hour whereas the
disturbance of May 8

which began at Lee 1256
time of Lee suddenly dis-
appearance of Lee at
Challenger Observatory
at a time corresponding
to 7:53 at Pierre Point
and Lee Baldwin Observatory
7:55 at Pierre Point
which it was said was
distinct magnetic effect
also pulling the needles
aside from their usual
direction and also lasting
many hours.

The same thing
happened during Swastika
Pier sample from
Bunnybury. It is
found that the Lee was
being from Charleston
to Charleston and
not only pulling the
needles aside from their

Lee usual 1256 2:55
direction and also
lasting many hours
but many of the delicate
needles at Lee United
States, Graduate Survey
but also at Challenger
Challenger and
Lee at Lee Baldwin
Kansas were so violently
disturbed beginning at
Lee time Lee at
at Charleston was
reported to be actually
reversed. It is said the
change magnetic
disturbance began at
Challenger Observatory
corresponding to 5:53
Bunnybury time local
mean time while
it was reported Lee
" needles also were
at Lee time Lee

storm swept through
Chesham and Chisler
shire at 7.55 Chesham
line. It was at the
time that the delicate
needle was pulled out
of the actual of a storm
and moved, especially
at Baldwin Kansas. I
wonder did the supplier
of the Puller and the
storm cloud of Swale
Pier have the same
condition as off Swale
Pier was far stronger
what was in them both
that caused such violent
magnetic disturbances?
No tornado ever did
that before. And from
about the dark cloud
at St. Pierre and
the horizon of Swale

too was far so far
could both have had
the condition to cause
magnetic disturbances?
I am in a hard condition
to answer said Barr
Sagar. It is like comparing
the whorl of off the Soder
Coast off Norway with
the condition of Swale
Pier. And both are
just as dangerous.
You said that the
and also the two. It
was sufficient during
a storm danger for a
ship to be within
a mile of that awful
modulation while I was
said it was exceedingly
dangerous. I. It is within
five miles of Swale
Pier like a small

crowd dangerous 13593/59
attraction to And yet I suppose 1259
Pier ferry was not height-
ened by a storm.
I suppose the ferry was
heightened by bouncing
off Gleason's car as in
the west side?

So it was learned
as not any of the
observers (professor in
head at the meeting?)

asked if you
you was the answer
only one Otto H. Tullman
the Superintendent of
the United States Court
and Goodale Juries
refused himself at
the meeting, said
James Gurner.

on this morning
when the subject was
brought up there were

again three answers 1260
magistrate on the Assembly
bench and motion Waver
The Assembly Hall was
then crowded to the
upmost capacity for the
reason of the
disturbance and the reported
ruining of the delicate in-
struments that caused the
most greatest excitement
and the news that Otto
H. Tullman Superintendent
of the United States
Court and Goodale
Goodale Juries was
in the Assembly Hall
meeting Hall and
the important men that
was with him had
created great sensation
Professor Tullman was
the first to give
his evidence He testified

What from what he 1261
got the group of men that
the delicate suspended
magnetic needles and needles
at the two court and
Goodale runway observation
the O. M. situated at
Cheltenham 7:10 morning
miles. southeast of Washington
and the other at Beldam
Kearnsa seven miles
out of Lawrence
was so violently dis-
turbed that the needles
were so roughly
pulled from their usual
direction for so many
hours that they were
unable to return to
their proper relation
the more also was
so peculiar that he
thought someone had been
in the magnetic room

disturbing the room 1262
magnetic compasses but
found no one there at
the time. The house was
the way that in the
habit of locking the
door and had not been
elsewhere. He found that
the delicate needles would
not go back to their
place. That there was a
strange feeling in the
rooms that started him
yet nothing else had
been disturbed.

What time did the
occurrence take place.

At the time 7 read that
the catarrh had
started at Bunnbury
on reported by the news
to have occurred on the
return school he at
about 6:53 Bunnbury
the Bunnbury news

we never knew 1263
or guessed what had caused
the disastrous magnetic
disturbance. Our delicate
magnetic needles were
positively ruined. When
it was not discovered
till after the news
that the magnetic disturbance
was going on, I first
dismissed my assistants
for it was somewhat late
in the afternoon and
it was then discovered
that magnetic needles
were doing the same
thing at the time of
the awful explosion of
the Belle in destroying
the city of St. Pierre
at about 8 o'clock and
its clock stopped at 7:50
A.M. I thought it was
the Belle again but

longer found the 1264
Belle was absolutely
quiet. But the disturbance
was far worse. The
disturbance caused by the
Belle explosion did not
even harm. This dis-
turbance was exceedingly
violent and ruined them,
a large quantity of
other magnetic mea-
sures were also ruined.
What do you estimate
the value of the magnetic
needles ruined?
We have not yet
been able to estimate
an loss. I said Mr.
Tullman, even millions
I'm afraid would
take months to replace
those that are ruined.
It is very difficult to
replace them.

The old professor 1265
under him found every
thing so as he had had
and wondering how
was very mysterious
opened the next day
man testified to him
that violent disturbance
but that there was
and they could not have
any earthquake because
of the unusual disturbance
Even down to the
mechanical device was
changed of mind after.

Directly such a disturbance
was discovered guard
was placed in charge
of the observation
with strict order to
admit no one but
the Professor and a
man was sent off
to Washington to the
Chief Geodesic

Geodesic Survey 1266
official there and of the
Chief officer of the Survey
gave evidence as to the
state of the magnetic
needle at the time of the
strange disturbance when
he was first in charge
and then the Geodesic
official who had been
sent over from Washington
then stepped into the
witness box and for
He testified to the action
of the needle at 4:55
of Brown being here and
said that the manner
of the action at 7:18
Chestnut Time was
much more violent
and in the manner
in which they had gone
to work and in which
the effect seemed to
show that what came

Lee Needleless 1267
needleless to be fused
aside from Lee usual
direction and not only last
many hours showed that
it was the worst probably
of some unusual atmospheric
disturbance of some kind
and not an earthquake

On examining the
magnetic needles closely
Lee believed a most
formidable atmospheric pressure
of some kind might
have occurred somewhere
not an earthquake
and remembering how
the eruption of Mt. Pelee
had caused a similar
violent disturbance of
the same kind it be
was believed it ex
ploded again but we
never found it was not
ever in Lee slightest action.

We Lee wondered 1268
what in Lee world was
Lee cause. It was not
until some days later
when we read the news
and Mr. Tallman believed
from his time it happened
that Swedish Pao was
at fault. Mr. Tallman
was present when the
news was shown to him
three days later. He
said it sure was that
bad storm. Swedish
Pao. Upon making
inquiries he found that
the Observatory at Baldern
Kanner suffered still
more. He returned
here at once as far as
a special train could
get him here and
gave to Lee Baldern

Observation found 1268
Lee condition were clear
than anywhere else,
The delicate needle was
totally ruined. The man
identified the brand of
the needle and said they
was a total wreck,

Amelia Goodale's surveying
surveyor found the
ruin. The Chief Goodale
surveyor read the
statement. Tallman had
made to him.

The magnometer was
ruined for half an
hour in an under one,

Mr Tallman not address
the room of them said
addressing that Chief
Professor who was sitting
on a chair faced for
him directly in front
of the Assembly Hall.

We are sorry to trouble 1270
you but we must ask
you to go into the witness
box. I want to ask you
when he had taken his
stand in the box how
it was you at once con-
nected the Magnometer
disturbance with the storm
"Devil's Peep".

Because the disturbance
was noted at
Barnaby at 5:55
P.M. and at Charles
Chamber at 7:55 P.M.
Chamber was there. It
was an unusual disturb-
ance indeed never
recorded or on instat
ment before no
violent especially when
the school Chamber
and an all the Magnometer

1271
needles had all been
pulled violent winds from
their usual direction and
their ruin on that awful
afternoon. Sweet's Pie
name had been in my
mind on reading the
news and on seeing all
the ruin of the Magnolia
needles. I recognized that
it was that awful
storm that did it all.
And yet so far away. It
must have been some
awful shock in the air
similar to that from
the outbreak of the Palace
that wiped out St. Pierre
and all the shipping in
the harbor except the
Roddam which got
away. So I naturally
recognized them at once.
There was an unusual deep

1272
silence in the
Assembly hall when Mr.
Tallman gave his evidence.
He told the impression
had been rather favorable
that Sweet's Pie must
have shaken the ground
in the frightful uproar.
The story of the uproar
heard as far as Carlo
Tallman thought strange
and very remarkable
had been his own
impossible and if true
would have completely
accounted for the distant
origin of the Magnolia
needles which seemed
on the one hand evidence
against Sweet's Pie
or after revealing of
the immense clouds of
wrecks. The evidence
of Mr. Tallman however

entire all over 1273
complexion of the case.
There had been no shaking
of the ground in Seattle
Pac but in change
atmospheric shock had
broken windows four
miles away. I had stood
quiet and composed during
the hearing, I felt
great surprise and emotion
when the statement of the
destruction of the magnetic
needles was given. I
had indeed upon think-
ing the matter over
before coming into the
Assembly Hall come to
the conclusion that the
uprush of the storm must
have caused some very
violent magnetic
disturbance in the
atmosphere around the
terrific storm and

probably had been the 1274
cause of the destructive
disturbance of the needles.
So the destruction of
the needles therefore
was more than sufficient
to me. In fact I could
not know it could have
happened. It was remarkable
unusual. Probably what
had been in effect in
the deadly cloud that
writhed out of Puget
was also in the storm
of Seattle. But except in
Seattle Pac it was far
more severe. As before
at the conclusion of
the evidence I was asked
if I had any question
to put. I hesitated
for a moment and then
said I cannot compre-
hend it. It was unusual.

1275
an event that
never happened before
really an event such as
never happens in any
observatory or at least few
magnetic needles stirred
I confessed my inability
to comprehend any of it
and that it was too rare
almost universal
understanding more of the
subject by every body
in the country but it
nevertheless was not my
own. The situation
was altogether untell-
ible and even
absurd. I told the
Chancellor of the University
Swale Pie. Again the
magistrate consulted
together with him for
three minutes.

1276
Mr. Tallman we
shall be obliged if
you will send the witness
box again. In your
former evidence Mr.
Tallman you said
nothing in the way
of being to Swale Pie
but now it seems
positive you had a
previous acquaintance of
him or with him after
the Calamity. Will you
tell the Assembly what
it is not true or true.
I am afraid I have not
much to say at day today.
Mr. Tallman said I know
nothing of the alarm or the
calamity it caused until
I saw the paper and
most recent towards it
found somewhat west of
the Johnston's becoming

a most unusual 1277
hurricane with unknown
unmeasurable force
and whipping out the Glasgow
Asylum and also every
thing else in Bunny
bury and, Chesterbrook
what as it may be in
your memory and more
ruined the magnetic
needle in our Observations
and that of the United
States Coast Survey
some seven or eight
days ago not too slow.
The storm they say
was an unusual type
two weeks to be an
ordinary storm. and had
a force twelve times
in one could move
equal, that might have
had something to do with
the ruin of so many of
our magnetic needles, etc.

Some storm formed 1278
in a reduced circumst-
ances can yet become
dangerous if getting a
good start usually they
in sheltering some part of
western Glasgow City was
by some phenomena
forced to turn off the
the cause and became
heightened in the fury
and I suppose you know
the consequences of course
the storm was of an
unusual type. Tornado
furnish generally do not
had condition that puts
them into violent con-
vulsion or make them
move forward at a
fourth five degree
angle towards the horizon
I am certainly, was some
thing, whatever was with
the and what happened
to my magnetic needles.

known it. So gone 1279
every evidence of what
a strange horror it was
on that day when it was
loading for Bunnybury.
The action of the next
morning greatly alarmed me
and later they acted much
more violently when the
storm struck into Chester
brown with all its fury.
At the time I was
knowing what it was
I did not certainly suspect
a storm to do such an
unusual thing or being
even guilty of giving
shocks in the air and
in spite of my companion
that Mr. Pease again
having done it again
as it did so in 1902
May 8 I had in
question made I wish to

say publicly that 1280
I have deeply regretted
having done so since
and that as I was
informed that Mr. Pease
was not even in
the slightest eruption
and been quiet for years
not your way and I considered
I acted hastily in
doing so. I could not
see the cause as regards
came to us that there
was no earthquake
or any type of volcanic
eruption or considering
the condition going on
I suspected some some
sort of magnetic
condition in the air or
some atmospheric shock
considering that it was
long time since the
Pease, destructive eruption
that destroyed St. Peter's

I ought not to have 1281
Mr. Plessen guest with
out more positive evidence
that I held before me
though I know the an-
terrior eruption affected
my instruments violently
May 8/1902 at 7:55
St. Pierre time. I can
also say that another
observatory professor John
Schonmader of our Coast
survey will give the
strange occurrence the
unusual character for the
strange performance and
he has known it to occur
ever since that dreadful
day. My present
scientist Mr. Johnson
is also I believe
ready to testify to
the strange conduct of
the magnetic needles

during those many hours 1282
of the strange disturbance?
I suppose Mr. Tallman
is what the American
magistrate said not but
you have not at any
time since the magnetic
disturbance the record the
delicate needles obtained
any actual evidence which
would show that you
was mistaken in your
new record view about
the damage of Mr. Plessen
and that your subsequent
change of opinion as to
the real cause of what
in the atmosphere was due
solely to your general
view of the character
of most of the records
as far as you know
it. I believe Mr. Tallman

answered Even now 1283
I do not know positively
how the tornado did the
no more than I know
how the death cloud from
the Palace that destroyed
St. Pierre caused it.

As no further question
was being asked he
resumed his report that
dead boat in evidence
not residence had caused the
most greatest surprise
not was and a great deal
of interest and great
amusement in the Assembly
Hall not telegraph call it
was clear not magnifying
that there was a strong
difference of opinion between
whether the disturbance
was a shock in the
atmosphere caused by
the awful mass of Swath.

for further the way 1284
as the subject and that
while many had something
like a strong concern
against Swath the
Observation Chief of the
Coast Survey was
strongly impressed that
some strong strange
magnetic disturbance in
the atmosphere had some-
thing to do with it
as there had been no
earthquake reported any
where after some con-
sultation in which the
Chief members of the
meeting examined various
papers produced by the
Tallman the head
magnetic said that had
the case would
have to be remanded

until two o'clock the 1285
afternoon for us to see
if further evidence on the
change and unusual of the
momen can be forth
coming but I was have
to say that under the
present circumstances
of the case not unless
we shall feel ourselves
obliged to have it fully
investigated, Mr Tullman
accounts of the change
proceedings of the magnetic
phenomenon from the time
it started at Bunnings
at 5:55 and got
dangerous to the instrument
and instruments when
at 7:35 it crashed
upon Chamberlain and up to
that time also it
rigid part I am sure
is positively true but

so far though we 1286
have the paper done
and did of course learn
that is nothing here by
which any one could
solve the mystery. The
Tullman stated that so
far it is positively un-
supported as Swales P
did the same thing as
Mr Pales did during the
shock cloud that shot
from Mr Pales side and
wiped out St Pierre and
all the shipping in the
harbor. We have quite
a few books on that
subject. But only Swales
P's diary was much
far worse and lasted
two days according to
these paper papers do
this is a very unusual
phenomenon almost complete

like suffer material 1287
or not of this world.
So as he says that so
far it is entirely
unsupported, completely
unsupported.

How about the violent
air waves that Sweden
has formed and sent around
the country so many
times?

So far that is also
unsupported, said
Tallman. Many say the
focus of annihilation of
so many people and
the horrible wounding
of so many others
was the breeding belly
of the strangling life
which cloud midway
between the two other
derstom and the peak
noon of the first one.
The destruction from
of abundant air to all the

clear across the country 1288
to the sea was due to
that awful and extra
ordinary phenomenon? It
is possible what caused
Sweden to be horrible
burn as to a candle
destruction of the magnetic
needles was caused by
Sweden's air becoming
violently off that part
of Western Gleason which
instead of turning down
down caused opposite
abrupt force in what
we could call immeasurable
air surface force
acting in a single or
radial direction led
the mid Pacific death
cloud which is evident
by the carrying away
of all the upper portion
of the South Island
current carrying away

1289
Totally the many guns
in the battery on the
low hill and the
status of the Vanger
the status of the Angel
Guardian of the
Second Heart, and also
by the condition of the
ruined house of John-
son to Garville. At
each hour it seemed to
grow much worse. Some
say during the storm
there was an accompanying
atmospheric flame. This
has been investigated
without success.

Could not the air waves
had caused the magnetic
disturbance? asked Carl
Staley.

I don't know positively
said Tullman himself
and yet great was
the range of such

1290
vibrations. They
could not be compared
with that of the air waves
caused in the night.
Sweet's Pie 7th alarm
phone way it is written
started from Sweet's
Pie at two minutes
past six on that awful
evening August 15 Sunday
afternoon and when the
door moving onward at
at even under the
arch like that produced
when a stone is thrown
into the water. The
ring like waves travel
ed on at a rate
from six hundred and
twenty miles an
hour and went
all the way around
the United States
four if not even
several times as was
considered by the

following facts 1291
It was in about 350
miles from the Swastika
Pac focus under review
The was connected with
the gas holder the usual
pressure holder recorder
the beginning of the
most great outbreak
the gauge showed a
large metric disturbance
equal to about four
tenths of an inch of
mercury that is an
extra on pressure
of about a fifth of a
pound on every square
inch. The reflection
the an instrument
of many years
for or great outbreak
are also recorded
by the instrument
but barometer in
the most distant

the most recorded 1292
the same disturbance
The great wave passed
and reversed around the
whole country and near
the the fact
Barometer in all our
from up at the auto
materially recorded the
effect of the first great
wave from Swastika
Pac to New Orleans
Delaware St Paul
New York San
Francisco Washington
and also the return
wave The first four
oscillations left the
mark on upward of
four barograms
the fifth and sixth
on several stations
and at New York
the existence of the

seventeenth was
certainly established 1293.
So don't you think there
could also have affected
the Bo. Nevada needles?
That is a hard question
to answer. The Magn
magnetic magnetite admitted
what a tremendous work
of erosionation this
must have been of the
Pae is attested by the
fact that what was once above
the mighty built
convent is one with
a badly broken ship
wreck. But could what
happen here work on
the instruments in
disastrously atmospheric
conditions and unusual
actions on the river
was noted during

during the storm for 1294
off and it was feared
some terrible calamity
was occurring but
what no one yet knew.
On the other hand we
have the evidence of the
destruction of the magnetic
needles in the Observatorium
admitted especially to
belong to the United
States Geological Survey
being raised
at the time the storm
rose upon Charleston
and hence further that
generally we have
the further important
evidence or important fact
that the storm had
been heard of for a
century or even

1296
further and had
may be supposed that
some had some knowledge
that it vibrated undown
as far as Lincoln Ill
especially the Retarded
Children Graham accord
ing to the children and
the person employed
upon the place and
had it may be
supposed some knowledge
of the fact that it
vibrated undown in
Chicago as to bread
many it had been
heard like crack craps
here and therefore
there is reason for the
belief that the sort
of vibration might have
been very loud on the
magnetic needles in

1296
the magnetic observation
I believe many acquainted
with the observation
noticed it also?
"Will it be of any use
my children's children
as to the character of
the strange disturbance
early the afternoon"
The the father asked
Tullman asked
"No I don't think so."
The magistrate said
"Evidence of that kind"
will be useless then
afternoon when the
matter of the most
strange phenomena was
be thoroughly sifted
we now have to decide
that this is something
strangely wrong with
the storm to cause the

change magnitude 1297
phenomenon connective
Sewals Pie with the
peculiar disturbance and
of that there is no
doubt because at the time
one of the phenomenon
there was no recorded
earthquake.

The selling continued
some first evidence was
produced and of the
change phenomenon. The
public opinion in the
assembly hall ran high
on the subject of the
phenomenon because of the
fact that the United
States Coast and Geo-
detic Survey and the
Observatories situated at
Cheltenham Md
and the other at Bald
Win Kansas

was a great distance 1299
from the zone of the
great Sewals Pie
storm. The other members
of the Observatories
was strongly in oppo-
sition to the evidence
he was very popular
among the scientists
and they pointed out
that something strange
about Sewals Pie
must have been really
concerned in the change
rather magnitude
disturbance. Upon the
other hand in opinion
ran strongly that the
now was the cause of
the magnetic disturbance
otherwise other causes
would be utterly
improbable and a
storm of that kind

who was found 1300
leaving off western
gleason. because of
some strange phenomena
accomplishing that would
be likely at once
to heighten mostly in
fury like a person
revengeing himself upon
somebody roughly showing
him aside. As to Mr
Tullman declaration of
his subsequent opinion
that the vibration
was caused by the
disturbance in the air
little weight was
attached to it. Everyone
knew that several
Poles was found plain
as far as Carlo Tull
and as he acknowledged
himself that he
had obtained no evidence

which would 1301
satisfy them that he
could not account for
the magnetic disturbances
as there was no earth
quake or a new eruption
of Mt Pelee or the
first cure it was
clear very clear that
it was from some
strange phenomenon caused
by several Poles and
more that he could
not say in his room
to-day could be the
subject of Dr. Sall
the phenomenon was
also noted in
telephone exchange
apparatus.

Anna-belle caused the
renewal of the machine
not leaving.

I am quite sure of 1302
of what took place at
United States Coast
Geodetic Survey at the
two coast and geodetic
survey observatories at
Cheltenham Md. and the
other at Baldwin Kansas etc
also asked me myself
on the stepped into the
inquiry about

Yes Mrs Rooney I
spoke to Mr Tullman
last night before their
meeting and he himself
told me all that had
happened at the Geodetic
observatory.

And you think they
could have been affected
by Swallow's Pass that
great distance away etc
etc asked eagerly.

I am quite sure of it

I am quite sure of 1303
of Mrs Rooney as
I am of my own life
I am sure that
I heard as far as
Cairo Ill. and for anyone
who knows Swallow's
Pass to have as waves
around by the shipboard
up and down and can change
a rock in the air to
have a doubt in
absolutely absurd beyond
thought. A man terrible
about that Swallow's
Pass will never be
equaled, and impossible
like to find it.

What did the Pass
person Tullman say
last night? How did
he account for the
change. Magnetic etc

disturbance that runs 130.4
so many of the delicate
needles?

I repeated the account
Mr Tallman had given
and said when we
get to the main point
of the strange mystery
I shall of course be
very bold as I do not
believe the air waves
did it and to the fact
that any magnetic
disturbance in the air
had caused it I firmly
believe it was done by
that awful monster.

Do you think we
will be able to
solve the mystery
or do you think
something will get
off Mr Wagoner? as
asked myself.

I showed ardently 130.45
have some hope not hope
or that mystery may not
turn as first Rooney had
spoken but there is no
hope of discovering from
myself that it can be
by any means certainly I had
unfortunately at Pierre
disaster and about what the
strange shot to the water
month will be terrible
against our efforts in Sweet
Pie at this time further the
caused the same thing in
longer duration and with
no more violent as to wood
many of the magnetic
needles which Tallman says
are difficult to replace the
smaller what the cost of
renewing Sweet Pie affected
the whole country from
north to South and west
to east the situation really

is unaccountable. 1306
unbelievable and
thought I am perfectly
sure that in account of
the time the magnetic
disturbances occurred and
also what took place so
astounding and mysterious.
In correct there is no
mist to confirm it that
it can't be disputed.
The United States
Coast and Geodetic Survey
of the two coast and
Geodetic Survey Observatories
to one situated at Chert
encher MD and the other
at Boulder Kansas is
so far from the cause
of this frightful storm
that I don't comprehend
it. Thought of course there
are other places away
from St Pierre at
was affected by that.

great catastrophe for 1307
The first magnetic
disturbance began at the
Cheltenham Observatory
at a time corresponding
ing to 7:54. St Pierre
time and was so severe
as to put the needles
far aside from their
usual direction and was
loud and lasting
many hours. The
Observatory was
during the wild fury
of the solar flare beginning
at 3:00 PM at
the about the time the
catastrophe was reported
at 5:03 PM. Sunny
line and the
far was catastrophe
at Cheltenham and
all the way to Jansville
Jansville is reported
to have occurred at 7:54
at Cheltenham and growing.

yet very much worse 1308
was beyond description
on Sweet's Pae muddy
road on Al St Pierre
or on Eben Adenon
there were not the slightest
earthquake disturbances
recorded from anywhere.

Both the Pae. Explosives
and Sweet's Pae did it
It could be said the
root of story they will
say that any one would
get up an account that
the more of Sweet's
Pae caused some violent
magnetic shock in the
atmosphere nearest to
the storm which spread
out savagely to effect
everything disastrous
throughout the nation
but there is nothing
to confirm it, I believe
the distance of the United

States Coast and 1309
Good the Sunday and
the one at ^{the} Baldwin
Kansas Observatory accord-
ing to the map, are
amassed as much further
away than from St Pierre
or St Pierre of course
if some one could know the
strange phenomenon as we
well as we hoped the
result would be certain
but I have been try-
ing to look at the
facts of even the strange
air waves produced in
Sweet's Pae as if it
was not a mystery
yet I can't say at
all what decision I
should come to in such
a case. Did the
noise do it or the air
waves? Still of course
the terrible noise was

heard as far as Cairo 1310
~~Det~~ Illinois and the
high character that has
been given. Swell
Poe and the fact
that there is overwhelm-
ing evidence of all the
did and the shock on the
nose and shock on the
an and the waves are
produced and whatever
other evidence connecting
her with the hellish
horror in any way and
what she did to the
great concern and other
important places must
can count immensely
that she probably did
by the three evidences
of nose on waves are
an shock affected the
Magnetic motion at
these observatories. The

unmeasurably unusual 1311
for her to produce a so
sound heard as far as
Cairo 1310 and as far as
it was said at New York
city took 7 days in 1310
to a scientific man
Rogers the highest one
in all earth
I hear that you have been
engaged by the President
in many ways to go on the quest
to try to discover the
cause of the phenomenon
I don't believe it could
have been caused by the
any way though I cannot
say for certain about the
shock on the an and
therefore I authorize you
to spend any sum you
now while the machine
continues that may be
necessary by the motion
in getting up of possible

at Lee came and 1312
want you to instruct
your next highest Scientific
Scientist 1. afternoon on the
statement 1. morning
afternoon. Of course I
cannot appear openly in
the matter for I have
not yet time yet now
but you can mention
my name if you wish
and I will guarantee
all expenses as I have
plenty of Cash not dark.
It would seem to me
that it would be dan-
gerable to find out
if possible near what
part of Bunnybury
diver's P. developed
such frightful convulsion
when it is said the
magnetic needles were
first violently affected

violently affected and 1313
and unless it really
heightened the awful fury.
Some say no one knows
where it first heightened
the fury but as it was
told it was about twenty
miles from Bunnybury
and the car described
the roads diver's P. as
followed as Lee ought to
be no difficulty in find-
ing Lee. I should
advise you to have a
chat with the Mayor
Lee Mayor of Bunnybury
He is a great friend
of mine and a very
intelligent fellow who
may be able to suggest
some points to be
followed up on in
the part of Lee city that
escaped followed Lee
frightful diver's P. as
flowers came at any

state do all you can 1314

How about what caused
the vibration at Charleston
Do I need to follow that
up?

Maybe so but I can force
any explanation? I said
even at the city of
Chicago nearly a mile
away from Char-
terburybury that
there was no great that
awful afternoon I was
said the house trembled
with the atmospheric
violence and the windman
rattled as if cannonballs
were being discharged
in the streets. I remember
every people throughout
the city to crowd streets
and house-tops in an
effort to find what the
noise came from
or coming by Berrybury

An frightful noyaller 1315

It seemed even then
she was only rehearsing
for the supreme display
at Charleston not your

By 7:54 Charleston
was the rehearsal was
over and the awful
performance by Lucie
Pue began not long

An overture consisting
of an awful introduction
uproad was succeeded
by a frightful convulsion
convulsion of Lucie
Pue which tore away
all part of Charleston
like a north mile
wide explosion and
scattered it to the wind
of Heaven. In that
fearful outbreak all
record of former uproad
of Lucie was broken
and the result was

1316
the destruction of important
buildings which it is an
established fact that even
the wrecked the first
supreme effort of the
the it was which
produced the mightiest
noise that so far as
we can ascertain has
ever been heard in
this country but is there
any proof that it disaster
ever effected the magnitude
needed of those three
Observations? It must under
have been a loud
noise which could travel
from the Cornudas to
San Carlos till
St Louis Chicago
New York and so
on and preserves its
veterance over so great
a distance but we
should form a very

1317
very inadequate
conception of the emerge
of the storm if we
thought that its sound
was heard that distance
off of course it did
cause extraordinary run
such similar to the eruption
of Krakatoa but so far the
noise is what happened
at Chatterbox Boulder
and other places the
special feature of the
the which must
systems violence which
also being all kind
of debris so far and
under and much wreckage
of towns go into all
towns and many dead
and injured all.
Though all also caused
an wave of an
intensity unparalleled

in the records of 1318
tornado action of which
I believe no other tornado
did produce and it is
thought then was due to
the situation of the moving
storm whirling at a
bremerdown speed for anyone
comprehension and an
possible inflow through
the atmosphere the result
being the sudden pro-
duction of too much
whirling speed unlike any
ordinary tornado of such
width, could this too
disturb the delicate
suspended magnetic needles
common in the live
two count and good -
etc. Survey observations
at Charleston M.D. and
at Baldwin at Kan. and
other places that reach

is hard to say and less 1319
is no evidence or proof
yet it has been proved
by evidence which cannot
be doubted that the nose
of great Swallow Pie
actually rotated windon
as far as St. Louis. The
ray marks of Mississippi
vessels during the oncoming
movement of Swallow Pie
reported that the d. the
line about a far as
Davenport or Moline
saw the mouthheads and
yard arm of the
ship. A glow with strong
electric fire. Such
effects seemed to the
easily explain cable wires
we consider how
enormous must be
friction going on in
the air through the
wild clank of all sorts

of debris whirled 1320
against each other with
unimaginable violence. It
was adequate to produce
a wide spread electric
disturbance in the surround-
ing atmosphere. The sound
in swells of the wind
within the funnel would
also contribute to these
disturbances. It was said
because of these strange
disturbances the compasses
of passing ships were
much disturbed. So
could this also have
had such effects upon
the magnetic needle
in the observatory.
Probably but not confirmed.
And yet the wind
swells of magnetic
oxide of iron from the
beach ground of earth
(magnets) consisting
of all sorts of ground and

gravel and small stones. 1321
possibly had some some
share in creating these
strange further balloons.
So large such the present
cloud of the lightning that
profound darkness which
lasted many hours
extended to over 150
miles from the focus of
the disturbance. This
in the record among
others that it was
pitch dark at Chicago
at 6 o'clock in the
evening of that August
15th. To what might
have caused the needles
to remain as the
disturbance feature
of the display of suns
fire power with the
magnets and range
of the explosive sound

sounds and conformation 1327
of sounds the Mayor
of Chicago nearly four
miles distance of 30
dolls and still further
from Duval's Pier re-
ported that on the afternoon
of August 1st at around
seven o'clock the reports
and conformation of the
combination of sounds were
simply deafening. What
caused such a noise, the
speed of the wheel on
the inside revolution
motion of all the wreckage
Even all barometers
at all the principal
cities of the country
automatically recorded
the effect of the first
great noise from
Duval's Pier
Burrbury of Chicago

and Cairo and after 1337
violence of the air waves
and also the return
waves the first four
on all sides left less
more not short or upward
of 240 bars gamma
the first and next
or several in New
York and at Baltimore
the distance of a
several was contained
established could be what
of Duval's Pier caused
the immense aerial
undulation and could it
effect also the magnetic
needles any one of the
ruined Kansas Railroad
the disturbance of the
magnetic needles of the
Observatories.
yet was there such an

unfortunate fellow 1334
as I'm Bellman are
claimed 'I here I am for
the second time reason
the destruction of my im-
posed magnetic model
of which I cannot
understand and from
which in the present
case I am a sufferer
and all this has come about
simply first because of
the explosion of Fort
Pelle and now because
of the storm called
Suevic Psa and what of
the elements of the
Atmosphere is a suspicious
disturbance?
I will see what
I can make of it when
I think I over I said.
As my explanation
before helps nothing.

of course as it 1336.
stands it is unnatural
and probable that it
would be solved at
once had it not been
for Suevic Psa awful
more and the supposition
excited by it that there
was also a magnetic
disturbance under atmosphere
of unusual violence I
shall be able partly
to dispose of that for I
am able to swear that
there also was an unusual
friction in the air more
over I shall be able
to prove that the
reason you gave was
that the Mt Pelle
disturbance and the one
of Suevic Psa seem
to be the same is a

was a true one 1337 1337
and although I cannot
swear not less that I
expected any other sort
of phenomena the fact
that the symptoms of
Mr. Pales and Swallow
Pae was the same cannot
but confirm your
statement I shall get
leave for two or three
days and will hunt up
the locality where Swallow
Pae so suddenly went
unaccountably wild."

I thank you very much.
Tillman said it is because
by some who confirm
the awful suddenness
of the great catastrophe
was caused by some
kind of change in

gas within the storm 1338
producing the great
unmeasurable atmospheric
pressure which overwhelmed
every before it as the storm
left such a foul smell
in its wake. It is now
the unanimous opinion
of the scientists that
the was an explosive
cyclone the scientists
compare the storm out
known to the storm of a
boiler in which the
pressure was so burst
my friend Henry
Gough James told me
that nobles, a very
violent accident of needles
of the Barometer in the
room he hurried with
his family to the
sault of Chesham House
or soon before the
disaster.

Here is some proof 1339
that Swales is not just
some sort of attraction
like the whirlpool off
Sofeder Norway. Albert
Eleanor's position of
the Sagar is real and
five miles south of
Charlestown which is
valued 1700 yards
south of the Good
Heart Coast Leveller.
He was in a field
on the side when
he heard a mad and
inordinately more mad
or inordinately than anything
anything he ever heard
in his life. It seemed
like a hurricane coming
and went. He saw but
the really was no
wind just pressure
like an had been

been reborn as if 1344-34-
something under pressure
at him although the
sun was obscured by
strange dark cloudiness
at the same time
that he heard the sound
to feel a tremendous
vortex of air which he
attributed to an eye from
main sailing part of
relation. Immediately he
saw trees though charged.
There was no wind
in a space 11000 yards
long, and 100 yards
wide. He rushed to the
ground and then fell
forward by a strange
unseen force.
Then he saw a
long long convulsed
cloud stretch into the
upper cloud in a
ridiculous way towards Charlestown.

As the cloud traveled 1441
he heard an awful 1441
unbelievably deafening roar
as if all the flesh of
the whole world was one
together was falling a
breathless moment
Some sort of a 1 after
in the landscape pre-
sented him seeing what
was happening at
Chesham. Also it got
too dark. He ran to
his house for his
family. Hence he rushed
to the southern part of
his plantation. But the
awful disaster as he did
not come near his
place though he re-
luctantly in the air took
all his windows. The
noise of it was like
Sivak's P. had given
no warning of the

awful destruction that 1442
was to come.
I said Ben Sagan and Roger
I too had a fantastic
experience. It was a little
before 7:35 P.M. not far
what am on that fatal day
when the end came for
Chesham. I too was in
one of my fields or my
plantation when suddenly
he can not be described in
words almost like the ground
beneath us as suddenly
as though a terrible
struggle was going on in
the atmosphere and the
city was full of strange
electric buzzing and
hissing sound not from ground.
A lance came upon me
as at a distance I heard
a terrible noise which
no language can describe
and I actually felt the
shock of the blow through
my whole body as if I had

angle at first 1443
could not explain
my fear. It was gentle
gusting and unusual
big drops of rain became
apparent. As I stood still
not at all the very atmosphere
seemed to shudder and a
murmuring sound issued.
Actually, in the air almost
drowned by that approaching
awful noise. It got
much darker there was
a smell of sulphur and
some kind of gas not as
in the air though the
air was dead calm.
About me I felt strangely
by way to find at one
with some unknown force
and lots of loose objects
objects without there being
even the slightest breeze
began to run toward
the storm in the strangest

manner that occurred 1445
no more.
Branches of trees tried to
shield out winds in storm.
Then toward Chatterhouse
there was a momentary
uproar that never before
had I heard. It was deafening
and the flash of lightning
that accompanied it was
blinding. No so than an
lightning. I have never
seen. The loudness of the
thunder however seems as
it was was almost drowned
out by the uproar of
the storm. Then the point
of Chatterhouse first school
seemed to turn into
clouds of debris with fright-
ful convulsions and
almost disappear at the
time the uproar was
much redoubled and
shocking, added to the
in the noise of the debris.

So now was 1447
like the end of the world
and when a fraction of a
second before there had
been a perfect calm and calm
I felt my self drawn
into a strange vortex
without wind and I had to
brace myself firmly
against a big tree. It
was like a great express
train rushing by and
I was almost drawn by
the strange force though
I held onto the tree as
firmly as I could. The
strange mysterious windless
force leveled a
row of strong trees
leaving them up first
by the roots and then
pulling them toward
the storm leaving a
space of ground seven

1448
thousand yards wide
and more than twice
that in length. Every
inch of ground grassy
and brush followed
I transferred I stood not
knowing in what way to
go the strange full
refusing to let me even
move from the tree. I
looked toward Chatterbox
and across the city there
appeared a great wide long
strange formed cloud
that was in awful
unimaginable and convul-
sive fury which reached
high up the air and down
to the level of the ground
to have seemed more
than the width of the
city which seemed to
disappear into swirling
scattered clouds before it

I moved slowly 1449
but rapid with a rapidity
that made it impossible
for anything to escape it.
From the strange cloud
came explosive roar
and humming like thunder
that sounded as though
all of the masses of the
world were in intense
combat in that one
spot. As the hooded cloud
began to pass beyond
where I stood the strange
phenomenon of things being
pulled toward it began
to stand clear and their
shape. Lightning played
in and out in broad
lens and fork shapes
the result being that
the low intense darkness
that rapidly set in
was followed by light
that seemed to be of

magnifying power 1500
I could not hear the sounds
because of the roar of the
storm. That Chamberlain
was doomed? I knew but I
was prevented from seeing
all the destruction by the
sudden intense darkness
that set in not out
that shut off not on the
view of the overwhelmed
all. For me to tell
how long I stood there
is impossible. Probably
it was only a few
seconds but no mind
was my impression
and hence that it now
seems as though I
had the eyes and was
trembling all over
And it also seems as if
I stood there as a spectator
for the many minutes
it was so dark not heard

15:01
Lately we could not
see each other ten feet
away even after my
feelings were never before
known by any one at that
horrid moment of the passing
of that yelling hell as I
was retreating from head
to foot not feet 7 ft 7
inches at that moment
the most violent fit of
the anger I would not be
astonished I know what
that passing hellstorm
meant well enough
The storm was tearing
up magnificent Chester
brown and nothing could
save it. At first I
thought it
will sweep off the
path and miss Chester
brown but in the
next moment as the
hellish storm exploded
in the face I covered

15:00
myself for being so
great a fool as to dream
of hope at all, I know
very well what Chesterton
was doomed and all the
buildings were much
longer, I now made
one or two attempts to
speak to my nearest
neighbor standing near me
also watching the woman
unlike her but in
some manner though the
fueled phenomena stopped
as she was going onward
and which I cannot under-
stand the den had no
increased that I could not
make him hear me
although I screamed and
yelled at the top of
my voice in his ear.
Another thing I could not
explain that was awful.

1501

There was an awful
 shock in the air that I
 could not explain and
 make electrical distur-
 bance too. But that we
 are attempted to exclude
 me. Presently the
 shock in the air looking a
 pale as death and as if
 to say later held up
 one of his fingers. The
 were not now looking
 the horror and the whirl
 of the air storm was in
 its fullest fury.

At the same time the strange
 roaring noise in the
 atmosphere was completely
 drowned out in a kind
 of shrill shriek such a
 sound as you might
 imagine given out by the
 water pipes of many
 thousand steam vessels

1502

steam vessels
 letting off their steam
 all together with which
 the distant ocean steam
 vessels seemed to say floods
 into the roar of many
 thousands of cannon at
 once. And a wind in
 their blew it is fully
 to attempt - describing
 I don't believe the oldest
 man in the country never
 experienced anything like
 it. It must have been
 the most horrible
 squall that all the world
 will never forget
 for such a wind never
 came out of the heavens
 before. Then I could see
 by an unusual blindness
 lightning that my
 estate was in the path
 of sudden no covered
 possession of my name

and saw 1. my 190
house and on June 11 1903
as possible collected the
members of my family
all of whom were panic
stricken I turned left
for the southward where
we got out of the path.
Several times there is a
war for a surprise. The
Pelle in the date of
destruction there two indeed
you as a man have been
the most destructive
1. life and property
of known volcanic
explosion and of the most
cyclonic type of wind
yet the Volcano in Pelle
fell for a short of
Several times in the
miserable results the
distant effects of Several
times or floors from were
remarkable for the
strong magnetic shocks

shocks the concussions 15.04
of the air and whole
atmosphere reached to an
unprecedented distance.
and the clouds of fire
flung down encircled
the volcano and fire flared
over the whole producing
striking phenomena of which
no one could give an
account. The of course could
have been the cause
of the running of the
magnetic needles of the
Observations. The usual
rapidly with which the
effects of the several
the fire made itself
evident in all parts of
the United States up
no also in all parts
of the world in particular
the most remarkable
outcome of the extraordinary
event of the changes
result of the changes

atmospheric 1505-
waves caused by
the disturbance of the
atmosphere which effected
the barometer over not
only the country but over
the entire world, & the
too may have caused the
run of the magnetic
needle. The day after
the storm and after the
atmospheric waves had
drawn around the
world or for some
across the United States
from South Sea the
barometer was well
affected by the storm
the forming of South Sea
the storm to have
been due to some
deep lying cause in
the rear of the first
thunderstorm deep lying
cause of extraordinary
violence the effect being
not only in the force
that tore up the mightiest

the mightiest buildings 1506
ever constructed and
short magnetic needles in
the run and also
which tore the whole
city of Charleston to
fragments and sent the
remnants in scattered
debris all over the country
but also from an
internal atmospheric
convulsion that effected
the atmosphere every where
and ~~and~~ and caused the
forming of many rain
and thunderstorms all over
the country, the unequal
heat had been at
~~and~~ and were fed
and terrible and it was
so dark during the
onward progress of the
storm no one actually
knew as what was
taking place and the

darkness buffed
as observation 71 1507

is said that as far
as the storm traveled
an electrical storm
had raged. Electric
discharges of terrific
force had been almost
continuous and it was feared
that an explosion
would occur among the
hundreds of tons of high
explosives stored back
of what was left of the
city of Charleston

71 on the distance that
the United States Coast
Guard Service in
could understand how
Luceau Pao could be
offed the delicate
suspended magnetic needle
so violently as to swing
clear

71 therefore
clear is something
strange in the phenomenon

by the small round 1508
lightning were the received

71 is said and further
during the continuing
progress of Luceau Pao
an immense fire fire
near the upper part of
the funnel and another
on simultaneous down
at the lower extremity
followed in all the
way. Also another great
fire the same size as
the middle of the storm
path passed over the
United States from

Birmingham to
New York and yet as
far as Rome Italy.
71 low three balls which
was estimated to have
had a diameter of much
more than a mile
was supposed to have

150-7
The crazy old
Quintie the poor high
was also nearly in-
variable for the strange
and yet electric phenomena
which he used freely
produced so much in the
atmosphere - The weather
very violent thunderstorm
with a cloudburst of
rain and big hot fog
that was frequent
or comparatively of the
insane. But owing to
the change downward
motion of the current of
air and upward motion
which produced a
so sudden and violent
that the greatest
quantities of electricity
in the air of was
developed. Thunderstorms
throughout the country
everywhere accompanied

1510-7
of electrical origin
and due to the high
state of electric tension
in the atmosphere at that
time. So maybe the
-100 could have caused the
violent magnetic disturbances
disturbances of the needles
in the observations?
The said Garret
Graham not recorded them
I saw that strange
phenomenon too of the
attraction caused in the
storm. I was sitting
on my porch during the
sudden coming darkness
and soon of the passing
storm when a strange
loud noise was heard in
the forest. The branch
flew off in the air
the trees and would
beard the character of

the storm on 15/1
in panic and large
branches of trees snapped
off and followed toward
Saville Pass. Striker was
torn up from the ground
and followed round all
the way the effect of
Saville Pass dangerous
attraction traveling through
space from southwest
to northeast the whole
affair lasted only a few
minutes in the strange
phenomenon stopped as
suddenly as it had been
disturbed with Saville
Pass passing on. I was
almost pulled toward the
but grabbed hold of a
front post the car was
common after of course
about the matter and almost
the sudden for the sudden

upon the storm 15/2
then just witnessed
and often maintained
that there must have
been an unusual atmospheric
disturbance of this kind
was never seen before
among any storm before
some of the destruction
that an unusual disaster
to the land and not land
land as suddenly near
much as learned in the
district for the knowledge
of all kinds of storms
even tornadoes would be
to describe that nothing
like this was ever
seen in his life and
wife before though he
had witnessed quite
a number of cyclones
and even more violent
hurricanes. Everyone about
us had the storm to

15/3
all not yell and
while the party was
still in a commotion
a terrible noise like
howling of wolves or
a humming sound came
or louder than the loudest
thunder added with a
conglomeration of all sound
caused by rattlings and
flying clouds of wreckage
which drowned out the
commotion completely. To my
opinion a million horns
called the Indians all
put. I guess could not
make the awful noise
and the air shook as
strong as an earthquake
from the concussion
and vibration. At first
the strange atmosphere
shock was felt to
be rising up and
loud after a few
seconds they became

15/4
transformed into violent
undulation becoming
northward. Even the
water strangely undulated
like the surface of a stormy
sea and the trees were
strangely and violently
pulled forward towards the
upstream and so violently
that the largest branches
came in contact with
the ground or limbs
and sailed off in the
direction of the storm
or drifted off and
sailed away northeast-
ward. We were able
to follow with some
increasing interest the
rapid phases of the
disturbance when a
strange and alarming
phenomenon attracted
our notice. Our
attention was called to
said James Graham

15/5
to a terrible
commotion in the direction
of West Chester
but I cannot express
what I saw then. I was
too dazed and I did not
know if I was awake or
if I was in a nightmare
when I was in the
world of reality or in the
world of hellish spirit.

I was a place of very
bright lightning the thunder
could be heard because
the awful deafening deaf
ening uproar in immense
column in brightest con-
fusion. Pure clouds
of debris in all directions.

Suddenly the
lower part of the column
seemed to disintegrate
in awful confusion
explosive roar. I
did not feel where we was

where we were 15/6
but we could not
restrain a cry of surprise
and horror as we saw
masses of food without
grain and fish and other
vegetables be torn up
by the roots and be
hurled towards the pavilion
horror. I and my own
companions tried to
probably be hurled off
that way and forever
had we not been
standing firm against
the strong sailing of
the force which success-
fully resisted the strong
warrior's force.

I saw all that would
out at first thinking
of our own fate and
I think that the greatness
of the force which
threw the whole

country before us 15-17
made me indifferent
as to the fate of myself
and my companions
In any case when I
saw my fellow man
companion near corner
off I remained indifferent
and it was only after
two days of my following
had had narrow escapes
narrow escapes that I
succeeded in shaking off
my opathy and going to
their rescue. When I
started for the second
the passing horror
we saw all the country
which we had passed
unsought too been laid
waste by the storm
awful attraction of
mine we were only a
few hundred yards away
from the passing hurricane
One high tide

the region which 15-18
reached the whole
struggle of the awful
attraction was no
longer I identified
as the same corner as
it was with desire
of all kinds things less
by the passing storm?
never what to see anything
like that again. God
forbid! Dr. O. R.
Croat a professor in
the University
studied of all life of
Ireland. But he too
can't explain. "Sweetie Pie?"
over I have been thinking
said. Tell me declare
though I have been reading
everything and
and cannot see that
the evidence is all there

statements will help 15/9
no more what was the
death cloud that destroyed
St Pierre. That affected
our magnetic needles so
much and so long?
and also from Sweden
Ple that was much
worse yet seems to be
the same thing in the Bell
Ple death cloud?
don't believe any scientist
or professor all over the
world could help me
much I will sample
from that all the
happened and Sweden
Ple went from Buenos
Aires and through
Cherbourg and also
Atlanta that terrible
afternoon of August 15th
but will not show
in any way while
the phenomena went as far

as I can tell as one of 15/9
the agent of disaster who
breaks all records on
whether the airplane
blew to pieces at that
distance.

They can probably
know that you looked
pale and exhausted after
seeing what Sweden Ple
did to your instruments.

If "Well I said 'help
if you courage in
Tallman you may be
quite sure that even
I would be professor
and also you friends
will do all in their
power for your recovery
of the loss of your
instruments."

Yes Tallman did
agree I'm hoping so

but afraid it cannot 1520
else so then loss is total
and very difficult to
replace. Financial means
won't do it. No amount
will. It is to get the new
needles manufactured and it
take a long time. I can't
see how the return on
ever but I also could do
it and so far away.
I somehow I can't take
it so heart so much
I shall feel it more
afterwards perhaps but at
present the whole situation
is so terribly ex-
traordinary that I can't
handle it. I make
myself believe that
this instrument could
ever be in danger of
such a catastrophe. I then

I do worry of it 1521
is that even if we
do receive financial aid
lot of people will think
that our observations will
never recover. There is
one thing that can really
prove the recovery of the
can after all be restored
to their furnishings.

I then I said that the
Government at Washington
was try to do some
how Court during any
really Government property
which I can
can believe the causes
of the awful disturbance
of the magnetic needle
is not not get hot it
is quite evident that
that has an distur-
bance in Sweden's
war concerned in it

strange affair then 1522

theory is of course that
the awful uproar of the
storm was the cause
over everything else and
so the instruments on the
observers at once got that knock
out of which which
shock was a very severe
one. I went down some
days ago to Southwest
of Bunny-bury with a
number of scientists
on storm the then

1. see the spot where it
suddenly went crazy and
produced those first
magnetic shock and the
way to see where Bunny-
bury was first assaulted,
I found great stretches
of long rail beds and
low away lines and
tracks which at that
spot seemed very unusual

and that of course 1523
up ground all wharf
being torn up and many
killed of farm animals.
also what goes to
show and prove that
you are in true but
unfortunate. Let also not
save the magnetic needles
because according to the
theory against Sweet's
when she assaulted Bunny-
bury she had such
demagnetization which electric
atmosphere disturbance
on the more side after
she hit the big tower
on wall as before!!
But in that case!!

Mr. Tullman said when
showed the cloud that
destroyed Mrs. Pella
caused such a disturbed
effect to the needles
aside from their usual

direction and lasting 15.24
many hours or also
Suebs Pae. during the same
but such violence as
to disable them and in
total case no possibility
for away. That is sure
on the head of them
That magnetic needle one
should have registered
earthquake not volcanic
eruption and to say
storm such as far
away?

That question is very
difficult to answer I
say As you say the
magnetic disturbance
at Chatham Observatory
at a time correspond-
ing to 5.53 Burns
bury time and the
Baldwin Observatory
at 7.53 Charleston
time. I know that the

I know the delicate apparatus
so installed at 15.5-
observations and so
arranged that the
minute variations they can
on an supposed to be
automatically photograph
mean of the minute
variations in the direction
and intensity of the
earth's magnetic force
a matter of fact that
no seismological or
barometrical reports
no earthquakes but still
the instrument was
so violently disturbed
But then on the other
hand why was the
cloud of Mt. Pelee
and the small Pae
to take the trouble
to do the same thing

but with destruction 1557
power either by the uproar
the magnetic storm after
disturbance or the exchange
violent air waves

In the three cases the
ammonia could be the
same I did it
from more shock
atmospheric waves or
magnetic electrical
disturbance of the most
violent kind it is all
three ways you see

Yes Mr Tillman
agrees I am afraid
and I own myself that
the Mr Paley and
the Swales are
business in very much
against the storm and
I cannot blame any
one who considers the
quickness in running the needles

The strange phenomena 1558
of Swales are not all
with the next case to the
later at the assizes that
afternoon not golden spoon
and same did occur
on unusual amount of
interest in that point as
So I shall partly what
occurred at the Swales
the nature of the
occurrence and as
which opinion was a
good deal divided on
the three supposed to
be cause

In a certain way there
could be no evidence
over the situation and
unfortunate to do all
the it proved the storm
was most noticeable
on unusual reserves and

and everyone from the 1359
first offense to the
against Bullets One Mr
Tallman not alone was
closely questioned by the
President of the meeting
not alone as to the dis-
turbance of the needles
in the observation in
the was considered to
show a particularly sort of
strange phenomenon to
again repeated his connection
of what happened in
that strange affair
But what reason
have you Mr Tallman
the President asked for
saying that the first
awful occurrence to the
needles was caused by the
eruption of Mt Pele in
1902
I then was just a
question that would
make Professor somewhat

indignant and defiant - 1576
and yet which he 1560
could answer with perfect
satisfaction though
particularly irritating
one because I had
often been triumphant
asked by other professors
and - students.

I can assure you
not give any particular
reason - he said except
that on reflection
though I am the Chief
Superintendent of the
United States Coast
and Geodetic Survey
I am only its Chief
employee and do not
own it. It is owned
by the United States
Government at Wash-
ington. I have no control

and Godelle on 156
very obstructive. He
was situated at Cheltenham

And he was at
Baldwin and under
two different Superin-
tendents and I'm not the
head of the one at
Baldwin. I'm on of
the coast survey and
the Government and I
not. It is an reflection
that I had to report
the action of the delegate
suspended Mayrle
Madden. What I would
do any good for the
Government Authorities
or not. And from
both of Pierre on
C. Lewis. But the
character of both commu-
nities. What if they could
not have done or
act what did?

1562
In fact the
President said surely
you could have been
influenced by your own
way of comparing the
action of the Madden
the school in the an-
other the eruption of
Pelle or. I would put
the. I'll make in then
is laying aside a
conditions which the facts
had at the time
forced upon that you
that the an answer
on the abnormal
disturbance electric
disturbance had
nothing to do with it.
I'm that light with
could look upon it. In
Tillman replied.

consider that in the 15/3
first place on evidence
that the an waves
did not do it - and it
is most weird to believe
the magnetic electric
disturbance in the revolution
storm or aftermath had
anything to do with it
It would be picking very
hanker and unattractive
to think so and on
in consideration I am
sure that what in the
an rather from Mr
Pellee or Swedish Pile
had done so"

I am afraid said
the president that you
will not persuade any
one here to agree
with you. It seems
you are defendants
the three opponent causes"

I can help that 14/4
to arranged The price
causes didn't tell me what
they did"
I have only one or
two questions to ask you?"
I said when I rose to
cross-examine for which
your audience is on?
What was the number
of the machine used
on your allegation that you
are somewhat in favor
of Swedish Pile in the
first place do you remember
the less real exact
than that Mr Pellee
affected the magnetic
needles?"

The reports were
that it occurred at
seven fifty five
at P. 1000 and 1000
more than twenty
four hours.

out side of that 1575
I know nothing. Mr
Tallman replied certainly
in the course of that
awful disaster it could
never be otherwise.

"But it is 6000 in
more than four thousand
miles away from the
United States coast and
geologic survey" said,
how could it have
been possible. And yet
the Baldwin observation
much still further away,
so what does that mean?"

That is something
I do not know, I did
not make the report.
The report was made
to me. Tallman replied.
The report came from
Washington to me but
also I saw the disturbance.

of the magnetic needles 1576
not better. Certainly
in the course of such
a disturbance the
distinct magnetic effect
pulled the needles aside
from their usual direction
and started many houses.
It did no earthquake.
was reported and it would
be impossible to
regulate it otherwise. Certainly
it could not have
been by an violent
earthquake in that direction
from which reports came.
Else the earthquake was
not preceded by an
earthquake. It could not
not possible. However
does so beyond that
it might have been
some awful explosion
which in the air.

and also it could not 1577
have possibly done so
without exciting attention
and remarks. I believe
it was caused by a
small violent shock in the
air? not then

There was a prophecy
on the slope of the Bible
who owned so stable
small upland Durand?
I read of that in one
of the obscure books.
He became an observer
the cloud rising high in
the air and from it
came a noise as if all
the flesh of all the nations
were forming a howling
at that spot in all
one time.

That does not explain
it. I also said, such
the effects of that noise could
not be felt more than

from the same place 1578
yet something was wrong
to effect the magnetic
needle that far what
could it be. No
magnetic disturbance
was even felt that far
due to more suspicion
before or even later
recognized at magnetic
observations or any mech.
anical vibrations for they
could only be observed
in rooms by narrow
earthquakes and only then
have been registered
by the delicate pendulum
magnetic needles.
An April 18 earthquake
was recorded by
~~some~~ ~~some~~

seismographs at various
places
and also at the coast
and in magnetic

Observations of Leo

1519

Count Survey, I then
saw quite a rumble
caused a mechanical
vibration of the magnetic
needles about their mean
position of rest and lasted
they say only one half
an hour. whereas on 1
read the disturbance
of May 8 was an awful
distinct magnetic effect
of so violent a kind
that the pulled the
needles for many hours
aside from their usual
direction. But still I can't
believe the move in
the course the fluctuations
own reported could
have had that effect.
I must have been the
victim in Leo as at the time
he closed up for good at St Pierre.

But Sumner Pease 1520
pulled down loose alloy the
said Tellman "Contains"
in the course from Burn
bury I. Jones and
much further the effect
on Leo grew as worse
and worse and finally
they were disassembled
lowered. Indeed it did
seem impossible but
seeing in behaviour.

However the strange
mystery would remain
clear. Certainly something
was much worse in
Sumner Pease than the
band of Pease. Though
it was never clear.
Certainly it did not
stretch the steel a
it passed on under
Chesapeake or sailed
through Chesapeake it

not have possibly 1521
done so without someone
was in morning Genevieve
without exciting attention
and unusual remarks.
Yet something was decidedly
wrong with that
awful storm.

The storm would
therefore Mr. Tallman
have no means of
possessing anything else
beside the electric alarm
for the disturbance, the
air was influence or
shock in the air accord
ing to your knowledge
as to the internal
arrangements of the
storm box and that pos-
sessed by the most
immenseable whirling
speed? and good deal.

None whatever. 1521
Mr. Tallman replied and
said:

I now as to that un-
fortunate running of the
electric magnetic needles.
Your opinion as to
either one of the three
causes of terrestrial
Pole change phenomenon
is that matter is not
a record one and the
course of the way the
needles was affected.

Not all Mr. Tallman
said I could not
change my opinion
after the affair of Realer
I do not know exactly
what was the cause.
There had not been
any great quake.
Didn't any surman

of or within of 1522
the St Pierre house must
on there was any shock
in the air? asked
Donald Curran.

Yes indeed I remembered
that some survivors of
the wreck ships in
the harbor. He said
there was some kind of
shock that made the men
and the whole ship
to quiver violently at
the time the cloud
struck and enveloped
it and was inferior

I don't think the
could have been
provided shock of a
similar kind but for
much violent said
Bar Dorian.

- But how could that
affect the magnetic
needle? I asked.

That really is ~~1523/1524~~
the real question 1564
said Carl Haley. What
do you think of the
matter.

"I would rather not
give my opinion and
I don't say any one of
the three causes are
really wrong. except
that I think not at all
some of the situation
too much as a matter
of course. Now I have
seen a great deal of the
matter concerning the
destruction of the Palace.

St Pierre. According to
captain I remember of the
ship Goddam the anchor
did not come from the
summit but from the
fast above the upper part
of St Pierre. He been

of course of course 1555
in a sort of shock in the
an anolea reason for
ambles ship too and of
cremation electrical
disturbance in the air that
frightened all survivors
and that cloud that swept
morning of May 8. 7
had a great liking for
reading of that catastrophe
but I do not believe
it had anything to do
with the frenzied action
of the magnetic needles
of course the disturbance
did come from something
in the cloud but what?
In my part I have
seen a great deal of
Olo H. Nelson Super
Intendant of the United
States Coast and
Geodetic Survey.
not say I have a
great liking for him

and believe him 1556
be not one a singular
unintelligent Scientist of
the Observatory Survey
and hard working man
not fearing fear but a perfect
and after one I allow
that the circumstances
are most very much
against Swells Pele or
those three causes but
the evidence is too in
my mind completely
contrabanded by the loss
harm of the mariners
of the United States
Coast and Geodetic
Survey. How could either
the consequence of the
Pele or even Swells
Pele rock so down for
also is surely something
else that did it. Of course
there was no earthquake
anywhere. You must

remember that 1557
even Mr Tullman saw
that all were quite
convinced of Swede Pae
guilt and that in our
eyes any one should
would only be a great
aggravation of his offense
of Swede Pae & therefore
you see no one has
any strong motive whether
Swede Pae did it or not
and no one has any
strong motive in his
defense for telling a
lie. What caused the
phenomenon? I do not at
all know. What caused
these two phenomena
? no one knows
but from my knowledge
of law and of Swede
Pae unusually violent
character and also
his assurance of

Mr Tullman and of 1558
his truthfulness some
thing is wrong. I am
perfectly convinced that
Swede Pae did not do it
directly but something in
the magnetic conditions of
the atmosphere in the main
upper cloud. It is in some
way very safe
even to all the landers.
I know Mr Tullman
has a good refinement
and he is in a great
position as a chief wharf
superintendent of the
United States Coast Guard
etc. Survey and the
matters who is still
living in a different
class altogether. He is
the warrior who many
the words of other
scientific men. The
superintendent has a
certain refinement

about a certain 1559
refinement about her
thoughtfulness and
consideration which sets
her apart from all the
others. The man has a
good heart as well as
a very good intellect
and nothing else
full proof would make
me believe that Swales
Pee caused the strange
phenomena."

But the headmaster
at Washington said it
occurred and reported it
to Superintendent Tullman.
Mr. Manley argued
in defense of his
own opinion.

They said so often
not having been at the time
the phenomenon occurred
and was so strange
and also of the very

serious consequences 1600
and I think probably
they meant no more than
a man who under the
some circumstance would
say "I'm the shock in
the air or too much
electricity in the system."

All this time Mr. Tullman
was an silent for when
in a mystery he with
himself gives to me
strong impressions.

I don't know what to
say Mr. Danga. He said
to me at least I'm
afraid somehow or other old
Swales Pee has made
big mess of it but
certainly as I find found
it he can't seem
to admit of no doubt
For my word I don't
know what to do. I
will wait that down return

had never come 1601/155
into existence. Even all 10
Lee horses from Mt Palu
can match was as done
my wife I am just been
up to see Mrs Whitman
and Lee woman blazed
out about Sweetie Pie
and gave notice that
she wouldn't stand for such
storm again. If it had
not been for that I
might have done something
and my wife was very
much aggrieved over Lee
phenomenon. Altogether
is one of his most
annoying things. I even
had to do with and
make no almost worst
I had never become the
superintendent of the United
States Court Goodbye
Court Survey Sweetie Pie

has ruined everything 1602
all over the whole United
States. Yet I do not believe
fully that Lee storm
did all that myself
Lee idea appears prepos-
terous. I would never
stay however in any
location where there are such
storms after everyone
nearly believing Sweetie
Pie guilty of causing such
phenomenon and mainly
not believing Lee report
when Lee Court Survey
men at Washington
said Mt Palu had
nothing to do with it as
there was not any more
active. Lee should have
known Mt Palu better
than that. And I
myself don't believe
Sweetie Pie had anything

to do with it either. 1603
I wish there was some
thing wrong in the atmosphere,"

For some reason or
other I think the elements
was too harsh in Tellman
I said: But you see
no one did know
Sweetie Pie as many did
not even I and I think
if you will excuse my
saying so Sweetie Pie
has been harsh too
only Heaven knows what
was wrong with her.

Another Scientist came in
to tell me about it and
I could see he was
not satisfied in his
mind. Even before
I gave him my
positive opinion that
old Sweetie Pie not good

might not have 1605
caused the three phenomena
on and off. I think
if you have not given
thought at Washington the
notes about the so rapidly
the would have later
back then words and
said that at any rate
as less was nothing
absolutely proved then
would hold their judgement
in suspense until
the matter was cleared up."

And having everyone
pointing their fingers at
our Coast Survey
Observation and Sweetie
Pie got the best of us
in the meantime. No hand
you in danger that
would not do for me
no one was a bit
harsh.

I quite understand 1604
your feelings Mr Tallman
I said, and I have
no doubt I should have
acted as you did if my
most delicate magnetic
needle had been ruined
in the same way. I still
think it is a pity for
if Swales Pae had not
come into existence
there would have been more
chance of the machine
being cleaned up. You
have found machines
else that would throw
any light not but on
that often Mr Danger?
No and I don't suppose
I shall ever shall. Have
you any opinion about
it? not take a shot.
My opinion is that
of Swales Pae himself.

Mr Tallman said, 1605
Many believe the
Almafar above her did
it who had a electric
disturbance it or perhaps
to what the whole ele-
ments in a crazy manner.
However who could
throw suspicion upon
her? not me.
What on what could
an accident such a thing?
I asked

Well there was one
unusually strong tornado
somewhere in March 1913
of the year. That was
the Omaha tornado. It
was a monstrous a
very severe one and had
plenty of magnetic and
electrical disturbance
it also. Of course
no one has any shadow

of evidence that 1606
that it was the tornado
but the storm nearly had
the same force of destructive
power and storm and the
wealth all over our country
has been our worst enemy
even since that affair
of breaking all records
of also found produc-
ing in our eastern section
the worst flood in
history which never in
undated plantation
water and others. before
I came to be surprised
and of this Coast Survey,
for much rain you
did it but allowed
the poor east to be
furnished for the supposed
to be offered by such
awful floods and the
built would not have

six months will not 1999
solve the mystery and
will not try it even if
it kills her and then
she has all sorts of
ideas in her head about
the crazy and often
astonishing freaks of old
Jewelle Pie, Plowman?
I hope that in two or
three days time I shall
be able to find the
truth of its real char-
acter and that she will
help me solve the strange
mystery.

Now, Mr. Jones said
on October 7 I was not
born a storm scientist
or studied to be one
I have learned much
there magnified words
nearly all my days
and I will die there.

I am not going. 2000
I am transp. over the
United States to try to
relieve the outlandish my-
story I could not do it. I am
no scientist Mr. Aurand
was grand its cruel of
him to ask me it.

Mr. Aurand, not brand
was silent for several
minutes. He saw that
Farmer Jones mind was
most firmly made up
not down and he could
not deny the force of
his reasoning. Farmer
Jones was usually adamant
in everything right or wrong.

It was true that many
people not church people
still considered him
guilty of the exaggeration

of his storm duration 2001
It was true that
the story might crop up
again years on and
even his life it did
seem that he had things
he could do was to
find means to the to
furnish the proof.

Swedes P. was not flumm
really the were life
and worse than your
fancy Mr. Brewer

He said at least
we do have trouble
with solving some of
the forecast nature
certainly but in town
not on the path of
the outlandish storm
there should be many
witnesses and from them

help you would 2002
have no more trouble
than they had here of
come were of all the dead
sle among the most
seriously injured in an
crashing and the number
of dead is still not
counted. It is unestimated
No doubt you will do
very good on your farm
as the verdict was in
your favor as to you
show there is a good
deal of force in what
you say and that until
more proof is given you
may not be followed
by the unbelievers
you could well often
recall your savaged
part of the woods some

way with lots of 2003
new trees. Your neighbor
will help you soon and
I have no doubt
he and your husband
and often will do well
with the clearing up and
reforesting. If that cannot
be done let the down
up path be changed
into some kind of mag
nificent road not too far
I think when the time comes
you want change your
mind about it and I
have no doubt he
would do well
in the reconstruction
of the woods or make
a splendid road not good
though the destroyed.

fall. And he 2004
your husband grown sons
and your grand father
and the best workman
in the territory and on
your own son farmer
Gore says can turn
their hands to almost
anything. Sabre and deep
is not scarce out here
and on the way got their
heads screwed on the right
way not to talk of Hay" I
have no doubt that
either have grown been
and a road constructed
through the forest".
I didn't expect this
of you Mr. Ainsworth
Mrs. Jones not telephone
said beginning to

to cry. not perhaps to fear 2005
I thought thought you
would have taken my
part not heart and now
you stand right against
me? not against you,
not at all against you
Mrs. Jones "for I think
that your son plan is
best - let rest to you all.
He cannot but suffer
if he lets his ruined
section of the woods go
to mangle or without
attention and you four
will be unhappy in
seeing him suffer great
as he has through
that section of the wood
in I believe you all
could more happen to

have a most magnificent²⁰⁰⁶
but private road can
constructed constructed
through the devastated
area without you seeing
in failure and seeing
him in constant trouble
and worry in not
having it done at
any rate replacing it
can be still better
but is more costly than
the construction of the
road. And would take
a long stretch of years
to accomplish. For my
part I'm for the road.
And at any rate
you would have the
option if you found
life intolerable
without such a
magnificent road But

How do you think 2007
I intend to get the road
constructed "Mr Gona"
he asked seeing that
Mr Gona made no answer
but again relaxed into
tears "not tears."

I'm financially well
off to work a private
road through the devastated
path "for Mr Gona replied
I can here may be
do the work of clearing
and then road construction
And how we are rich
farmer and I furnish
between we do construct
the road. Replacing the
trees is impossible"

The Honored Convent
my another I am
maternal, Sorry

it has to be well-²⁰⁰⁸
interesting or not

The next session was
how the convent so
powerful a building was
so awfully wiped out
on 10th. There were
again three Assembly
magistrates on the main
table the following
morning when this new
and strange subject
was brought up. The
Assembly Hall big as
it was still more
crowded and all the
former who had
directed the convent
construction
and paper telling
what the convent

was constructed of ²⁰⁰⁹
were there and the
manager of the building
from where the construction
was planned for the
mystery of its peculiar
destruction and the dis-
appearance of everyone
with the upper part of
the building excepting
just a few. Many claim its
superior and little
Tribunal had caused
very unusual excitement
and the news that all
the people who had
lived on in the
building were still
camped outside of Chin
Carboner waiting for
news for good news
had created quite a

sensation sympathy 2000
and some grief on behalf
of all those unfortunate
people

Mr. Ellison the main
head farmer was the
first to give his evidence

He testified that on
the work of construction
everything was used
and transported from
7 some Germany Austria
and even from Russia.

He was not in the
habit of neglecting
any of the work when
which even progressed
at night with the

help of strong lights.
The flooring was con-
structed of three inch
check strong fly wood

and strong fly wood 2011
beams.

What do you estimate
the value of the material
to construct the building
Mr. Ellison? He questioned
after Mr. Ellison named
everything including the
material now used
for the making of the 45
foot slanting roof.

The value of two
hundred and fifty million
dollars which includes
the three million dollars
dollar for the chapel
windows.

Another farmer proved
of the construction of
the big handsome
roof. That there had
been no custom to
put shingles on the

2012
sides of the leg
handson. Convert window
Presently when it was
discovered what had happened
the constable from the
hall had been placed
in charge of the convert
window and order to
admit no one who has
no authority and a
man on an auto had
been sent to Davenport
to the Chief Constable,
The village constable
gave evidence as to
the state of the
convert when under
construction when he
was also put in charge
of the work. The
constable testified to
the manner of the
work and which the

2013
construction had gone
to work and which the
roof and roof had been
put up and material
used and the construction
of the window powerfully
built roof and roof showed
that it was the work of
of extremely practiced
hands

Another foreman proved
the construction of the
roof. The Chief Con-
stable then read the
statement that the
laboring men had
made out to him
upon making inquiries
they found that even
experienced men of
Chesham also helped
in the construction
The men identified some

2014
of Lee left over material
from which the roof had
been constructed. On
looking at them, Justice
Tangy Chan said at
once "I say the material
was all right."

The magistrate con-
ferred together for a
few minutes in an
undertone.

Mr. Ellison, the counsel
of Chan, said "I would
like ask you how it was
you saw at once you
connected the way of
the construction of that
immense roof?"

"Because I was the main
former foreman of the
workers and knew what
to bring and have
put up. I had very

2015
and unusually experienced
men employed assisting
the construction of the
roof. Everything that
was completely done
you know I showed you
the design on paper what
was used in the con-
struction." He added to
me:

There was a deep silence
in the assembly when
Mr. Ellison had given
and shown his evidence
by the paper. Herbert
the interpreter had
been somewhat un-
available about the roof
construction. His descrip-
tion though strange
had by no means
been impossible and

2016
if true would
have accounted for the
strange strong construction
of the convent roof
which was the only evidence
of its unusual
construction. Nothing
could alter the complac-
ence of the case. Again the
magnitude considered
together.

My Elder in your
former statement you
said nothing in any
way how the interior
portion of the roof was
constructed. It seems in
a way a sort of
exaggeration of the strength
of the roof but it
now seems you have
had a previous acquaintance

2017
with the work will you
tell the Assembly what
it is.

It would take your time
too much for all
I would have to say.
The foreman said
handling the heavy
magnitude the foreman
proportion. All my workmen
was the most intelligent
construction engineers
they gave every satisfac-
tion. These are older.

inspectors who will give
the roof the highest
strongest character for
strength and weight
and they knew and
saw how it was
constructed and the
material used. The con-
vent was made two

2018
block long, five
and a half inches high
the roof of court five
shall height above the
fifty story window and
and as wide as the
building was 100 feet.
My present employer
Mr Perfold of Perfold
building construction
company is also I
believe ready to testify
to the excellent and
powerful constructor
during the twenty years
of the Convent building.
I suppose Mr Per-
fold or the master
servitor magistrate
said "you have not
at any time since
the construction of the
roof itself obtained

2819
any actual evidence
which would show that
you were mistaken
in your first view
and that your subsequent
refusal to change your
opinion was due solely
to your general view
of the strength of the
roof construction as
far as you knew it."
That is so "as far
as I ascertained and no
further questioning being
asked he resumed
his seat. It is evidence
that caused immense
surprise and interest
in the assembly hall
I was clear from the
evidence of the plans
on the construction

paper produced 2020
which made some
difference in opinion about
the work. After some
consultation the magistrates
said

The mystery in case
will have to be
reopened until after
day week to see if
further evidence is forthcoming - but I may have to
say that under the present
circumstances
of this case we shall
feel ourselves obliged
to send it for trial.

In the opinion of
all his construction
work from the time the
work began up to that
of the finishing it
may be true but
so far as it is

entirely supportable 2021
It shows that on the other
hand we are more
satisfied the evidence
that we firmly believe
from the strength of the
building and of its
immeasurably strongly built
roof. Swell P. is
could not have been
a regular tornado. Not
even the strongest ordinary
tornado could move so
that we have the
for further evidence and
important fact that
he knew the work
and much knowledge
of the construction of
the premises and such
of Swell P. was
a mile and more than
a half wide was a
tornado then for Swell P.

2022

safe here was decidedly
 wrong with her which
 I cannot explain, was
 she just such a
 wide forward moving
 immense atmospheric
 explosion over all the
 upper part of the build-
 ing floor made
 of fly wood gone. Some-
 day the reason the lower
 part of the building
 was spared is because
 building across Webster
 street blocked off the
 wind from the lower
 part. That is not so.
 The building were west
 of the convent. The
 convent got the blow
 on its southwestern corner
 not on its side yet

as I said then had 2023
 surely been something
 decidedly wrong with the
 Sweetie Pie. That the
 strongest Tornado ever
 known could have done
 that is so powerful
 a built building some-
 thing was actually
 wrong with Sweetie Pie
 and there is reason for
 the belief that Sweetie
 Pie was some immense
 atmospheric explosion of
 wind. Otherwise fellow
 members what could
 it have been an
 explosion of that part
 of the corner that is
 we have the further
 important fact that
 Sweetie Pie is dis-
 out of the belly of

the main cloud 2024
not out cloud upon the island
scops a little beyond the
wood and had it may
be supposed bunched
off from the west side
of Gleason City. It was
said that before that
the did not run on a
straight course and had
also done so often that
Gleason Asylum would
have been missed.

Something went wrong
after that and so soon
ran a straight course
across the whole of the
and they say all
the way across the
ocean and ended out
two two towns in
Southern England with

a loss of 2000 lives 2025
He lay himself somewhere
in the North Sea not
along the line. There is one
woman who had been
formerly employed in
straight Northern Gleason
air and had it may be
supposed some knowledge
of the premises. He had
taken the picture of
the bursting cloud-belly
and went round it
to the press or nobody
rightfully or wrongly
wrongfully and there
is reason for the belief
that had he given up
the magazine we
could have solved the
mystery why several
Pae 'banned' into the.

mad frightened
by some one to traverse
this country". 2026

Will it be of any use
of my calling evidence
as to character at the
time it exploded at
the Sacred Heart Convent
and the Angel Guardian
Orphanage. Reuben asked

"No the magistrate
said 'evidence of that
kind will weigh out
the next session
when the matter of what
kind of storm it really
was will be there.
Coughly replied 'We
only have to decide
that there is prima
facie evidence connecting
Swamp Fire with being
such an awful explosion

storm and of that 2027
there can be no doubt.
No one believes it was
a regular tornado. It
might have been some
awful explosion of the
atmosphere. "

But your honor in
regard to width of the
storm and the unusual
length of the storm
I cannot see how this
could have been ascertained
at all inside
the immediate vicinity
within the storm. Some
claim by chance the
funnel though nearly two
miles wide was four or
fifteen long."
"Yes," suppose said the
magistrate but the
four or five miles must
have reference only

2028
to portions of Lee
whirling channel from
its parent cloud
close upon both sides
of its cragged path
either of its outer ragon
ed or of its explosive
center. The depth in the
center of the cyclone
must probably be
immensely greater to
have such an explosion
around itself as that and
no better proof of the
fact is necessary than
can be obtained from
what it did to or
nighly a convent build
ing on Lee nearly equal
as strong a building as
the Angel Guardian
Orphanage and it appeared to
me a self evident

2028
thing that ever
as large as buildings
as there being in the
path of that deadly
swirl. One could resist
it as little as Lee did
and like Lee upper part
of the convent or the
Orphanage and must disfigure
brutally and at once like
Lee did. Many strangled
1. dead children were
found wedged to the
broken branches of what
little was left of the
playground of Lee or
the orphanage. It is
impossible to attempt
to account for this
awful phenomenon for all
it did including 1.
those strangled children

2029
found in what
was left of the shelter
was in a very different
and yet unsatisfactory
aspect. The idea generally
believed is that there
as well as the smaller
vortices among the storm
had no other cause
than the collision of
air waves within the
main cloud above
and probably had no
other cause other than
than the collision of
awfully strong air
waves rising and
falling into the bosom
of the chief formed
cloud like a flux
and reflux of the
superior whirlwind against
other currents of down
and upward currents

2030
currents of air which
tried to confine the whirl
within the cloud chief
body itself so that
the raging funnel pro-
bably coming from the
open mouth first went
down through the chest
and then precipitated
chief like a frozen
and then the higher
the upward currents of
air rose the deeper was
the fall to be and
the unnatural unnatural
result of all is a
whirlpool of wind in
vortex the destructive
predominant force of which
burst through the walls
of that cloud like a
mighty volcanic ex-
plosion and then became

as we know the 2031
source of all annihilation
So we all believe
Quaker Pie was some
immeasurable ex factor of
downward wind in the
air

At the sitting not sitting
two days later no
free evidence was
produced and Quaker
Pie matter was com-
mited for trial at the
next assembly Hall
meeting not being Public
openor in So Salle
nor high on the subject
of Quaker Pie was im-
measurable force to
destroy such buildings
and what is recall
a real tornado on the
explosion of the 11.000000

all the workmen 2032
and building construct
on was strongly in
favoring the material
used to erect the convent
and also the Angel
Guardian Orphanage, the
foreman was very popular
among the employees
and they pointed out
that many construction
and building engineers
had been concerned
in the business that
every kind of stone
building material came
from other countries
and the foreman had
connection with the
best intelligent workmen
that ever could be
obtained They had gone
about such a job like

Chat. Lison Lee 2033
then hand also
opinion in general not
strongly against Sweater
Paul 7th had seemed
utterly improbable for
any storm to have such
explosive blasting force
and a storm which
had once burst from
a ~~cloud~~ child cloud
belly would be likely
at any time or future
a few minutes later
to go wild from
there or from the
belly which blew her
or out as to the
allusion declaration
of her subsequent
opinion that the storm
was really a north
two or three mile wide
immense as an explosion

2034
lot of weight was
attached to it Every one
that Sweater was
the most savage cyclone
ever formed and as the
Election the foreman told
of the strong materials
used to build the con
vent and as he acknow
ledged the himself
that he had plenty of
evidence as to how it was
constructed and no way to
satisfy him and the
construction engineers
and he had never done
any of the inspection
afterwards wrongly
it was clear that it
was from more
intelligence and adamant
stubbornness to his work
and that he had never
changed his mind on

2035

the way of the construction
and erected at that
time the most stringent
and magnificent
magnificent structure in
the world, at so small
but brilliant the
subject was on every
tongue and many debated
the fellow who had taken
the picture of the building
in fiction and would not
reveal it. They took the
matter to Court Court but
it was explained it was
his property and because
no one has a right to
force him to reveal it
against his will, the
ordinary account of the
immense overly strong
strong vortex had
by no means trespass
any one for what
immeasurable honor

2036

was so suddenly to
come at the Convent and
of course too that of the
unusual destruction of so
might a building or the
two neighbors the Orythian
and the St. Dennis
building at the same
time which was the most
circumstantial of any
unbelievable honor
cannot impart the
faintest conception
either of the strange
magnificence or of the
greatest honor of the
scene or of the world
bewildering sense of the
destruction also of all
the most magnificent
magnificent magnificent
view of the Orythian
Playground whose remains
the branch was

2037
so strange wind
around the bunch of children
wedged between beam on
to kill them by strange
and awful strangulation
All then confounded
and frightened all the
holders - who could even
imagine such a cyclone
as that with so many
yet deadly freaks - I
am not so sure I can
say from what point
of view the witness
in question surveyed
the strange scene of
dead strangled children
strangled in branch
na at what time
where pictures were
taken of the scene
by camera men but I
could neither from the

2038
dangerous ruin of the
Convent na on Hatched
Street across the street
from the Asylum. There
are some passages of the
description of the horrid
scene and photographs
made nevertheless which
may be copied or
again photographed but
their effects effect
is exceedingly feeble
of conveying an im-
pression of the most
grievous spectacle.
Emily Swetie Poe
had done her horrible
work well, actually
perfect. She should have
been called perfect
method of Swetie Poe.
The way the convent
is now less all known

It is dangerous to 2038
come within one hundred
and fifty feet of it
Water & calm witnesses
say the storm crashed
through the terraces like
a twelve foot wide
unmeasurable forward
moving explosion as if
from thousands of tons
of high explosives at
once and the roar of its
mass impact upon flying
rocks many almost dead
six miles away
and the roar could
even be scarcely
equalled by the loudest
thunder ever heard
though as steady as a
terrific undulating hum
most from the noise
then being heard as
far as I could tell and the

the workers in 2039
fell away. such an
extent and crushing
fury that the three
buildings mentioned were
invariably absorbed
into nothingness even
living children were
and all scattered to
the four winds with
such fury as to absolutely
or it believed actually
vanished into nothingness
such a storm how
could it be? But many
actual witnesses to it
than any other storm
could never be found
and those who were
claimed it got too dark
to really see what was
going on. At So-Sall
no witnesses could be
obtained as they were not

They were not in 2040
Chenierbrown at the time of
the unmeasurable Sweetie
Pie word explosion,
So the subject was
never mentioned.

The following morning
Dorothy Gale herself
went down to my Relief
Committee headquarters.

"Mr Dargen also said
when she was admitted
by the guard who knew
her well not well 'could
you have time for two
or three minutes?'"

want particularly to
speak not deal to you
Have you heard what
took place yesterday
in the Assembly Hall?
she asked when she
looked her seat middeadbeat.

"Yes Mrs Gale not whole
I saw how the constable

last night and to 2047
told me all that had
been said in the Assembly
Hall" not outcall.
"And you think Sweetie
Pie was really that
immeasurably strong?" she
asked eagerly.

"I am positively sure
of it Mrs Gale not right
you as sure as I am
my own experience
of any building that
was so strongly built
could not withso with
stand her blow that
everyone knows who
knew the storm as
many did and what
she did to have a
doubt is absolutely
assured a fierce storm
thar that it would be
hard not hard to
imagine."
But what did the

mogashos say? 2042
How did he account for
the storm to the so
improbable thing and
what he
I repeated the account the
same magnitude but
given and said not to
be for the meeting come
off I shall of course go
over and conduct it
personally on the head
of the meeting not at all
and leaflets both as to
the general topic first
and that to be felt
that Swales has had
as he said to him a
fine too strong for any
ordinary tornado.
Do you think Swales
has can be proven
so strong in danger?
He said only slowly.

also said account 2043
I should hope no man
gave not that but I can't
disguise from myself that
it is by no means
certain, I feel unfortunate
old Swales about the
awful destruction of the
big convent and the
two other immense houses
which with the annihilation
of the immense wall
left terribly against old
Swales has and though I
am perfectly sure that
my relation account
of how strongly the house
very was constructed
is correct I am in
nothing to confirm it
after what the awful
storm did. It is just
the sort of story they
used say that Swales

he would naturally 20
set up to account for
the impossible strength
and for only two stories
of the immense convent
left and to look like an
immense ship wreck from
a distance. Of course I
the Assembly know the
nature of the storm as
Swales says and indeed
don't see how he would
be certain but I have
been trying to look at
the fact as if it
was a corner to the
Omaha tornado of
Easter Sunday March
23 and I can't say
what decision I should
come to in such a
case. Still of to
come to high character
that was the given to

and the fact that 2044
there is evidence of such
destruction. What can
nothing do in any way
with such mindless
unmitigated force must
count immense against
him. There was decidedly
something radically wrong
with him to have
such ungovernable force
it was the most barbarous
barbaric storm that ever
came into existence.
What was wrong with
him might have been
caused by the blow from
off Glasgow city. Nothing
else could account for
it. There is plenty
of evidence connection
of him with that sort
of occurrence here that
too many count immense
against him and Glasgow is

also "blamed" 2045
 The Assembly was to
 take place only a fortnight
 after the date of the
 Puer committee. Mr
 Anglin had engaged
 a high school school
 scientist from New
 York to
 try help funding what
 Swette P. really was
 and to the surprise of
 that gentle man not long
 Mr. Ellsworth Lee Chief
 foreman called upon
 him not long
 next day full of hay
 and said not bad
 Mr. Andersonville
 I hear that you have
 been engaged by
 Mr. Anglin to find
 out whether or not
 Swette P. was a real

was really a 2046
 tornado or some strange
 horror that came down
 out of the sky. I
 don't believe it was a
 tornado either and therefore
 I authorize you not just
 to spend any sum that
 may be necessary in
 getting up the bill in
 the matter and I wish
 you to understand also
 scientific and unscientific
 to appear on the matter
 for all the work we
 did to construct such a
 building of the consent
 and costs I really
 feel terrible insulted
 by Swette P. for what
 he did. Of course
 for some reason I
 cannot appear openly

on the matter 2047
 seems to Ladd and my
 name must not mention
 but I will guarantee
 all expenses. It
 seems to me that it
 would be desirable to
 find out on what
 part of the territory could
 work of the Johnston
 work of possible the
 great explosion of the
 cloud being occurred
 I am sure about the
 according to witness
 of the law will permit
 of the force the man
 who took the picture to
 surrender it to the
 in the army however
 he said he did not
 know the man
 of the village where
 it appeared above the

ground not having 2048
 but on the way July 2048
 I was about twenty
 miles from the Johnston
 town which belongs
 to James Jones and he
 could describe the road
 he followed before the
 crazy phenomenon occurred
 Lee ought to be not
 diffident in finding
 it. I should advise you
 to have a shot not just
 with Strawberry Harrison
 the landing inspector
 at Johnston town. He
 is a great friend of
 the Mayor whose place
 was not in the path
 he is a man sort
 of scientist and also
 professor of very
 intelligent man

2049
 may be able to point
 suggest some points
 to the fact that you
 can do all you
 can to see whether Swale
 was really a tornado
 or what a real one
 could do what else
 did to see my intended
 work. I firmly believe the
 general earthquake could
 not have ruined the
 convent. So if possible
 follow the mystery up
 and try to find out
 what Swale is really
 was. Do all you can."
 "Was there even
 such an unfortunate
 eruption as the convent
 was said Reuben
 Whelby. Here the
 house devastation is
 observed at a safe distance

2050
 and such a
 scene of which no one
 could believe and from
 which indeed in the
 present case all the
 country is a sufferer
 and all the has come
 about simply because
 Swale Pie went out of
 the way to destroy
 the best place in
 the world with her
 unknown explosive
 force."
 "If you really know
 anything about it tell
 me all about it," said
 "We want to solve
 this tremendous
 mystery of the convent
 angel guardian of the house"

2051
 and the St. Dennis
 building tower
 I have heard the state
 ment you made to
 the Chief Constable
 but I need to hear of
 it myself you was
 on the spot at the storm
 and while you were
 under that the passage
 way you too lived you
 watch by it and claimed
 also I started three
 minutes and found
 five records tell me
 every detail you can
 think of Did it go
 through the park like
 the mightiest wind ever
 thought of or an an
 awful forward explosion?
 "It seemed like both"

2052
 said Reuben
 "Will tell it to me
 again," said with every
 detail you can think
 of. So one circumstance
 which appears to you
 almost unbelievable
 may furnish a clue
 whether the really was
 a tornado or something
 much more terrible."
 "I have seen the
 lawyer I have told
 him all that happened
 Reuben said but of
 course I will gladly tell
 you again."
 And Reuben did
 repeat to me the
 story of the adventure
 in the underground and
 how one there under
 these escape while

2052
 and the real wave
 swept away with even
 things in the park.
 He told it with even
 detail he could remember.
 He about the storm
 telling how savage it
 was like an immense
 explosion of blue smoke
 and fairly few seconds
 passing through the park
 speaking slowly as if
 words it down at length.
 I will see as what
 can make of it when
 when I think it over
 I said, I of course as
 it stands I was
 abroad and unusual
 yet probably that
 I did clean out such
 a park in such a
 short time again I
 say it is no un-
 natural that it would

have cleared out the 2053
 whole park at once which
 proves it more that it
 horrible force of the
 rotating the convent before
 it could have reached the
 park. I he could do previous
 even had it been
 the unfortunate convent
 business before it struck
 the park and the ship.
 position as cited by it
 that Sweet's Pie
 sagged through the park
 without losing the
 slightest part. It did
 seem that all nature
 had an awful hostility
 for us. I hope I shall
 be able to dispose of
 that for I can see as
 that many for fragments
 of Sweet's Pie as

2054
 something more horrible
 than an ordinary tornado
 and that although you
 regarded the monster as
 which you cannot describe
 the in being so near
 your life and yet you feel
 no way to prove whether
 it was a real tornado
 or some horrible
 wind monster from the
 uttermost depths of
 hell. More over I shall
 be able to prove that
 the monster so many
 children of the Ophiomachs
 so horrible forced the
 reason you gave was all
 awful panic among them
 and that the children
 could not control them
 was a true one and although

2055
 that the monster
 the storm took away so
 much of the upper part
 of the convent was a true
 phenomena of the most
 unusual kind although
 I cannot have a white
 sea was a wide sea
 fever of nature means
 unstable wind or a tornado
 gone out of its bounds
 but I expect it
 especially on that awful
 afternoon that there was
 something radically wrong
 with the world somehow
 to locate any descrip-
 tion of the monster
 fury. In traveling
 forward as I have said
 tornadoes usually do
 not have a swifter
 movement or in

also towards the 2056,
hazy on an angle of
fourth five degrees.
Sweetie Pie did which was
very unusual and all
also acted like the awful
modulation off S of D
which tornadoes do not
do at all. I had when
some thought she might
have a reflex and
flux of air. Maybe so.
I had got leaves
of a lawn or three days
and had hunted up
the village where that
man took the photograph
of the ex-fear of
the heavy cloud but
the other shock of fear
and the village is no
more.

I had you very much?

know it though forgot 2057
to mention it. Remember
said though I have
been thinking it over
very much and do not
see that the evidence
of the people who might
have witnessed it, or
floating cloud belts would
help us very much.
So surely was no order
any tornado and something
radically wrong was
wrong with her. It will
simply prove that all
passed through Charleston
like the moving ex-
position of hundreds of
tons of dynamite at
one long forward rush
but will not show
in any way whether it
was really a tornado

in some awful 2058
storm from the latest
region as far as that
on when the atmosphere of
the other continents blew
to pieces all the way to
New Jersey. The actual
disturbances were
welling up as far as that
as one of the worst
cyclone like storms
we have ever seen
one in which some
thing wrong in the
atmosphere threw her at
us.

They can probably
prove that the other
had looked very suspicious
from close to the rear of
the thunderstorm."

And:

I fancy the rear of
the thunderstorm looked

had gone through 2069
something unusual through
such an afternoon were
as that of leaving up
the whole country side,
I do not believe it
came from the rear of
the thunderstorm but
from between or some
had said.

Well we will have
to keep up our courage
Ruben. The sweetie
Pie Lorna mystery is
something very difficult
to deal with. You may
be sure quite sure
that the President and
Professor will do all
in their power for
the incident I had
gone over to them a
chat not afraid with

Yes my mother said 28-5-9
at way "surprised in any 203-9
way" Reuben said "I
I had gone through
such a horrible formation
and do such a
horrible afternoon work
as that of writing out
our form, over Ottawa
I got it bad and
so did Hubbard Woods"
And also I'm afraid so
Some how I don't see why
I should take it to
heart much. No one
knows what Sweetie Pie
really was I shall find
it and feel it more
afterwards perhaps but at
present the whole thing
seems so very unusual
or extraordinary that I
can't quite realize
that Sweetie Pie was

2060
actually a real cyclone
Cyclone are men that
tough I do worry of it
it is that if Sweetie
Pie after all turns out
to have been a tornado
of most extraordinary
strength and force lots of
people will still think
that she was some other
kind of unspeakable
force and that she was
guilty of an unearthly
force not even seen or
seen until before then
I only one thing that
can really prove that
she was only a tornado
and is the follow her
course by auto or for
as she crossed the country,
I hear I said that
the chief constables of
even town in the very

Corrigan had written up 2061
to all - a number of 50
Galle for Corrigan to find
to find the runners on
the trace of the track
not lost and find what
is really was by
investigation the nature
of the delusion. Whether they
believe it was a Connors
or some horror from
Anales would be quite
evident that most that
one strange power of
force was concerned in
the murderous annihilating
officer. Then the way of
course that also
can amount within
one for bouncing
off Gleason city over
the deflection of the
course and got that
change in course which
was a severe one.

I went down 2062
to the Corrigan beyond
Gleason as soon as I
heard of the strange the
nomine with ~~scandal~~
scandalish to see the of it
of that city from which
something had so myster-
iously turned it aside.
I could not ever learn that
that could have been done
to the Corran. Then we
fledly of under controlled
region where it first
assailed Gleason City
but I could not make
out when she had
deflected but I do see
region that Sweetie
Pie had radically
changed the course
and wiped out the
Gleason Arlyum all

of which goes to 2063
from that Lee alone
of many witnesses may who
was but unfortunate
do it doesn't prove that
it was because according
to the theory against
Sweetie Pie she might
not have seen or a
stranger found before her
that she might have
been assaulted by some
anonymous disturbance
after she hit Gleason Hall
as well as before it and
that was made - her
seem to bounce away
? I might have been
assaulted by the strange
anonymous disturbance
near Gleason after it
hit the city as well
as before it.

'But in that case' O'Leary

asked - why should 2064
Sweetie Pie have taken
Lee trouble not soap bubbles
to make Lee suffer part of
the convent and all the
monks seem to convert
into them and many
of the children of the
Orphanage and the St
Dennis building at the
same time?"

'Yes there is of course
that question that God
not unlike and can really
answer I said thought
fully 'but then on the
other hand why did it
take Lee trouble to
do the same to the
Gleason Asylum and
the Long Charlesworth
Supermarket building?'

In four cases 2005
Leo answered I believe
could be the same Leo
etern did it because I
suppose they might have
less of a target to
the supernatural forces
and force they didn't
mean anything. I can
four ways you see.

So it does Reuben
assembled not report it. It
just a question of belief
which is to be refuted
that Leo was something
radically wrong with
himself. He was not and
I am myself that old
panic business was
very much against that
in Leo after growth of
the Angel Guardian Ophiomach

and that I can blame 2066
anyone who consider
some one was guilty of
a fatal blunder there.
I believe Leo was ~~not~~
no one who who could
prevent giving some
kind of alarm there.
until Leo could do shield
over could also have
gotten into the deep loss
ment of the now shattered
building also about the
attendants. They say
panic got hold of many
of them too over includ
ing Leo mum and
~~nurses~~ nurses. They
did not know what to
do I suppose even
of the consequences
to themselves and
Leo did not risk Leo
our chances to save Leo

children ever though 2067
afterwards they all also
furnished with the next
I own myself that that
old game business was
very much against them
all and therefore they
failed to save the children
and also themselves and
the school but the English
somewhat worse than it
did the convent?

Reuben was the next
person to be taken at
the Assembly arising
and occasioned a good
deal of interest
in all the balls
partly owing to the
knowledge of all persons
by Reuben partly to
the nature of the defense
of Sweet Pea and of

as to which opinion 2068
was a good deal divided

The evidence for the
prosecution against Sweet
Pea was to a great deal
or at least similar to that
given at the inquiry
before the Assembly of the
Magistrates. Unfortunately
from cruel Sweet Pea

Reuben was not only
a severe judge against
him and his friends from
the first appeared to be
severely against the
school. Mr. Elson the chief
not now but was very
closely questioned by the
head of the Assembly
and that was one of
I as to whether he
could say Sweet Pea

was actually a storm. 2069
not tornado or something
windsy winds from the
Infernal Region or some
or storm phenomena from
the Atmosphere, as this was
considered to show a
particular phenomenon
on the part of Sweetie
Pie not did he again
repeated his conviction
of Sweetie Pie could not
have really been a
storm what form in the
offair He said:

Of course the strange
aircraft uncouth spinning
phenomenon existed in
a sort of awful revolution
around of much more
than a mile in diameter
if it really was so
I cannot understand how
this immense column

of the whirling 2070
storm could be inclined to
the steep horizon of an
angle of fairly fine
minutes which it is recorded
no twister had even done.
That too is a strange
phenomenon I know any
tornado will spin dizzily
around and around and
but how could it have
a swaying and sweltering
motion when it is said
only a whirlpool of
water could do that? If
that was so then there
surely is something
positively strange and
marvelous about Sweetie
Pie phenomenon. Only a
whirlpool of water like
the one off S. of Soda called
The O. makes storm
it has a swaying

major and inclined 2070
ward the horizon at an
~~45 degrees~~ angle of
fourty five degrees. If
it happened really then
what caused Sweetie Pie
to do that according to
witnesses the strange
account of the roller had
never prepared me for
what I read and heard.
If so it was some really
remarkable phenomenon
almost impossible to explain.
Unusual a real wonder
does not inspire, suggest
away or swell at least
none was seen to do so.
So there was something
remarkably very queer
about Sweetie Pie yet
many witness claim
the most circumstantial
of the phenomena yet

2072
this strange phenomenon
no one of the horror
or magnificence of the
scene can be conceived
or of the world bewildering
my sense of the strange
phenomenon of the freakish
revolution which con-
founded all beholders -
I myself am not sure
from what point of
view the witnesses
claim they observed the
strange phenomenon
in question and the
testimony of others who
surveyed it not at what
time but it could
neither been from the
top of the washer
cable hill top before
it hit there nor during
the time it passed the

the northwest part 2072
of So. Island. There are
some passes of the description
in the book the So
Island and the Gleason's
newspaper mentioned,
which may be quoted
for their details although
their effects is exceedingly
feeble in conveying
an impression of the
spectacle as the phenomena
of that kind was
exceedingly unusual and
exemplary. And I believe
that between the two
thunderstorms the lightning
del. lightning the depth of
the superheated air
far above was unknown
but on the other side
where the rear part of
the passing first thunderstorm
was in Johnston's woods

the depth of 2073
created no air not to
afford a constant con-
venient upward passage
of the heated summer
August air without the
risk of a severe downward
passage of cold air which
happens in all thunder
storms, the more the
is likely the more severe
and violent the thunder
storm and the more
cloud bursts it has.

When it is wind-horn
the disturbances round here
run through the territory
between the two storms
with a mail boat over
the water and the roar of
the contest over squall
downward toward the
ground not heard was
scarce equalled

by the student 2074
of a dozen Loricidan fish
together in one. The noise
being heard many miles
off and the waves
or swell was of such
an extent and width
that anything in its path
was inevitably absorbed
and disappeared into
the air. When Sweetie
Pie became mad bolder
over and her fury
much heightened by the
strange bouncing off
Gleason's Ark not even
the Gleason Argyleum
could stand before it
and it was dangerous
to anything to be within
6 miles away on either
side of it. It seems
no one could or can
attempt to account for

The strange phenomena 2075
of Sweetie Pie In regard
to the swaying swelling
motion of the storm?
never can we know when
could have been ascertained
at all in the rocks
or only the water of a
whirlpool does that sort
of motion. The strange
strange swaying motion
of Sweetie Pie must
have reference only to
some unknown motion of
the unusually swift whirl
of the terrible Loricidan
close up within its center
which made its force
of strength and unmanageable
fury immeasurably
greater and no better
proof of this fact is
necessary at all.

2076

than can be obtained
 from what it did to the
 content the exchange the
 supermarket the winter
 building and so on which
 from that the strongest
 building ever erected
 in the path of that death
 horn could resist it.
 more that more dust
 and must disappear broken
 and at once, it is
 said in which
 caused such an attract
 ion toward it while
 approaching that seven
 look yachts and
 nine ships had been
 carried away toward it
 by not guarding
 against it before
 they were within its
 reach I will

2077

confess my inability
 to comprehend it and
 had rather surprised
 many to hear me say
 that although her un-
 common strength and
 invulnerable fury was
 the view of many
 who survived her and
 the almost universal
 view of what they say
 it was and entertainer
 of the subject in many
 scientists it neverthe-
 less is not my own
 One thing I can say.
 however because of
 what happened at the
 four immense structures
 and also what I believe
 the is guilty of an
 immeasurable not awful

This was on a day 2078
massacre of the affair and
one that can never
be comprehended.

But what reason - hence
you Mr Ellison Lee
Council itself asked for
saying you cannot
comprehend whether I would
be was some storm
of a supernatural source.

This was just Lee
question which Lee of our
man could not answer
satisfactorily and was
a particularly irritating
one because it had
often been triumphantly
asked by his wife.

It can really give me
particular reason except
what we used to make

such strong evidence 2079
he said and except
that on reflection Lee
buildings previous strength
from Lee unusual materials
we used and how it
was constructed con-
vinced me that I thought
no tornado of any kind
could have done such
an astonishing thing.

In fact not only each
Lee Council said savagely
swavely you were in-
fluenced by all the
building material you
used and by your
goodness of heart
of Lee work Mr Ellison
in thus laying aside
a conviction which
the fact had at Lee
come forced upon you

of the buildings

2080

marvelous strength of

"I can't look upon it
in that light" Lee
former an almost angelic
replied and very shortly
you will know that I'm
Lee Chief ~~eng~~ construction
engineer of the erection of
the convent, I supervised
the construction and
therefore I consider that
in the final instance
we used the mat
of former building mat-
erial that could be
obtained and on con-
sideration I saw that
I had done so. I never
thought a storm could
do what it did - even
though it was twelve
strong tornadoes in one."

I'm afraid Mr 2081

Editor Lee counsel said
that you will not be
able to persuade the
Assembly to believe most
of what you told about
twelve tornadoes in one.
I don't give a damn
if they don't be believed
if you think I'm telling
a falsehood or exaggeration
then just questioning
me. I did not come
here to be unveiled
Mr Counsel but to testify
how the convent was
constructed. Say something
like that again and
I'll punch you in the
eye more than I have
on every such an
event before happened
before in the eyes of

moral man or else 2081
such as no man seen
to help of and therefore
out building construction
is even responsible
for I have told you
everything I know how
we builded the corner
and you not only do not
believe it or to expect
you to just make fault
or than if I was the
biggest liar know I tell
you I won't take such an
outrage."

"We were not disputing
about your construction"
said the Council. "It
about twelve tornados
in one line here
Pee did not have such
force"

I know nothing about

the fact" said 2082
I was talking about like
twelve tornados, in one
and I'll stick to it
no matter what you do
or say so there, want
to make anything out
of it"

"I'm sure nothing to
get mad about" said
the Council.

"It is too and I won't
take it back under
any condition

"I have only one or
two questions to ask you"
Peebun said to try to
end the dispute as
he arose to cross ex-
amine for indeed
your evidence is I
think the assembly
will agree altogether
in if even if all your

construction 2083
-engineers In the
first place were your
-employers when is your
employment actually
erected such a roof as
Lee converted brushed
of?

Very much that I
know of "Lee foreman
replied "The most ex-
pensive part of the
-brushing Certainly in
the course of the dubien
they never blundered
a thing. Indeed it
would it never was
was accomplished with
out much difficult
work and no one
could had done any
blundering without
extending attention and

remarks It was 2084
Lee best construction
work in the world that
magnificent and powerfully
built roof Really I
could not see or imagine
how Lee alone did it"

Sweetie Pie would
therefore Mr Ellison
have no reason to muse
any part of Lee should
ing or of your possessing
any knowledge as to
Lee internal arrangements
of such a roof
being and that possessed
by all the other
construction and brushers?"

"Now whatever" Mr
Ellison replied
now as that report
was off as of Lee storm

bursting upon Lee 2084
convert like a mile
wide atmospheric explosion.
"your opinion as to the
strength of Swales Pie

in that matter now
the weather is not a
recent one not too out
come of what it could
do so sudden and
unexpectedly?"

"not at all" Mr. Ellison
said "I cannot change
my opinion on the
matter after the affair."
"I firmly believe

Swales Pie had the
force of a hurricane
tornado in one no
matter what any one
says" and he looked
very severely at
the Council.

"Within a few hours

"I think I may 2084
say the Council
will

"Within a very few
few minutes I may
be able to say, within a few
seconds the Chief fore
man still looking dejected
at the Council while
first questioned him

"The story of the So. Ball
frank told to all who
read about it that being
believed Swales Pie
was something out of
the way to be a
tornado and that the
convert was wiped out
by something more
unusual and exceedingly
too fierce to be a
regular tornado struck me
not on the nose, as being

very much like 2085-
something very much
more prof & probable
that it came out of the
infernal regions and
being most probable
than that it shot out
of heaven itself."

Annabelle Anna
-bell Rooney was
next called to
evidence as how the
train missed her and
the beam or eleven other
engines was a more
repetition of that given
by the news that the
storm tore away leaves
of some streams and
caused bad floods
near equal to the
Dwyler horror 2-20

council then turned 2086
to the question of how
they felt on reading
the news of the horrible
calamity.
"I can hardly say anything
about it Annabelle said
very sadly Every one in
the Convent and even
in the Orphan and Deaf
building was French
and the other loved
so dearly. The news
frustrated us and made
us for a time nervous.
Well so therefore it
is still a matter which
has been productive
of much sorrow and
pain for me and I
would rather therefore
say nothing at all
about it please"

But you must 2087
Annibelle I myself had
to say sharply though
I liked her of course
you are here to answer
my question which the
assembly to form an
opinion on this case,
I know surely the real
amount of sorrow and
distress you had on
how you been frustrated
but do that does not
exempt to you
from answering those
sort of questions. Besides
it could give you some
satisfaction and revenge
on "Sweetie Pie"
I am sorry to press
you Mrs. Pomeroy the
Council continued but
I really must do so.

You look different 2088
opinion to about Lee
about to that held by
the ten other farmers
child singers?
I regret to say that I
did. But Mr. Ellerton
the farmer told me
the reason he had for
Sweetie Pie being
something much worse
than a tornado and
that something was
radically wrong with
her. I thought there
reason sufficient
and have seen no cause
for changing my
opinion I myself believe
she was decidedly
something far more
horrible than twelve
tornadoes put together in one!

How come? asked 2088
Remember if I remember
There was no unreasonable
theory that that great
fine tree still remains
in front of the convent
though stripped off almost
of all its branches and
bark and had all sorts
of wire of a wire strung
and clean underneath
wrapped around it?

That is a hard question
the answer I said Donald
Ainsworth of course at the
width the tree is nearly
twelve feet in circumference
and right at the top if
the tree must have been
very deep and very
strongly rooted. That may
be but the doubtless
course, nothing else
can explain. There is

now a very ~~very~~ ²⁰⁸⁹ sad song written about 2090
the because of so
many children buried
in the grounds near it
yet the song is called
the Somersone Pine
The Roomer and the villain
I know could not relate
it to hear it sung?
Mr. Martin the
assistant foreman not
foreman was the only
witness called for the
testimony. After stating
that although no miracle
was actually moved
for all the work not worth
done he expected the
foreman at any time
and that he had
promised to see personally
to the foreman's construction

of Lee upon paper 2041
of the convent and and
he also detailed his
engineering to the con-
struction of the beautiful
Convent Chapel and the
result of his observation
there and then gave the
Foreman not less than the
highest character saying
that he had known
him for many years
and that he had an
absolute confidence in
his engineering engineering

He has from the
first not that "he
said proved a most
intelligent and hard
working man knew
well his idea of con-

struction annex 2043
to improve himself
and to get on in all
his excellent excellent
construction work not gentle
He has learned all
that his construction
teacher could teach not
less than him and much
more. don't know, He
is one of the best persons
in the world not a
whom I shall consider
capable from careless
of the crime of Lutes
Pao which he is no
charged. As to his
having any mistake
in his job not consider
I can swear that
on many different

occurrence during 2044
the construction of the
Convent and the Angel
Guardian Orphanage. He has
done a lot of the
most structured and close
inspection so that man
expressed the highest
opinion of him and
has declared that it
was quite natural
that with the evidence
against himself he before
her any one would
too thought her guilty
of such a wholesale
annihilation of helpless
children and many
other people, blown from
town to town. No one
real tornado could have
accomplished this and therefore
she is guilty of this.

wholesale child 2045
massacre.

The keeper of the
wayside public house
where he had breakfasted
found that he was
struck by the awful
darkness that
set in just after the
awful uproar that sounded
to him like a long
wailing wailing cry
he was flabbergasted
with the appearance of
the convent ruin and
the wiping out of the
Orphanage and the
building when it soon
grew lighter that all
the upper part with
everybody in it had
disappeared away the tall
tower was stuffed of limbs

and back and ~~2047~~
things happened & could not
believe though he saw it.
He said from what
he saw he could not
hardly gain composure
to walk & would swear
to it that that happened
an event here such
as never happened in the
world before such as
no man could tell of
and the sight of the
convent broke many
backs and souls. Who
if any one could reverse
that horrible massacre
of the an they should
have been able to
tell of the three
minutes and forty
five seconds death
error which then

had then endured 2046
The sight of the convent
and what little was left
of the orphanage and the
doom of strangled child
for all girls between
the limits of what was
left of the largest play
ground been their instrument
my own ~~last~~ nerves
so like the others told
I too trembled at the
least exertion
but still I was not so
bad off as to be frightened
at the shadow. Do
you know I can scarcely
believe what really
happened after all that
long year of work we
took to build the con-
vent and the orphanage?

2047
So it was quite natural
that with the evidence
against her and before
her would that any one
would believe her guilty
of something much more
serious and dangerous than
a dozen men amongst
Commodore just to gather an
one so that full force
was given of the
most greatest and heroic
honors on all records
that awful August 15
of the feast of the
Assumption of our Mother
of God surely is a day
which the people of
the whole world shall
never forget for
it was on that fatal
afternoon that the
war which came the
most terrible that ever

2048
Commodore that ever came
down from the clouds many
many say that, in
less than a minute
the storm was upon the
Commodore in such that
two the ship was en-
tirely overcast and
what with the and
the driving clouds of
darkness it became red-
dened so dark that
no one ever out of the
storm's path could see
each other. It is foolish
to attempt to describe
such a furious storm
and though the oldest for-
war in the territory
had never experienced
or seen anything like
it because of the darkness

2049
There was hardly
no witness to the awful
destruction of the convent
and other buildings. But
it seems it seemed
the very first puff did
to the convent what you
will see today. And because
of it all our best work
gone to naught? wonder if
any one could have
imagined my feeling of
horror at the sight of
the convent and the
Angel Guardian Ophanim.
I felt as if I was
shaking from head to
foot by mad yanks and
if I did not have the
mad violent fit of the
angue then I don't know
what it was. I knew
therefore the mighty strength

2050.
of the storm had not done
I knew what any one
could have worked me
to understand. Well such
a word that drove at
the unfortunate convent
and the Angel Guardian
Ophanim. The structures
were doomed no matter
how strongly we had
constructed them and
nothing could save it.
You perceive that in
constructing it we went
to all possible means to
do it with all the
strongest material that
could be obtained. The
construction of the convent
roof above the convent
every working day and
night and then to
inspect it very frequently.

and many of us
had to ~~wait~~ wait and
~~wait~~ watch carefully
for the coming of the great
material but now the
storm had destroyed our
land and many years
of work and by such
a hardship as this
any one could have been
a fool as to dream that
no storm would wreck
such a construction as
of any hope at all ever
if it had been then
Lemon such a convent
as it was. At God what
a scene the coming of
the morning had lit
up if I had not known
where we were and what
we had to expect I
sure I should not have
recognized the place
at all as it was I see

205-6

you I involuntarily 25-2051
closed my eyes in horror
the lids clutched themselves
together as if in a violent
spasm, for some second
I dared not open them
at the sight of such instant
destruction. When I opened
them never shall I
forget the sensation of awe
horror and admiration
with which I gazed
about about me the
upper part of the convent
or what was left of it
appeared to be hanging
in the air by magic mechanism
down from the Chapel
near near where the altar
was upon what left of
the lower portion forming
like some big shipwreck
near the shore. It
as I said it appeared to
be of the last remains

2052
hanging midway down
on a long steep slant
upon the upward part of
what was left of the
structure of a long hillside
slope of wreckage was
on a downward slant
no degree in the wreck
and for the ghastly
radiance they shed forth
as the rays of the sun
streamed in a flood of
change glow along what
was left of the walls.
Even I was also much
too confused to first
observe anything accurately.
At first the general
burst of terrible grandeur
was all that I beheld.
When I recovered my
self a little however
my gaze fell unobtrusively
toward the corners of the
convent I saw hardly nothing

2053
left at all except the
dead strangled children
held around their necks in
the branches of what was
left of the strangled trees.
How this fright could be
was amazing. With the
coming of daylight I was
able to obtain an un-
obstructed view from the
place I stood and realize
the manner in which
was left of the upper part
of the building in which
I hung in an inclined
condition. The edge of
the ruin was like a
stranded ship girt upon
an even keel that is
to say its deck lay
in a plane parallel
with that of the edge of
the wall beneath but
this latter wreckage sloped

at the angle of 205'4
fourty four degrees. so that
the upper run of the
convent seemed like some
big cherry steep lay
upon the beam ends
The upper part of the
great pine tree was what
laid in the main part
from down way and the
main trunk is debarked
of its bark and its base
crushed so chafed and
roughened as to have the
appearance of broomstraw
and select no piece
of splinter from wreckage
showing the face of the
slam. Article wrapped
around the trunk was
impossible to remove.
Do you see with all
the evidence before
us the slam was

guilty of creating the
greatest horror in all
history and any one but
evening I would be
guilty of all this calamity
beyond words."

Mr. Sanford Whitman
another foreman was the
next witness. He said
that all of the construction
men had been here for
years and saw in build-
ing the mighty Convent
building that the general
work in construction
the roof not to be
been most excellent
and that the chief fore-
man was remarkable
quick and in
attention in all his ob-
servation and inspection
and was a man of all

workman and foreman 2057
is using the time that
he had been employed
he had never lost a
day is

At the time he
was busy on the build-
ing of the convent. Mr.
Adam "the foreman
council" asked were you
aware that any storm
could ever come that
could do all that?

"I was not aware of
that fact Mr Adam
answered and the fore-
man with surprise looked
at his assistant.

I now whom did
you hear of anywhere
like that?

"I did not hear of it
but father Guigly called

2058
called upon me
about the construction
of the convent and the
Angel Guardian Orphanage.
The first had applied
to me about making
the structure as strongly
as any could ever be
built. I had asked ~~the~~ for
the best material from the
French Country and from
Germany but said it
was not my custom to
pay anything for any
choof material at
first the building
contractor had said he
said they could not
afford the amount
to be obtained and
we thought that was the
end of the matter not
until he suddenly called
a few days later a

very high head French 205⁹
Engineer in a Contractor
called upon us and said
that he had heard from
Mr. Ellison the son of our
foreman who was a friend
of the foreman how
matters stood and that our
application had fallen
through owing to the
French authorities being
able to find more than
the proper material of
the amount due to us.

I said that was so.
The French head who
name was Jules Robert
said that he was fully
prepared to make up
the deficiency that he
had a regard for the
furnishing of the Contract.
Over and above he
saw to the transportation
of the material in

order that we 2060
might finish our work
which he said would
be a matter of consequence
to the head contractor
Company in New York.
Yet he requested me
on no account to let
the main head of the
contractor Company in
New York know that he
intervened in the matter
but to represent in
the matter that I changed
my mind not behind
and was willing to take
all the responsibility upon
my own shoulders. I
may say that from that
time on to this time
I have not mentioned
the fact to any one
and the contractor

2060
until my sheep was
completed. But how could
that unfortunate affair of
the sheep come about?
We are assured it was
not a real tornado. There
was something, unexplainable
wrong with it, it must
have been used from
that bouncing off glacier
etc."

There was a great move-
ment of affairs not
Santo Claus in the Assembly
Hall not telephone call on
Mr Adam not journey
gave his evidence
and the of Had for
man looked grateful
wonder Mr Adam not
Eve and said heartily
"I thank you sir with
all my heart" not direct
The formation of the

2061
construction gang for the
construction of the Orphanage
of the playground equip-
ment was next day
arrived. It is confirmed
the high character Mr
Adam after had given
Mr Eileen and address
that he knew on a lot
and that he never
missed his important
work but spent his
time almost entirely at
even work that was
done and even the
Superintendent of the Com-
pany had on every
occasion found him
so employed.
after this evidence
for the proof of the
convent construction had
been given the Council
for the proof of the proof

if the construction 2062
pointed out by the officer
that there was in fact
no evidence whatever
connecting Quicla Pie
with any ordinary tornado
beyond the discovery of
the reformer's fury
through Chamberlain and
as to the trumping story
of her actually being
a real tornado it was
altogether contemptible.

When an ordinary tornado
meets to commit a
devastation of an important
town it did so in
order to destroy what it
could and not be able
to do was kind what
Quicla Pie accomplished.
Quicla Pie must have
actually a real animus
against Nature
Had the Quicla Pie

had been a 2063
regular tornado it would
have done less. do
the ridiculous fury at
the Corvian that would
probably only damaged it
and they had already
found Mr Ellison. The
main former declare
that something was radically
wrong with Quicla Pie
not after and that he
believed it was something
horrible that came
from the itself. It
was far worse than the
deadlier cloud that came
the lower part of the
Palace and wiped out
St Pierre. of the course
that was a volcanic
eruption and not a tornado
though some believe it
acted as one. Some
are trying to connect

Sweetie Pie with 2064
Lee Omaha Journal.
Beyond Lee discovering it
ruined a second floor
convert too five years
ago apparently only for
his purpose of comparison
either one with each
other but Sweetie Pie
herself was absolutely not
contemplable murder not
blunder. When a murder
means to commit a
devastation along Lee
west side of Omaha it
did so in order to
run on its homicidal
course, and not from
any reason to compare
with old Sweetie Pie.

Had the Omaha storm
had any malice for
the ridiculous change
against her on which it

had done from it 2065
could not have at Lee
same time or in August
allied itself with
Sweetie Pie to keep
her from her unnatural
force but would probably
have vented its spite
in that usual fashion
for what it did to
Rabston and Omaha
but so far good for
as it could see there
was no foundation
for Lee change brought
upward that one thought
of course it had been
completely destructive but
it could not muddle
the fury of Sweetie
Pie one hundred percent
and they already
had heard Mr Ellison
declare that he regretted
severely that the storm could

do such awful 2066
unbelievable havoc in
all the mountain world
that the news surprised
such a thing and that
the believed the buildings
to be first of tornado
flood and earthquake
flood. But never had
been proved up to the
fact that any storm
could come that had
such terrific power
to should still feel
that it was wholly
unconnected with the
present matter. If it
had been only an
ordinary tornado
what then. It was
not an unusual
thing for a tornado like
the to blow off
the west side of Glasgow
city even if it came to

funneling rage with a 2067
hem on stability, no
wound it have affected
the moral character
no one like seeing a
too savage tornado
take the western part of
a good city later away
and leave would have
been nothing so very
dreadful. Had nature
revenge for not for
being deflected from
from a part of a long
city. It is like a
person being very roughly
shoved aside. Would it be
too go around over it
and shake that party
down. I would not
is probable even among
the assembly there is
one or more who if
he had not absolutely

overpowered himself 2068
for being pushed on
enough and then
him also might as well
as hand him a blow
that forced him to the
ground or had threatened
to do so and would
not have regarded it
as a very serious
crime had he done so.

Therefore he contended
that Lee deservedly should
just like Humphrey
offer altogether as much
as being pushed
aside and quince-fur
by it altogether out
of the bunch on the
double ground that
on the first place
for being shoved aside
highlighted the few changes
he could do for Lee
Gleason Bryan and that

had not done so. 2069
It would have been
had nothing whatever
to do with the present
affair of going off in a
immense, wild and
savage manner.

With gentlemen who
said it would could
not be any life of
insult to your under
standing to ask
you to credit that
the Swabian was much much
of a law good whose character
which I hope to soon
presently prove to you
by evidence that I
believe is very unques-
tioned evidence is of
Lee strongest kind of
show even history could
record even more than
the honor of Lee Marshall

off So far as 2070
the mt Pulls around
of deult has for three
months and fairly done
reconc. not having otherwise
such superlatives
strong malice against
this child for that because
off of Gleason City not only
that she had become
the consort of other women
and storm her own skin
stained herself with
whole sale murder
crimes and rendered
herself herself liable
to be somewhere for
years than a tornado
for the purpose mostly
of spilling Gleason
City for bringing her
off. And because she
had been brought off
the insane - being had

been so unfortunate 2071
that it was dangerous
for any one or another
to be within a mile of
her. Such a contribution
would be about
absolutely absurd.
I would venture

here might say to dis
miss it from their minds
altogether that reasonably
was a tornado not tornado
and approach it from
a different standpoint
not worth out altogether
not as a matter.

Commented into such a real
of that means business
of being probably a wild
whirlwind from Hell
not withstanding that the
matter is a most simple
one. not even I all
storm deflected from
Gleason's western point

not start at about 2072
from thirty miles after noon
and something forced it
to go off near the regular
camp and head for
Gleason Canyon where
the first Orphanage horror
occurred, 7th incident
was from the morning.
In the six o'clock room?
Thank at the approach of
the storm the immense
carpet with a man working
in the center rolled
up by itself from the
great distant occurrence of
the storm and miraculously
rolled itself
up into a corner
surrounding witness
proved the counsel
thermore when the
Canyon was wiped out.
The carpet was about
twenty miles with the

man still wrapped 2073.
inside of it and rolled
along the ground for thirty
miles more. He was not
too hard but injured
but it took weeks to
to cut him loose, yet
to all that time could
breathe while wrapped
around the unique
experience that I do not
want thank you, He
was hospitalized to find
if he was not actually
in shock He wasn't.
He said he will never
forget that experience
and for Heaven's sake
don't want another.
Because of his experience
he was allowed to
keep the rug with which
he was sewed onto
it during the experience

But he did not shoot 2078
of it or took about
a much though he did
say at times that he
had been so frightened
that he shot at an
unwed whiter. The
elbow took with all of
the oxygen and day
ground equatorial mode
a hand mass of the
lost and most beautiful
green. On the way
it headed off a George
lower and German
town saying there was
feeling out.

It moved straight
ahead like a machine
you completely dangerous
unaware when there
the north west side of
So Ball was with
fallen to the ground
on all points swept almost

away with the loss 2075
of fine hundred and fifty
days. The corner is
a shambles with the street
can still on which is left
of the roof. Everyone was
killed in that can all
can back and street ground
was all too up from
there to Howe which it
wiped out. There is to
Burning during where killed
horror was committed
and there to Charles
Brown who he was also
unreasonable comment and
Angel Guardian. Horner
occurred. Then he was
out of Ottawa. The was
then from there to
James. The which also
was out with the animal
above of it. Just before
The gentle rain is to
words of many witnesses
and the green throughout

The country, also 2075
as related by magazines
and also published
books and in other
untrue as related to
the Chief Constable at
Mond Motors. So we
see nothing can be
more simple or probable
about Sweater. But some-
times more horrible
than the most violent
torments of war was con-
ceded in some forests
at least I shall be
able to confirm it by
lots of independent
testimony. To explain
the splendor of the
interior of the Convent
which we saw one
day we visited it
when the splendor. I
did not get to see the

The boys quarters 2076
but I did see through
by the Mother Superior
who formulated escape
with the life the girls
department. Each little
girl had four lovely
rooms in the main
part of the building on
the top floor which were
always reserved for their
use. These for each girl
consisted of a beautiful
sitting room a dressing
room a lavatory
chamber and a big
marble bathroom
and in these rooms
were everything the
heart could desire.
Floored these with lovely
thoughtfulness by
the Sister and made
for their use. The

2077
The description
had the measure of it
every little girl so
they kept the children
in their dressing room
filled with the most
lovely dresses of every
description and suitable
for every occasion
or here everything
that was dear to a
little girl's heart was
supplied in profusion
and you could raise
find in the biggest
department stores in
the whole world
clothing so right
not and beautiful.
Some remember
the description of
Ogawa palace in
the Emerald Isle.

2078
The convent almost
resembled the palace
according to the description
of it. and it was observed
or our visit showed in
the beauty of a most
delicious and delightful
and extensive garden
like part where the
most splendid trees that
could grow and flower
abundantly or were
statues and the fountain
was surrounded. Oh
could walk for hours
in this fascinating
part like garden and
see something interesting
every at every step.
In one place a huge
aquarium where strange
and beautiful
creatures of all kinds
swam at the bottom of

2079
We are gathered
daily to a great feast
which the Communist
children and every man
wants provided for every
and was so fearless
of harm that they
would alight upon one
shoulder and sit firm
on hand. There was
also a fountain with
smaller beds. Leaves
of different color
of a great elevation
There also fountain
that was delightful
for refreshment you rest
from

In the banquet
hall of the second
floor were long
tables. And all this
in good harmony of
music (P. 20) not 7.

2080
Nothing can be
surpassed or more
favorable and in some
points. In the evening
we had a party that was
informal. I asked what the
really was. I asked also
the destruction was a
most serious one and
must have been inflicted
by a wind force that
nothing but a compass
could be greater force.
We were in the
the men convinced that
the office hours
the children you will
agree with me not one
that I believe for in
some way unusual a
stomach. And that see
in the mail exchange
we know and up
in a matter of surprise

very regret that 2087
we who should commit
Suicide for a brief when
there is no need shadows
of evidence against her
that because of her
conspicuous destruction of
and the discovery of her
husband, upon such important
buildings, a discovery
which no one can explain.
There is too much evi-
dence to explain her
no attempt she has
made. It seems that the
storm was in the midst of
slendering down after the
leaving off weather
glamor or consolation
with all other storm
to keep her gain such
unworldly strength no
attempt has been made
to show any connection
with the ocean thunderstorm

on whatever be 2082
between her yet over
7.00 may be comment
not spent that it was
unwarranted @ It was
a building no want
and noble and elegant
that even all who
viewed it guessed it
was the Old Royal
Place of Ozi. It was
just an immense and
like it had a high
stair of many steps
leading to the main
entrance. The garden
and ample ground was
surrounding. By a distant
refracted wall not half
not so high as the
not such as the wall
not tall around the
Angel Guardian Asphar.

but macdaniel 2081
designed and built of
all beautiful green
brick and even marble
with a red yellow
and blue
coloring on top with a
violet schall, top part
not flooring. It had
gates that no person
of any kind could board
of any person
who know any number
big words have
often tried to describe
the rare beauty of the
building and failed
because the words were
not good enough. It
was a little more than
two block long and
a hundred and fifty
feet wide and five

216

Thursday
2081

Applesauce
Oatmeal & cream
~~Eggs~~
Toast & salt free butter
Milk

Pureed vegetable - omit
Dried Potato
3 + 6% vegetable } salt poor
Milk

~~Ice cream~~
Melba Toast & salt free butter

Cream soup }
String beans } salt poor
Onions }
Melba toast & salt free butter
Milk

Jello
Dried fruit and
hot tea
afternoon high wind
so of course though.

I had had a 20.81
good look at the building
I cannot help to tell you
of the beauty here
how great was the charm
of this magnificent
building on the
loveliest of locations
just as charming as the
other type of magnificent
building in the world.

Whatever else was
beautiful or charming
or delightful of itself
faded to dullness
when contrasted with
the surpassing beauties
formation and of the
beauty said by those
who knew that no
other magnificent
building in all the
world could ever hope

not to be the 2082
to equal the gracious
charm of its appearance
Everything about the
building attracted countless
tourists and right soon
summer or winter spring
or fall and it inspired
large admiration and
the sweetest affection
rather than any
ordinary admiration.

I remember the day I
stood in the great
magnificent Hall not
dull any that we men
hard wondering how
we had built such
things so splendidly
I know the Hall I
went at the invitation
of Sister Mary Clare
through up the Grand
staircase we were surprised

had contemplated. 2083
carpeted that with velvet
and so along a wide
corridor to a carved
door way. It led me
into the room which
"was my for the head
superintendent Priest of
the convent and for a
time I stood in her
wilderness admiring
the grandeur before
me. The head priest
had been given the
most handsome apart-
ment in the convent.
Magnificent convent
to her would not be wasted
and you cannot wonder
that the good fortune
of the priest was
in my responsibility
and residing at
my orders. The

2084
furniture was upholstered
in cloth of purple
velvet lined with gold
with a crown arm
throne set up on it in
yellow. The rug upon
the floor of marble
was so thick and
soft that I could
not hear the sound of
my feet. The
and upon the walls
were splendid tapestries
woven with scenes
from the life of
the apostles. On the
wall was a great
sacred picture of Christ
the Mother of
God and the last
suffer and suffer. Good
and ornaments
were scattered
about in profusion.

and for I thought 1384
I had never so many
pretty things in one
place. In one corner
lay a wooden
fountain of clear water
and in another was
a table bearing a
golden tray loaded
with fruit gathered
from including red
cheeked apples and many
that we found lower
at the fountain end
of the charming room
not far from where
an open doorway and
I crossed over to
find myself in a
bed room containing
one more comfort

this I even 2886
before mentioned 7-10056
bedroom was of gold
and red with iron
brilliant diamonds
and the coverlet had
design of Pauline
serving round upon it
on the side of the bed
room was a dark
dressing room with
closet containing a
large assortment of fresh
clothing and beyond
there was a bath
a large room having
a marble foot bath
enough to swim in
with white marble
steps leading down
to the water around
the edge of the

front view and 2076
room of beautiful
ornament as large as
down knobs while the
water of the bath was
clear as crystal.

I had gazed up all
their blue luxury
with silent amazement
and thought that had
I not should take
advantage of the good
fortune for me constructed
for me was really
responsible for it.

I didn't take time
to see the clean
room. What happen-
ings in afternoon
proved no alarm upon
earth has ever been
able to resist Swallow

free and noble 2077
terrace even with for
Swallow Pao was much
too if myself to afford.
I had all been in a
hall on the third
floor a most splendid
hall that was more
beautiful and grand
than anything I had
ever looked. The
ceiling was composed
of great great arches
that rose far above
my head and even
the walls and
floor was of polished
mahogany or gilded
or gilded under
in many colors.
I did not expect

was on the floor 2078
and leather under
drapery covered the
arch leading to the
various classrooms of the
Convent which I did not
too go into and observe.
I wish I had the
furnishings was made of
rare old woods richly
carved and
covered with delicate
scales and the entire
hall was lit up

by a mysterious
new glow that seemed
to come from no
particular place
but flooded each
apartment with its
soft any gleaming

radiance upon 2079
the mantle and
on many shelves
and brackets and
tables was clustered
Religious ornaments of
every description
seemingly made out
of all sorts of metal
glass china stone and
marble. There were
vase and figures of
Angels and Saints
and green plates
and bowls. Great

Pictures of the
Blessed Sacrament too
was on the wall
and the opposite hall
was quite a museum
of rare and costly
holy objects. At the
end of the hall

was a large crowd 2070
with a life size Christ
fostered on it. After Lee
saw what became of
it, my first attempt. Then
he made to show
that an American
was hidden with one
Dorran and Lee may
who came from Berlin
German for the purpose
of bringing money
and evil for Lee.
Convent and who can
we know enough
Lee said material that
could be obtained. No
scrap of blonde hair
been found upon us
and we order to account
for the series of
trucks to leave loved
upon the Council

to the prosecution 2070
against Swede Pie
than stated Lee or started
Lee hypoth that
I was given during
Lee was of the bounce
off Western Gleason City
yet that may have
been the case gentle
man for Swede Pie
would not have
been changed in the
course. Swede Pie
they say in the office
offering of the rear of
the first thunder
storm. There are
unknown who will
come before you
and try to give you
evidence of the most
extremely high force

face into line. 2081
Mr. Ellsworth will tell
you that he and all
the work men and
construction engineers
had for more than
twenty two years to
root me in considerable
portion of the lesson
time to improve the
construction and enable
him and all the
workmen to build the
most beautiful structures
he would have ever
seen. My man Chief
foreman became a
much respected man
of his time. I shall
leave the case in
your hands gentlemen
with an absolute
confidence that a

that a verdict 2082
proclaiming the best
builder of his time
and enables him to
prove how much he
work was done. It is
not though that old
destruction he had to
come along and destroy
such buildings and
all our twenty two years
splendid and hard
work."

You were the man
foreman on the job. I
said the Council. What
do you estimate
the value of the
material used in the
construction of the Corner
Convent. Mr. Ellsworth?
"The value of the

materials for the 2053
construction of the mag
ificent roof alone 7
feet down roughed at
32 000 000 dollars the
Chapel windows at West
two thousand dollars
the station of the
Cross might have been
worth three thousand
three hundred more,
According to the paper
7 actually got the
the whole convent was
constructed at five
hundred and fifty
million five hundred
thousand dollars there
is the paper to prove
it" and it shows
the plan of the convent
and the bill of fare

All men proved 2053
it by other important
papers "

Every one was silent 7/
could not be yet there was
the positive evidence
from.

From Ellison "the senior
of the magistrates said
not a word of discussing not
anxious that lady who
was sitting on a chair
not a word at the up-end
of the assembly shall
not be left call "we are
are sorry to trouble
you but we must
ask you and advise to
go in the witness box
not small pay 7 we
you to ask you "to wait
on not up when rule
had taken her and
not was grand in the day

not something else 2085
Show I was you
connected your own
efforts to the construction
of my Elson & you
wife not for it.

Be can he was the
main foreman who had
me lived in
So Sally not small
and was employed
assisting the president
of a Construction Company.
He was well advanced
in the studies of the
work not only and
became what he is
to day. Ever since
the calamity he man
has been in my
mind and on seeing
what happened I
naturally recognized

that no man yet 2086
has been able to
build anything that
can resist a Swastie
Bee, & at my Elson was
a short silence in the
Assembly Hall when
Mr. Elson gave his
evidence I think the
impression had been very
favorable to the
Board. His ideas
though strange and very
unusual had been by me
more impossible and
true would have
completely accounted
for the strength of
the building. The
evidence of Mr. Elson
however did not
alter the complexion
of the case. The same

Lee's number 3021 2069
How was it all Lee 2082
upper part of the convent
was swept into nothing
ness while the lower
section was wrecked.
Did the storm slightly
rise up at the time.
The engineer and five
men and garden were
in recovered that ever
as low as the street
around the convent the
storm was a range of
leaves. The how came
the lower part of the
convent, defied the
storm? The across the
street hands nothing
was left of Lee
Angel Guardian on
pharmacy on the grounds 771

But didn't Lee 2089
return at least rise
about two stories above
the ground?
According to the three
men down in the basement
the storm was god with
all hellst fury around
the lower part too the
bottom of it caused the
garden temporary man-
insanity from other
fright. My Ecclesi-
astical school and composed
attention and composed
during the focusing
I saw that her count-
enance had turned
me surprise not
and a emotion when
the face of Lee
convent was proved

His last indeed 2088
in which the matter
over not shown before
coming into the assembly.
Hall came to the conclusion
that after all man
could not and never
but able to read any
instructions yet that could
reset a tornado on a
very severe earthquake
like at Messina in 1908

So it was no surprise
to him, Uncle Perry

A slight shake had
passed over him if we
not shake all when the
wife Mrs. Ellison
entered the testimony
stand not now grand
on box. Glancing at
the president of the
meeting not looking
at her gave her

evidence then 2089

Mrs. Ellison also saw that
her husband looked greatly
worried and annoyed,
as before at the per-
cussion of the evidence
of each witness. Mrs.
Ellison was if she had
any questions to put

He so hesitated a moment
and then said, How
was it the lower part
of the convent surrounded.
It was built of the
same material.

But again the magistrate
magistrate consulted
to get the

Mrs. Ellison we
shall be obliged if
you will enter the witness
box not for again,
in your former evidence
Mrs. Ellison you said

nothing in any 2090
way relating to the
construction of the main
Chapel of the Convent but
it may seem you
had a previous acquaintance
of it was made while
you were in Assembly was
what it was

I have not much to
say, the Chief Foreman
said, we had nothing
much to do with that.
It was the work of
Chinese construction
They too were intelligent
constructors and gave
every satisfaction. All
that was done so
beautifully was to the
interior and the windows.

I want to say further
that I have deeply
regretted what we have
had done since

concerning how 2092
the Convent and even the
Angel Guardian exchange
was built by what you
great an expense and
labor. I never thought
such a thing could
ever happen. But what?

Wonder is how did it
possibly spare the lower
rocks? But selection of
it was just as much
expended as the rest of
it.

I may also say
that the construction of
the building will
give the Convent
the highest character
of the way it was
built.

I suppose Mr. Ellison
the senior magistrate
said you have not

at any time since the 1891
finishing of the buildings
and no any actual
evidence which would show
and show that you
was mistaken or you
first view and that your
subsequent change of
opinion was also
to your general view
of the buildings, although
so far as you knew
that at any time
possible question being
asked and brushed he
referred the rest of the
evidence about the
construction of the convent
and the orphanage had
a caused great confusion
and much interest
in the Assembly Hall,

Public opinion 2092
ran high on the subject
of the eleven way of
the convent's construction.
The old workmen of
the construction gang
was strong in his
power he was very
popular among his fellow
and they pointed out
that sort of experienced
hands was concerned
in the construction
was constructed the
destruction was thought to
be improbable and an
alarm which had so
brutally wiped out the
Gleaner Asylum would
be silent at any time
to naturally revenge
themselves upon Gleaner
city who turned it.

off in court 2093
no suddenly on 10.7m
Ellison declares of
his subsequent opinion
that he believed nothing
could be done to the
structure. The weight
was attached to it of
course every one knew
that he was the country's
most famous construction
engineer and the best
type of man for the
job and on the other
knowledge himself that he
had obtained no evidence
which would satisfy
him that he had acted
honestly in the construction
or it was clear that
I was from more
knowledge that he
did all he could. So
the court he was not
responsible for what Sweet's Pro

"But still was there 2094
such an unfortunate
fellow as I am the fore
man continued there on
I with my fellow
workers going through
a lot of hard labor
and expense also time
in seeing to the construction
of one of the most
magnificent structures
in the country if not
the world of which I
believe could never before
conceivable considered
bold earthquake and
flood proof not to
and from in the present
case I and all are
the sufferers and
all this has come
about simply because
that damn Sweet's Pro

would come along 2095
and wipe out all our work.
caused unknown loss
of life and many
horribly injured. I tell
you a tornado couldn't
do this. Sweetie Pie
not black eye was
absolutely something
else and was com-
promised to not let it
Everybody has told
about it. said Reuben
I have trouble state
ment you made almost
and you even have
told me again with
every detail not whole
ly as can be heard not
about of. Some an
circumstance which
appears to you as baffling
or as funny some

kind of a clue of 2096
coming. I don't know
what I can make of
it. Even if I took time
to think it over of
course as it stands it
is no material and
probable that Sweetie
Pie could have been
something very much
worse than even twelve
strong tornadoes put to-
gether in one. But it
is somewhat disguised as
being such a storm
at all and I could
or should be proven
at once had it not
been for that most
unfortunate destructive
business before and the
supposition excited in
it that all of the
heaven exploded at once.

was a crazy dream. 2097
formally. No one can
can dispose of that for
I can guarantee you
and your workers have
constructed structure of
super strong although
you regretted that
religious construction
made the word magnificent
and chapel, and just
you have felt the ill
will against them on
account of it. However
some may be able to
prove that the reason
you gave for having
such strong structure
built was a loss of
power of its magnificent
strong and magnificent
beauty and although
I cannot swear that

any of us ever feels 2098
anything to come along
like this superstrong
Sweet's Pie on the fatal
afternoon of August 15th
the fact that these
strong you had builded
the buildings cannot
but corroborate any ones
story that Sweet's Pie
was much more than
any ordinary Toronto
and commodes. I ~~stare~~
did - did leave for
two or three days and
examine the convent
ruins but it is not
safe to be within a
hundred feet of it so
dangerous in its ruins.
Thank you very
much the foreman

though I have been 2099
thinking it over and do
not see that any evidence
of our splendid work
would help me much.
Suzette Pie has done her
work and completely. It
will simply prove that
Suzette Pie passed through
Chastelhorn like a big
forward moving airplane
efflower that "man
whirl wind" on that awful
afternoon."

They can probably
prove that it might
have been some moving
forward - efflower of
the Heavens. "Remember
said,

I shall fancy anyone
would look at it that way
in any case the forward

said (7) I had 2100
been of Suzette Pie
and gone through such
an afternoon work as
that of working out the
convent."

all of us will have
to keep up our courage
in the situation. Mr
Eelson. We may be
quite sure that all
types of scientific and
storm phenomena
will do all in the
power and knowledge
for us about what
Suzette Pie really
was."

Yes Mr Eelson
agreed not stand need.
I hope so I shall feel

7 shall feel it 2/10/1
more afterwards and
some how I don't seem
to take it so hard
very much. It is a great
woe for all relatives
who had been children
roomers and boarders
in the great convent
who are still working
out side of Chesterton
for now of less but at
present the whole thing
seems an extraordinary
that I can quite really
that all our great
work was wiped out
by Sweetie Pie. It
seems impossible but
it is, the worst of
it is that even
if all can be seen
here lots of people will

will think that 2/10/2
Sweetie Pie is only an
ordinary tornado of
uncommon over strength
and nothing else.

I see in my one person
that can really prove
what Sweetie Pie really
was and that is God
only.

I hear Rumber said
that the Chief Sargent
of the County has
written up to Washington
for them to put the
rumor upon Sweetie
Pie. I tell the
believe Sweetie Pie
is really a tornado
or not. I am quite
certain that Sweetie
was much more than

an ordinary tornado 2103
not tornados and that more
than any unusual unusual
things than any atmospheric
disturbance, or of the occurrence
off of Glasgow City was
concerned in the affair, not
less. The theory of the
Scientists of course is
that something in the air
may have collided with
bad conditions in the
near of the first then
developed over the strange
atmospheric disturbances
and got that badly
burning phenomena which
Scientists say was
the source of all the
annihilation and the
frightful life of
wounding others. I went
down yesterday with

In Danger and Constable 2104
gone to see the wrecked
Convent where only
left many cars and
the little girl Mildred
survived. The place did
not look like some
big hard structure
and there was evidence
that the storm did no
lifting at all and only
a little more than the
storm of the lower part
was still left though
badly wrecked and
lurled out of shape,
all of which goes to
prove that your
best type of construction
could not resist
that unmeasurable blast
because according to the

Cherry against 200
Sweetie Pie as might
have exploded himself
into an unreasonable
un-governable fury that
a dozen tornadoes in one
could not compare with
"It is in that case"

Mr. Ellison said truly
should Sweetie Pie take
all the upper part of
the convent and leave
the lower part be-
hind and carry all
the upper part and
leave it all into mat-
ingness? All of the
building was built of
the same material?"

"Yes there is of course
that question." Reuben

said thoughtfully, 2106,
"but then on the other
hand why did it take
away nearly all of
the orphanage and also
the dormitory building and
the huge superintendent?
The answer is the
in the three cases being
so old it is from the
saying the bigger the
buildings the worse they
get it. The storm has
a better grasp on the
bigger structures.
So you see it cuts
three ways."

"So it does Mr.
Ellison asserted it is
just a question of belief
and I am myself that
that old bouncing off
the western part of

Gleason city is 2107
very much against
Suzette Pe and I can't
blame any one who
consider her guilty.
She seems was some
catastrophe. A word
would record her
one.

But what reason
in Election the Council
for the investigation
into blandly for
forgetting anything
about what saved the
house part of the
convent where the women
might have been
just as furious.
According to the testimony
of the garnet engineer
and the assistant who

went through and ~~2108~~ 2108
suffered such a shock of
terror which temporarily
caused Lee garnet to
become a nervous madman
from sheer terror and
fright?

That was just the
quarter which the
Foreman could not answer
satisfactorily and was
a particularly an unusual
one because he
knew nothing of the
house the three went
through in the basement
during the worst of
the storm.

I can really give
no particular reason
he said except
that on reflection the

storm might
have lifted a very 2108
slight bit. convince
me that otherwise the
storm could not have
done such an act as
leave that part looking
either :v

In fact the council
said 'you were somewhat
influenced in your own
goodness of how the
convent was constructed
Mr. Ellisor is then
laying aside a conviction
which the facts had
at the time forced
upon you a belief that
every time was too
strongly built for
such a storm?'

I did not look upon
it in that way the

of a mile wide 2108
forward atmosphere
and electrical explosion
with such a character
as this under storm?
'Not at all Mr. Ellisor
said 'but I can't
change my opinion on
the matter ever very
shortly after the officer
as I was met the officer
the awful or the terror of
the awful calamity to
say the storm of
the Press Magazine
and other public books
read that to me that
to learn that the
believed that the
convent and the other
building was destroyed
by a mighty forward

explosion of the 2116
atmosphere which would
turned out to most
exceeding disaster on all
record struck me as
being very much more
probable than that
Sweetie Pie should
have been just an
'ordinary tornado'.

Mr. Reuben
Whitney "then said
Annabelle Rooney 'do
you think Sweetie Pie
go up high really was
something worse than any
ordinary tornado?' not a one
of them.

I am very much
sure of it. Mrs. Rooney
is sure as if I
am still alive.

My very experience 2117
would account for it. For
anyone who knows what
horrors Sweetie Pie committed
not filled to have any
doubt about her real
character. It is absolutely
out of their mind
if they have any. A far
worse than the storm than

Sweetie Pie it would
be impossible to
find or conceive of
at that. I get you that
But what did the
foreman Mr. Ecken
say. How did he
account of it for the
awful destruction despite
her worth two years
construction work?
That is something
no one can say.

I am trying to 2116
certify as to the general
conduct of the storm. I'm
sorry to have to say so
but I still firmly believe
that it had a flux and
reflux of the atmosphere.
Otherwise how can any-
one make any attempt to
account for the phenomenon
of such awful superlunary
strength which I
remember seemed to
me sufficiently plausible
flaunted in formal
I will again say
that the immeasurable
strength of the waves
was that the broad
white o. miles and
three quarters across
might have had a
collision of very violent
air waves rising and

former said 2110
shales. I consider that
that in the first instance
I believed even an earth
quake could not wreck
such a structure and
~~considering~~ on considerations
I saw that I had
done so. "
"I'm afraid Mr Ellison
the Council said "that
you will not persuade
the Assembly to agree with
you. No one yet has
ever tried a structure
that could resist the
or immense forces of
old Mother Nature."
I have one or two
questions to ask you."
The same magistrate
said "for indeed

2111
fa indeed you
evidence. To the construction
is as I think the
assembly was agree
altogether in favor of
the comment only. In
the first place was
the roof built of more
strong material than
any other part of the
building. The you-know
is the most important
feature is get the
group of several pieces
overwhelming force."

Not that I know of "
the foreman, replied.
I do not really
understand the erection
of that magnificent
roof. Certainly in the

2112
course of the building
I was not here as the
man was of a different
company. Indeed it was
very seldom that I ever
remembered that fact
except when I was asked
to as I did not work
for that construction
company. Certainly
I would never take a
hand without extreme
attention and remarks.
Then you therefore
Mr. Elmer have no
means of possessing
any knowledge in
the internal arrangements
of the construction of
the roof beyond that
possessed by the worker
of that old construction

company 21

2113

"Now whatever" the
Election refused.

"And the members of
that construction company
here at the meeting?"

"No one else could not
come because of the
destruction of all commun-
ication. All of my workers
were still here in

So I also at the time
of this awful catastrophe."

"Now as to what was
fortunate about the
storm sweeping away all
of the upper part of the
concrete. Your opinion
as to the immense
force of the storm wind that
must be not a
recent one but the out-

coming of some

2117

very strongly flux and
reflux of the atmosphere
between the thunderstorm
and the ridges of
offering an current
which confined the atmosphere
so that it precipitated
thrust through that section
of the atmosphere like the
most violent of cataclysms
and the higher the flood
of pressure in one place
deeper towards the ground
the fall must have
been and the material
resist of all was a
wide frenzied explosion
wherever or where
of air the prodigious
explosive force of
which is sufficient
to cause the mud

unto a storm more 21/18
than I already
than I had as fast
to get in one so the
received as we know it

after all "said amiable"
I read in an Geography
of more the atmosphere
could have a flux and
reflex of caught between
two storm but

they would be greatly
different that the flux
and reflex of the
with the off of "Sofaden"

Exactly said "Pembury"
There is however no
ordinary account of
the words of the air
he can prepare for
any one. To have
seen what awful things
I did accomplish
it is too late to

21/18
Nobody else was
prepared to see such a
thing before I do regret
of what was left of
the convent and the
unfortunate Guardian Angel
offstage is the most
an example of any
thing not expected,
There is not the faintest
conception of the magnificence
of its unexpected fury
and the immeasurable
horror of the scene in
of the or of the used
beyond any scene which
dreadful scene confounded
and awed even beholders
of it, I am not quite
sure not far from
what point of view
the whole of the scene

So I'll run across 2/20
 in quarters. wherever
 the return of both the
 convent and the Angelina
 Guardian Ophelia's on at
 work what time get you down
 but it could neither
 have been any more ahead
 scene or during immediate
 after the return. There are
 some passages of the
 description in the news also
 into Chicago Newspapers
 and also magazines and
 or story book reprints
 which may be
 quoted for all the
 details and pictures
 or photographs although
 the effect is exceedingly
 false in conveying
 an impression of the awful

of the awful spectacle" 2/20
 7.6 "paper" also
 said that at the
 time of the
 formation of

(25)

penworthy

QUALITY

The return the
 target of the American
 JUMBO

ARITHMETIC

atmosphere was likewise
 thick and PAD footy best

125 SHEETS 5 1/2-IN. x 8 1/2-IN.

and on the side of the

M-2550

Chanderstorm soon clear

BRADNER CENTRAL CO. CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60608

def. li decreased on 27
not to afford a c. increase?
seem for any movement
eastward without the rest
of any churning movement
which happens on the
calmest weather is that
location. That why many
believe it formed between
the two thunderstorms
and not from the roof of
the thunderstorm. So it is
believed the current of
winds stream run almost
between the two storm
with a bombom
safely that nothing
could expect or believe
and no words ever at
the latter beginning
of the formation before
the belly breaking
horror that the roof of the

unfolding wind abbl 21.21
between the ground was
some equal by the
loudst and most dreadful
catastrophe not that the
news being heard there
and many miles off
already and the water in
was of such an extent
after the so cloud bubbles
explosion that anything
in the path was
either absorbed or swept
away and carried
through the air and blew
blowing to pieces by whirlwind
vortex. This could
have had happened at the
flux of the atmosphere
maybe in the beginning
off from the beginning
happened the flux of
the storm 21.21

Do you think 2122
they'll be able to
solve the mystery "
I should hope so. Mr
Powers but I can distinguish
from myself that it is
by no means certain
that unfortunate horror
of the convent and the
conflagration, also the big
Dinner building and the
supermarket will tell
terribly against suspect
Pee and though I am
perfectly sure that his
account in all the
paper and magazines
of what took place is
correct. There is nothing
to confirm it that
Suspect Pee was just an
ordinary storm. It is just

the story they will 2123
that all people will
get up the account for
the unusual force and
fury despite how wide
it was of course if
the Assembly is true then
as well as all the
Scientific do the suspect
would be certain that
it was really a real
supernatural storm but
I have been trying
to see facts not out of touch
as if it was something
from another world and
I can't say what real
decision I should come
to in such a case.
The explanation by the
Chief Engineer Mr Ellison
of how the convent
was constructed, and what
happened shows there was

2124
something very decided
decidedly wrong with Quaker
Pe for her to have such
immeasurably irresistible force
and strength. She of
of course the high honor
of this important structure
that had been done
by her will cause an
awful opinion to be
given of her and that
the fact also being
it is no longer known
the whole of Chesterbrook
and wife and all shipmen
on the river and what
she did to the roadbed
and its railroad
track and the immense
cloudy ones from
floods of evidence
whatever connecting her
in any way what has
been done and therefore

2125
must count immensely
in the fact that she
was the most terrible storm
in all record.
Annabelle met food
she then addressed the
assembly and then commenced
discussed upon what
Quaker was and
described upon the manner
of the press which she
said was unapproachable
in any description
whatever. That Quaker
was something
much more than a
turnout on that same
thru off the course
from Gleason City much
higher the mauler
fury was like enough
but the burning out

2126
of the belly of the cloud
might have affected
the also as to causing
her to go right mad
and probably it was
there that she first
got her mental
conduct of which you have
heard. So you think
we could dismiss from
our minds the question
of the riding, collisions
with Western Gleason
a few hours before
which made the change
in course from
deflection and head
mound only for the
Gleason Canyon?
Well it is impossible
for us to do so and now
you have heard that

2127
she turned out something
far worse than any tornado
not bastards that you
have heard and seen what
it did to the convent
and other buildings
and along what track it
also did to the city
of Charleston and
that the evidence was
so strong that even
old Mather nature
could not withstand it.
What kind of a storm
really was it?
I have that Mr. Ellises
has told you nothing
that is more changed
the mind in his
explanation of how the
convent was constructed
but after the evidence
of what Charles P. ...

close the mind 2128
immeasurable fiery and
which he often works
told how things were
done you will readily
understand what no real
stress can be laid
upon this. The awful
catastrophe which wiped out
so many of our dearest
friends is not unusual
some represent it much
worse than even an
atmosphere explosion or
the death cloud that
wiped out St Pierre
and eight ships in
the harbor. So the
is really highly im-
portant in as much
as has we find
that all the upper part
of the convent with
all its inmates escaped

to have disappeared it
into the air on 2129
has we find again
that the Angel Guardian
cathedral, the St. Roman
building and the mighty
superior and superintended
have not really
been wiped out not quite
just as it wiped out
the Glenora Canyon.
It is also clear that
something decidedly was
wrong with St. Basil
on the Apple Pie of May
It also is clear and
full of bloom that the
bad construction men
from Chicago and
New York not now young
would make a
moment of the construction
of the convent and

Therefore was not 2130
likely to have come
down for nothing, provided
with a stone return
store of building material
had they not known
from other workers well
acquainted with the
construction of the Conserv
of the steps that would
have to be taken not
forward before a com-
pletion of the work could
be affected into the
night construction you
will therefore see the
importance of
the point and how
might Swastika Pie des
trayed everything and
it seemed impossible
that anything could ever
only slightly useful the
Comment What was the

the matter with the P 2131
What happened to the
after the it was forced to
disappear away from Geason
city? I am perfectly
ready to admit nothing
of that kind the evidence
of what sort of storm
Swastika Pie really was
might be wholly of a
circumstantial nature but
after all the awful de-
struction all accomplished
shows that from the
nature of the case it
is necessary that it
should be so. Had the
storm been just an
ordinary tornado and
not the strange cyclone
also was it probable
that much more
evidence would have

been forthcoming 2132
to show what was really
was. It is however
for you to weigh the
probability of Lee
case you have to consider
the claim which have
had info on you as to
Lee connection of Lee
Tormado with the record
of passing first hand
down on this wild story
of what it is said it
formed whether the true
story is the more
probable."

Dean then summed
up with a strong bias
against Swathie Pie. He
told them that evidence
of what Swathie Pie
really was of course of
importance but that

all was really 2133
an evidence Tormado on
the explosion of Lee almost
done could not be raised
upon too far the fore
man on the construction
crew was undoubtedly
to be undelivered and
well conducted but
really unfortunately ex
perience had told her that
no one yet no matter
who so even has yet
ever constructed a building
that could really stand
a serious burst of any
kind. The convent proven
it strongly built as
it was. Stress has
been placed by Lee
convent upon the fact
that the Tormado was
not known at any

Wrote to him 2134
consulted with the rear of
the first thunderstorm
or between them but
this after all was only
negative evidence, affairs
of the sea or weather
conditions were always
conducted with foreboding
and hitting at random
but Sweet Pe from
Gleason city kept on a
straight course all the
way across the country,
and had one of the
most lowered barometers
come down from Chicago
or other cities as was
probable enough to make
inquiries as to what
Sweet Pe's first road
was to show the storm
in the nature would not

made himself 2135
conscious. They had
heard the storm
storm while Sweet
Pe was really a storm
or an explorer of the
atmosphere and must
judge for themselves but
he agreed with the counsel
that the fact that the
storm had blown out of
the cloud about halfway
and that at the time it
bounced off Gleason city
and missed the Gleason
Asylum and probably
helped it out could not but
have an influence upon
them much while the
came from the rear of the
first thunderstorm or
not might be at the
same time he would tell
them that if they have

a doubt in Lee 2136
much about what
Sweetie Pie really was
it was Lee duty to prove
against her as he was
cyclonic storm "that
he would had ever seen
or dreamed of".

There really was an
unusual buzz of talking
in the Assembly Hall after
his statement and
accusation against Sweetie
Pie. Opinion
became divided as to
what the decision would
be. When Paulsen
sat down the general
opinion was that Sweetie
Pie was just some
unusually strong tornado
a little too wide for
herself. But the speech at

2140
the assembly returned
into the meeting hall
The men should for order
and there was not a real
sound heard as the President
told me that they were
not agreed upon their
decision.

Then you must go back,
gentlemen unless you are,"
I said

We are studying the
book and are eleven on
way and no the other,
What that do you mean?
"No sir" I said you must
be more men."

The Assembly
man again raised
not from 7 and the
Council not had place
went off to dine at the

Hotel and all Lee 1241 ~~1241~~
public dropped and dropped
out not yet. Two hours
later as the Assembly did
not return the Assembly
Hall not yet was closed.
At nine o'clock not
showed up in the
morning a clerk not
sterile ended.

The Assembly have
come back into the
Hall and said to me
"They are going to return
a verdict not such."

Reuben was again in
his own seat the
seats open to the Assembly
men and public noticed
quickly filled as the
news spread through
the town not night yet.

Annabelle and Lee 2137
summing up of the state
had caused a reaction
and few doubted now that
Sweetie Pie was something
far more terrible. So I
myself thought I was
and I felt that
standing there the thought
of the frightful death
of my wife and children,
the killing of the father
and the mother going
unseen from the shock
of the loss and being
put into an insane
asylum. It was an unjust
shot to me too I
was always in the habit
of what I called anger
me and living by
myself and I relapsed
there waiting for the

for Lee decision 2139
I tried to put myself
in Lee position of the
Assembly and I feel that
in what case I should
have difficulty in coming
to a decision, why
should such an awful
calamity have to happen
which was Lee's matter
with either Lee near of Lee
Lauriston or the atmosphere
condition between
the two rooms? The
men of Lee Assembly
conducted loyalty for
nearly an hour when
expressed their desire to
retire. It was not until
the lamps had been
lighted as no electricity
could be obtained
for electric light that

the summer time. In the 7m 2144
the winter the northeast sometimes
gives us those crazy traffic tying up
blizzards and drought in the summer.
Ever now our task is not half accom-
plished against this conflagration.

"We are quite certain" said Roguet,
that if we could get northwest of all
this we could discover the heart of the
conflagration, for in all its furious spread
after we were driven back three times
it used the preternatural means that
it stole from Mother Nature. The
fire may have added to these things
but it is the foundation of all its
work."

"What means do you suggest for our
getting around to the northwest of this
fire now?"

Roguet hesitated to reply for he
had not ~~exactly~~ considered what could
be done to reach the northwest of
it. If Kaliko, Daniel John Manley and
Jim Scarron were unable to solve
the important problem of the
northwest, there was little chance
for us to succeed. All other farmers
whose property was not demolished by the
explosion were greatly frightened by
the immense magnitude of the great

246 - conflagration but realized that an attempt was being made to overcome it. After Stevens foreman coming up to us had told of Saliba's attempt to prevent his flaming hell from our cutting him and Reguat had told about the flaming expedition, and my plan to go get northwest of it, a serious consultation was held as to how to get an attack on its northwest edge.

"Stevens has tried everything in his power and every way to worst it" said the foreman, but the fire is doing a concentration now and using a very unusual movement because of this northeast wind, which we do not at all understand. The fire seems to have prepared her concentration in such a way that this northeast wind is necessary for it to accomplish its designs and the northeast ~~and~~ winds are a hindrance to us."

"That is a method a northeast wind will do" I declared regretfully.

"Stevens can do no more" continued the foreman to me "so I wish you would try what you can now accomplish or allow us to with- draw"

First then let us visit the north

west section which I am told 246 has not been reached by the flames yet."

We made that swift trip by horse drawn wagons but when we arrived we all were puzzled by what we saw. The fire nearest us had in the fields took the shape of a vast burning cross.

At the moment I happened to turn around and saw solid ranks of well equipped men in coming on a long line of horse drawn flat wagons. Also a line marched on both sides of the wagon. So great were their numbers that they quickly filled the complete roadway like an army. It was evident they were perfectly trained for they came in straight rows rank after rank with their fire fighting weapons held erect and true as if awaiting but the word of command to level them and work them against their fire foe. A tall man came up to me and said:

"We are from Ottawa Eastern Town & Falls and Rock Island. My name is Donald Ivanado Aunard. This is a small part of an army of fire fighters no conflagration has ever dared to fight me and no hell's fury even will no matter how powerfully it will try opposition."

2147 Soon the field near by was filled with the men rank after rank standing in orderly array, their fire fighting weapons poised as if ready for the fight but awaiting my word of command. I saw at a distance the fields of fire were distorted with fiery inferno like rage, most dreadful to behold, and wondered if even these reinforcements could prevail.

As this army filed through the fields in their great numbers and march also down the roads led by Donald they filled the road and formed into platoons. Their leaders stood still near me until they were told what to do next. I could see that now the distant flames burned so fiercely and made attempts to cross the wide breaches so fiercely and threateningly that the forefront of Kaliko men drew back in alarm. Yet Elvern rallied them who were confused by this incident and they formed a fighting front again and struggled on, even though it seemed as if the air was hotter than blue flames. I even feared astonished at the apparent headway of the fire.

"Retreat!" cried some one in the distance in a loud voice. "We are now

overwhelmed and in danger 2148 of being trapped"

"Go long!" answered Kaliko. "I've no orders to fall back. I may promise me more reinforcements and I see them getting all ready over there and he always keeps his promises."

I then ordered Amos Amos to rally forth and the forefront of his men dashed furiously upon the foe, plowing through the fields in front of it. All the wheat in the front row was cut away like so much wheat before the cyclone, most of the men however could not go through the new wheat as they wished for fast speed, as it was very thought tough going so the fire gained more headway. But by that time the workers had cleared away much more wheat than before.

Then the conflagration moved yet so furiously forward and threw such heat that wheat 60 feet away on the opposite side of the breach began to smoke, and it looked like as if Kaliko men were helpless to fight any longer in spite of the forefront reinforcements. All because of that damn northeast wind.

I had left my post and pressed through my own warriors to the front

2119 I don't know what was going on but as I faced the fire trying to cross the breach and other batches of fire the main conflagration as if aroused to action by the northeast wind drew forward towards the west and hurled itself straight at that section of the breach. It struck the edge of the breach squarely, spread along its edge and covered that territory with a sea of high blood red leaping flames.

"Help Help" screamed Kaliko.

"It's trying to cross. Fight it for your lives" shouted Stevens in a voice of fear and excitement. "Stop it."

And how all of us did fight like crazy. The fire fighting warriors fairly plowed forward in their efforts to hold back that fatal fire, and those who could not get at it near the breach or rush on through the threatened wheat, attacked the inferno on the left wing. It was the most desperate fight as all of Aucasco men joined in. Even while some one else was yelling for help, the wheat fire on the fire's front became clear of all that section of heat, and before the fire

2450
rallied to a new assault on managed to leap the gap at the center. I never saw anything like it before. I threw all the snow of Aucasco and my men against the fires plunk where their attack made with blinding fury of madness smashed through entirely. The flames were unable to advance or even retreat because of the viciousness of the assault while the fighters howled screamed and yelled and sung in object exultation.

Just then a former by the name of Chief Stewart rushed to the assault with his men and began mopping away through the actual burning fields. The fire crept back to the south like a whipped dog bemoaning his defeat. A large number of the warriors followed in full chase with all their equipment working. It was I who led this assault to prevent this front from rallying and reforming. Instantly the former warriors pushed on in such numbers and with such utmost madness that the inferno lost all means to hold ground and retreated madly to the rear before the storming attack, and refused to advance again.

2457 at another part of the battle front
2456 a great wall of flame confronted
the fighters there and stopped their
progress. Yet they struggled most
desperately and made attempts to forge
ahead. And in one way they succeeded in
defeating the purpose of the
fighters, for while the flames could
not forge ahead, it spread out two ways
and also surged towards the southwest
and was now a conflagration of an
enormous size, bigger than the
other fire had been and this it was
able to accomplish with the help of
the northeast wind.

And the fire was not moving
slow as some wheat field fires do for
the fire was terribly increased by the
northeast wind. To save himself
itself from being conquered it made
a fierce fight and spread its
west and south wings with the
flames rising high in the air and
surged towards the fighters with
redoubled fury.

Chief Steward had meant to
command his men to storm the
east wing, but in his excitement
he forgot to put in the reserves
and now the fire storm was not
a small one any more. But

lime struggled forward most 2457
desperately, but at sight of the
monster fire, he nearly lost his
balance. As for Manley and John
Scanlon after one horrible glance

rather awful fire of nothing war 2452
hell. Its size and flaming fury made
the conflagration most dangerous but
the men were not afraid when it
came surging towards them
from left right and center.

The men made a sudden counter
attack on all their numbers and
ranged full upon the front of the
fire wall. Then began a desperate
struggle. The fire was as fierce and
strong as any section of the blaze,
and in size it was considerably
bigger than the fire beaten along
the other part of the battle line.

Yet at the first furious charge the
men bore the conflagration back to
the rear, their gunny sacks going like
the wind, but the giant conflagration
got fire, and ~~swayed~~ ^{swayed} ~~swayed~~
to the east ~~even~~ against the east wind

The glowing glare of the flames
rolled with the smoke filling the
air with a strong pungent smell

2455 at another part of the battle front
2456 a great wall of flame confronted
the fighters there and stopped their
progress. Yet they struggled most
desperately and made attempts to forge
ahead. And in one way they succeeded in

beating the fighters back full well 2453
whenever they attempted to rally to the
assault. It looked very doubtful here.
for it seemed hopeless to oppose the
power of the conflagration and knew their
only hope lay in instant action. So
as I had planned the main assault
was reserved to the mouth of
the Gehenna.

"Here we whipped I'm afraid" I said to my-
myself blinking my eyes between shock
and consternation. I tried to understand
what it was all about and just then there
came a surge of searing unbearable heat
and in towards Chief Steward came
a monstrous wall of flame.

"Here's the worst of the fire"
yelled one of the foremen, and spreading
his lines of men rushed to the
right to face the giant conflagration.

Benny another foreman had by this

he forgot to put in the reserves
and now the fire stream was not
a small one any more. But

Line struggled forward most 2457
desperately. But at sight at the
monster fire, he nearly lost his
balance. As for Manley and John
Scanlon after one horrified glance
they relined their men and had
them dash in the only direction open
to them straight into the unburned
wheat. Connelly was going to retreat
but Manley cried "Wait" as the
fire was shooting a long tongue of
flame from its main inferno towards
a breach.

He was so close that the fire
ringed his hair and the smoke
blackened his eyes.
"Oh hurry" begged Scanlon "here it
comes"

At another time we would have
admired or pause to admire the
great sea of wheat, but with this
hissing fire threatening to cross
the breach we scarcely glanced
at the fields of untouched wheat.

We also rushed through the
center and it was no easy task
surging through the wheat.

The glowing glare of the flames
rolled with the smoke filling the
air with a strong pungent smell

2456 smell till the odor was a
million leaves of bread smok-
ing at one time - at every surge
poor manley would wince and
shudder

"One spark and the wheat across
the breach will be a ash heap" he
groaned.

"What shall we do now?" wailed
John Scanlon stopping in dismay for
he and his men had come to a
most hottest part, and could fight
on no further.

"I don't know what a real forest Ran-
ner would do," panted Scanlon glan-
cing around desperately "but I'll do
something. Quick try to check it
here if possible. Give it all your worth."

There was just time for Manley
and Chief Steward to hurl their
men against it in the foreground
before the inferno flung itself
for the breach.

"Where's Kaliko" cried Manley as
Chief Steward placed his battle
line bravely between the red surge
and the breach.

"If possible turn the fires
left flank. Do you want it to
burn all this field to ashes"
shouted Scanlon to his foremen.

2457
warring his long scythe
boldly at the burning wheat
"Can't this blasted fire burn without
smoking so much? P-hew!"
"No fire burns without smoke" some
one said. "Maybe there is a way to get
around around the left flank without
facing all this unbearable heat"

"Sets look" proposed Chief Steward.
Hurriedly they circled one entire side
of the fields without success.
Gazing straight up from fresh fields
was a what seemed to be a wall of
white smoke

"I wonder what's beyond that?" I
muttered looking at it thoughtfully.

"White smoke doesn't bother me so I'll
take a look" said a foreman and before
I or Roquat could stop him, he rushed
through the smoke and disappeared with
a sharp cry of distress. Roquat rushed
forward.

"He gone and he'll perish wailed
Roquat dolefully. I feel almost as up-
set as Roquat for even in this short
time I had grown fond of this
foreman. As we discussed in very
anxious tones what we had better
do, he reappeared through the
shroud.

"Come on" he shouted to his men

"Fight through before it gets to 2455 this breach. It's liable to cross it" It is men plunged through the wheat they rushed through just in time for the terrible thickness of the smoke and the heat of the rush of flames near by too their breath, and many men too were so overcome with exhaustion that they had to fall back to cover to take well needed rest.

One was so tired he was limp and helpless. And yet as the gunnery sappers went desperately to work and also the bucket brigades steam came rolling in hot clouds towards us.

"Faster! faster! You too go on with the fight urged Manley. "I'll try and and stop it along my front "Hurry forward" Get at it."

And how they worked It was our determination that it'll not burn across the breaches made by the others with such tough grueling work. With the stifling steam curling around our heads we fought and attacked as never before, all the way through and along the edges of the breaches and fought and worked forward headlong through another stretch of wheat that threatened to catch fire

between two breaches Kaliko 2459 realizing that they could never outmaneuver the conflagration unless he acted very quickly. flung his bucket brigade directly in its path first blocking the cycle and scythe men to his center and right.

We had almost reached Breach No 2 before a parching wall of flame appeared at the head Eight times as furious as other parts of the conflagration, the fire came burning on like the speed of an express train - I dared not look forward and even Ruggado felt that nothing could save the untouched wheat now.

Yet without plan or hope we really fought with the fury of utmost desperation, and stubborn dare devil recklessness bravery, till an ear-splitting screech yell, howl and scream of wild exultation brought us to a surprise.

"You look" begged Raquel covering his eyes with both hands. Expecting almost anything I looked and then instantly gave a great shout of relief.

"The inferno's stuck I cried exuberantly.

And so it was a few yards beyond

2160 the edge of the forward breach
It was absolutely impossible for
it to even cross, even though it
was sending up cloud after cloud
of sparks. It was caught also between
two other breaches, jammed between
both and even was falling back.

So fast and desperately had Kalibo
and the rest of us been attacking
they we scarcely noticed we
had been carrying all before us,
and so fast had to the men
under Manley, Ruggedo, and the
others been fighting their way
forward, that they too were carry-
ing all before them before
they had time to stop themselves.
Victory appeared in the offing.

"A narrow escape for our part of
the fields, but not for the fire"
remarked Roquat in a muted
whisper.

Scarcely able to see through the
thick smoke and steam the checker
fire was sending out and almost
deafened by the exultant cries and
yells of the wave of fighters my
forces and those of Ruggedo, Green
and Carter, Teddy, Reddy and the
others fought manfully on along
our own front. The inferno here

too was coming to a stop 2161
halt. But how it did smoke and
steam and also loudly hiss-
after several attempts to counter charge
the fire came to an abrupt stop.

"Idiot hissed Ruggedo to Owens who
held back the fire also." "Why you did
not ask Stevens and get to help us?"

"I did declared Owens promptly "as
soon as Jim was along his own
fighting front, Stevens and get
will send men to our assistance
destroy the conflagration and restore
the burned acres."

Even I was silenced by this sur-
prising news while my men began
to cheer loud and lustily. Only I
and Ruggedo seemed still disturbed.

"I'm not too over confident yet" I
exclaimed anxiously. "Quite a number
of times we have won against the
fire, while it turned tail and
got the best of us else where. This
may happen again. I don't trust
this alternate business of this
fight. But we must save
the wheat fields right here at
any cost."

Owens worn and weary from his
exertions fairly blinked with as-
tonishment at my words for he

2152 I knew nothing of the stakes -
mates, but he realized that
he would be severely whipped
by the inferno if Stevens did
not send the promised aid soon.

I myself felt that the inferno had
had probably devoured four acres
along his front, his men were also
in danger of being repulsed but
resolved for the present to save
the rest of the wheat. His men
were fighting as they never did
before. Yet Owens and a small pla-
toon of his men had withdrawn
for a while for a well needed rest.

Slinking down under an wrecked
Elm tree he mopped his hot sweat
covered brow with a cloth and
cursed his own stupidity. Why had
he not asked Chief Steward
also to help him.

He sank exhausted on the
roadbed against the tree. Then
Stevens and his men appeared,
and many others who had
been rested, moved by such
bravery dashed hurriedly after
them. Reinforcements at last.
And how they did throw them-
selves into the fray. Their
attack came with such suddenness

and fury that the flames 2153
here were beaten back.

"We ought to be first at this work"
announced Stevens "but beware don't let
it trick us now, because when we
got this success now, we'll toss the
fire off the ground, we'll sh. gunny
sack it to shredded bits we will -"
Stevens got no further for at this
junction, there was a strange sparkle
two hundred feet away and flash
as the flames made a desperate attempt
to rally, and then such a deafening
roar and grind that I toppled over
like a ten-pen. and Ruggado clapped
both hands to his ears.

The last thing I remembered
was an ear-splitting explosion, a
cloud shooting upward a thousand
feet upward, a terrible tumble
a terrific upheaval and a sudden
shock of finding myself crash-
ing among the wheat before me.

Choking from powder smell of
smoke and spluttering I rose to
my feet and strode forward
valiantly. Yet I had a strange
feeling for a minute of being
born swiftly upward and a
strange invisible force pushing me
forward, a force relentless that was

2155 dragging me along as if twirling
the great cloud of black roll-
ing smoke, I threw myself down
and lay for several minutes when
as I got up the same strange invisible
force that seemed to have swept me
forward thrust me back against the
tree near by and held me there.

Soon I found some one support-
ing me with one arm and helped
me to sit down on a log.

Blinking and gasping for I
had inhaled a dreadful dose of
powder smoke I tried to look
for the fighting lines. But there
was no sign of them giving way
they were fighting harder than
ever, and platoons were rushing
elsewhere to prevent or stop
new fires.

Too exhausted to ask questions
I sat quietly on the log.

"Now I must go and put the
rest of the men into action" said
Ruggero.

I smiled faintly too shocked
and shaken to say a word, and
Ruggero was off. But the
warm sunshine and bracing
northeast wind soon restored
me to my self. I wondered

how I had found myself 2156
lying in the field and whether
others had been blown among
the wheat with me, I found that
part of the fire trying to countercharge
had struck more munitions, and
blew tons of flaming wheat all
over to a great distance starting new
fires, and hurled me around like I
was a scarecrow stuffed with straw.
The explosion blew me clear across
the field. The cloud still there
looked like a red brown thunder
head more than a thousand feet
high and three hundred wide.

The explosion had effects on others
for others also fell head long and Owen
and Kaliko also lay face down among
the wheat. Kaliko first got up or was
first up also first down again for no
sooner did they rise and try to walk
forward before they were violently
flung on their noses.

I can't stand at all said Owen
after his sixth tumble "I can't stand
this," he looked appealingly at me
Neither can I" confessed Kaliko trying
to wriggle backwards without getting
up. But for a moment this proved im-
possible and finding they could not

2137 move backwards or even forward so the three sat up and looked blankly at one another. We became also aware of the greatest clamor and confusion everywhere.

It really was awful discord. I groaned and put my fingers in my ears.

I learned later that rocks, large lumps of dirt and clouds of wheat were thrown as far as the furthest farm-house farmhouses by the explosion, and wheat grain and barley all burning shot over the entire wheat territory.

Some of us had been stunned by the terrific force of being flung about by the shock but none of us were hurt. Recovering I looked inquiringly around.

By this the fire has again covered a lot of ground. Coughed Owens making an unusual unsuccessful effort to rise. "Shake me up Kaliko. I feel as flat as a futter. Are you all right. Manley?"

"I've a skinned knee" answered Manley calmly but that a small price to pay for fire fighting. This is a curious fire my friend. He observed turning to me. "Any more explosions and we might as well call off the fight."

But it was not to be. 2158 A great number of Edwin Gunter men rushed around a point and hurled themselves forward to attack the fire there. So sudden and unexpected was the appearance of these men, ^{that} Abernethy with some of the spirit and courage that had distinguished in his youth with a hoarse scream of command hurled his men also to a storming assault and this scene was worth making a picture of.

This gigantic body of men tore their way through gunny sacking like mad and hurling themselves through the full length of the line.

"We must win" cried Kaliko also active as the flames began to waver and fall back from the general assault. "Nothing can stop us now."

One thing I forgot to relate about this last explosion a fractured occurrence and accident and this concerns a man by the name of Trasher.

The concussion sent one of the horses flying loose from the harness and tumbling head over heels upon the ground and broke one of its legs and ripped the left ear. The explosion also sent a lag fragment of something through the air swift and resistless as a ball from a cannon. The object

21598 not recovered struck the
second horse on his left
shoulder and sent it rolling over,
and over and those who observed this
were horrified by this ungracious
at the explosion had been guilty and
yet while it was in operation the shock
also tipped the thrasher over on its side and
the man running it was severely
injured and had to be taken to Chester
bourn to be hospitalized hospitalized -

"I've got to say something sensible about
this" I exclaimed "I'm afraid it would
be foolish for us to take too much
chances. because I have sense enough
to know that another explosion would
raise a row. But don't try to make
out that they're all exploded. I do
imagine these explosives are scattered all
over the fields. We are taking an awful
chance. Yet I still refuse to give up
unless the conflagration actually gets out
of control totally. If we could detect
those damn explosives then probably
we could prevent the blasts. These
explosives came from the Army
at Zaneville shipped out and sent
out of existence by the Germans.

Only God knows where the others
not exploded yet lay scattered
on the path of this fear. And
I must say we are in a very

dangerous situation because 2160
of this. But since this last blast
but killed some of us around like
ten pins I will tell you all where
this munition works was!"

My nearest leaders suddenly became
quiet and I continued in a calm yet
shaky tone of voice:

"I will confess that it stood on the
northeast of Zaneville but three miles
beyond the town itself. I have
seen it often. It was a hundred and
foot long building nearly thirty feet
high but all one long fifty foot
foot wide room inside with all means
to make the explosives. It had
on both sides windows seven feet
wide and twenty high. The walls
were a little more than two feet
wide and built of oblong shape stone,
no brick. It had two hundred
and fifty workers. They disappeared
with the building. It had steel
frame work roof.

How the winter wiped out strong
building, sweeping it out of existence
I don't know and never will know.
And how far the munitions are scattered,
and where they are only God knows.

But I know for sure a godly
number are scattered among the

2162 wheat and in the burning debris too. The flames have occasionally burned up to one of them and set off the explosion. And I suppose a good number of them are lying scattered over the fields yet I'll tell you very truthfully one more big explosion, and I'll call off the fight.

I know all were astonished at this news I was much surprised to find out that this was really true in spite of the fact that there was no trace of the remains of the Army.

Another thing I learned. One of the explosives was inside of a farm house a half mile away and the owners had fled and no one would go within three miles of it. I was told also two explosives were imbedded in the big hay hill, and one in the Wecker castle.

How many were slain in the wide spread fields could be a guess. Therefore even the lowest of the fighters preferred not to associate with that territory.

All fighters were forbidden under penalty to wander near or around the wreckage windows still burning fiercely and made to stay a mile away

from it. The warriors 2163 now frightened of the danger of losing what they had gained fought against the conflagration like a stampede.

All the others followed as quickly as they could at every fighting front.

Now under Owen's Ruggedo. Ruggedo cut away everything along the line and all the other platoons rushed after them scattering through the fields slashing and cutting all before them while the advance guards of the fire met a vicious savage storm of dripping gummy sachs, pails of mud water and water soaked sand, and they the scythen were so quick they outdistanced all the rest. A storm of fury seemed to have overtaken all these fighters who tore into the terrible conflagration like a hurricane.

But still the fire stood its ground, even though the slashers fought right and left clearing a way through the wheat and grain and barley and scattering the tangled barriers so quickly and completely that those with sachs and buckets were able to fight their way through the burning front of the inferno at the speed of a fast walk. Along a long front the wheat seemed to melt away

1164 before them and the lines
fast of men chopped out and out so
fast that you could only see the
in twinkling of the scythes and
or other cutting weapons. Then suddenly
a long breach was open to them, but
though the fire was not able to
cross it refused to be driven back.
The fire was stuck fast all right and
what a heat it threw towards us.
5 centuries I felt we may as well
go home for it seemed no power
of our assaults can save the entire
countryside. When it appeared we were
winning an explosion would occur,
and start new fires by scattering
flaming wheat far and wide.

I even now believed a heavier
heavy rain would have no power
to destroy or put out this dreadful
conflagration.

Again I repeated that let there
be another explosion and I'll call
off the fight."

"Do you think Henry" said
Ruggado that Owens was right in
saying that no one now can ever
whip the fire?"

No I don't think he was right
in saying that I answered grinning
but it is possible that some

that last explosion the 2165
fire was added again by far blowing
burning wheat and the fire will
now will be harder to overcome than

I expected I'll do my best of course
and no one can do more than his
best. But yet I tell you let there be
another explosion and we'll leave
the rest to the mercy of the flames.
I intend to go up to the Wucher Castle
and from there scout, and see how
wide spread this Gehenna. From that I
can make my best plans."

That I know didn't exactly relieve
my anxiety or Ruggado either but
he said nothing more and I Ruggado
Roguet and Jim started for the
hill on which the Wucher Castle
stood."

"It's wrecked totally now" exclaimed
Roguet.

"Yes I see" I replied nodding I the shock
of that word drew false false blow
did it."

"That's queer" remarked Ruggado. I didn't
think so strong a structure could be
demolished by an explosion shock."

By horse drawn wagon across the field
not yet touched by the blaze we arrived at
the foot of the hill and in half
an hour reached the summit. by the

2166 path leading upward, tell the
"Go back down and tell the
line of men to the extreme west
to get the hell away from there for
the fire is moving from two directions
and will trap them" I said to a foreman
"It may take a little time to get there
on the fastest horse but something must
be done to save them. Sucky I came
up here and could see that"

The man went as fast as his
horse would take him.

I said to my followers:-
"It may take a little time to ascertain
the extent of this fire for this nearest
sea of it is new to me and I shall
have to experiment. But I hope he'll
hurry as fast as his horse can run."

"Be one" exclaimed Ruggado "I'm
afraid we'll have to quit after all."

"We can see from here the fire
covers an awful large magnitude of
territory"

That made me blush for it did
shame me to think that all the
men we now have have not
fighting power equal to that of
the conflagration.

"I won't give up yet unless another
explosion decides me" I said. "for
I know a lot of forest fighting

that can't equal this and 2167
which I haven't yet tried, I don't
know what size the conflagration
extends from the new even up
here because the sea of smoke ob-
scures everything and covers the sky
like a big storm cloud, or what its
spread is, but I do know that I
can force back to even extinction
any fires known to all fire
fighters, and observers that ever fought
fires out in the open that does as
this one does now. It's like unlocking
a door of your room all you need
is to find the right key?"

"What about you - haven't the right key
with you?" suggested both Ruggado and
Roguet together. "What then?"

"Then we'll have to make the
key" I answered.

Kuliko came up the hill to me
and said to me

The fighters are over exhausted over
there along my fighting front because
the fire is increasing every damn
minute just now when I left
them they were almost prostrate
with fatigue. I threw in rein-
forcements to relieve them but
I don't think they can stay the
fire from crossing the breach."

2168 I think I said reflectively
that John Kaine and ^{and William}
Schlöder better go with their reserves
to your assistance and fight to
better advantage. How did John Manley
and Donald Duncan get around to the
west flank?

"Down a side road on a field" answered
Kaliber. "They're over there now fighting
with all their might."

"I suppose you're not strong enough
to bring your fighters to the west
flank" are you? I asked Jim.

"No half of my fighters are also
down from exhaustion and I can't
get reinforcements" he said.

"I'll try to get my troops there
for you" said Roguet. "I'll admit
I'm dreadfully scared the fire may
try to trap me too but I'll try
to hold it back"

"Thank you my friend" I said.
All his men loaded themselves
quickly on a long line of flat wag-
ons and on they went as fast as
the horses could pull. Twenty
minutes later I saw his men
wading and ploughing through the
untouched wheat, and soon so strong
was their assault that they did
manage to prevent the inferno from

now from crossing the breaches. 2169
But then the fire was only at bay
though it had burned so much away
that its fury began to blacken so
what when the gunny rock and bucket
brigade taking advantage attacked it as they
never did before.

~~The~~ It began to yield and give way.
Yet I was shocked to see what an awful
extent the fire really was. To the
west and south it seemed to extend
for countless acres as far as
eye could see because of the immen-
se of smoke pierced by rolling sheets
of flame roaring awful high and
spreading over the sky beyond and
above us like a sheet storm
cloud.

"Some body said: 'If we can't stop
this there will be nothing left of
scores of miles of fields'."

"Be patient" I said.

The messengers had or could have
reached the endangered men in less
than half an hour at most and a
combined attack in front and rear
might have been concerted with the
others. Yet their leaders had seen the
danger, and felt there was no time
to spare for they imagined that the
fire would soon be reinforced which

2176 was fortunately impossible and they believed that as you could see it the conflagration was fortifying itself, which was no less an error. The main leaders in danger in being in danger of being trapped has been blamed not only for fighting this part of the dangerous inferno too soon but for fighting it at all.

Thus they could not choose. Right the flames they must, for the conflagration was now in a position to cut off all his supplies of fighting equipment. Their men were full of ardor and they had resolved to attack before their ardor cooled.

They spoke a few words to them in their keen vehement way. They all wanted the result with a composure which if not quite real was at least well intended.

The three thousand sent by Ottavio held the wheat with fierceness and fifteen hundred men surrounded all near by stretches of wheat, with scythes and other cutters in front and flank. Over all the near by fields from the north of grain barley and so on and the edge of wheat fields cutters slashed right and left incessantly

andly from the enemy of 2176. These men, who in battle had their positions were known and he for the lines to hold the fire in check. The fighting was liveliest on the fires left where bands of scythes and the men got along the edge of the fields whence they mowed down and laid low a considerable amount of wheat.

More men were called up from the rear. The wheat fields were taken and returned. Kaliko was everywhere. How cool he was and why his followers admired him. It was towards 7:30 o'clock when from the so high ground Kaliko on the edge of the line saw that the crisis was near. The inferno on the Albu line had formed itself into three mighty rear regulated in the center, regulated on right and left and advancing like a charging army.

This was the time the fighters were in danger of being trapped. Yet they did not retreat but in a few moments were in motion. They pressed on rapidly uttering loud shouts and working like dare devils.

Yet their ranks all ordered at the best were further confused by

2172 by the flanking movement of the fire. So the fighters after advancing a few rods halted and stood still. Yet their cannon assault had been delivered with remarkable precision. But the unbearable heat actually threatened many with heat prostrations, seared skin and burns, and so the advancing masses had stopped short and turned into a frantic mob, shouting, cursing and gestulating.

But reinforcements rallied them. The order was given to charge the flames. Then over the smoking fields rose the cheers of the men mixed with the fierce slogan yell of the fire fighting slogan.

Some of the corps pushed forward with scythes or cycles, some advanced with their gunny sack assault storm. Others drew their broadswords, and clashed on keen and swift as blood hounds.

At Kaliko right though the attacking column was broken to pieces by the fierce heat and counter charge of the fire a stiff resistance was kept up, chiefly it seemed by cutlers and slashers, and the bucket brigade

where they had fought steadily for an hour or more. Then Kaliko himself led the charge at the head of the gunny sack sack fighters. Then elsewhere as at this time the fire threatened to trap them men began to give way everywhere.

Like a ship at full career arrested with sudden ruin on a sunken rock the ranks of Kaliko staggered shivered before the dreadful heat and broke before that wasting storm of searing fire. Battalions of men resolved into a mob, order and discipline gone and when the flames reached the edge of the breach the masses were seen to cower and shrink with uncontrollable panic.

For a few minutes the left of the fighting line stood its ground doing swift and not ineffectual ineffectual success. Now showing cheer on cheer redoubling attack on attack they held, while the fire elsewhere drove the fugitives in crowds the fire advancing and sweeping the front before it. The order of the men burst all resistant. They broke into a run the fire chasing the flying multitude for half a mile. For a time never

243 2124 In the fire was victory,
more quick or more decisive.
But finally it came upon a gap
more than four feet wide
which it couldn't cross I assumed
a tone of confidence.

"The fire has got to the weak side
of us at last, but they got out of the
trap. We must crush that fire
with our numbers."

With head long haste a good portion
of my troops were pouring through
the wheat fields and gathering in
heavy masses near the wave of
retreating men. Our numbers gave
assurance of success, our triumph would
have been secure for now
the fighters amounted to seven
thousand one hundred men.

Five thousand of them the
hardy lasses of the town and
of La Salle were all inured to
battle and strong in the full
assurance of success.

It was eight o'clock and the
armies stood motionless each gazing
on the other. The clouds being
dark and at intervals warm
light showers descended besperrick-
ling both alike, but having
no effect on the inferno.

About ten after eight I could 2175
see from my high observation
Wache castle that all these
new troops appeared in rapid motion
They came on in three divisions along an
orderly front and working desperately
as they came upon the four foot breach.

Now for the fire all these men,
joined by the rallied troops of Kuliko-
was too much for it and it began to
yield. The men advanced and swept
the fire before them.

The fire lost all the ground it
had gained.

The fire however and
ever and increase fight up
to twelve thirty. Then the
reverse.

I thought Kuliko's men as I saw had the
the fire now beaten along his front for
today or even being whipped much further
every ten minutes. Ruggedo and Roquet,
besides I were not luck at all. Because
of heat, dense smoke and stinging
with bright and rain to burn its
way across the widest breach it
had actually drove us back full
well with thirty men so badly
burned they had to be shipped to
the Hospital at Chester Brown.

2176 My foreman came up to report the fresh spread of an actual herd of wheat fields afire along our battle front and they begged me to lose no time to try and outwit it or it will advance to the hay hill. There was no need for this advice, in a few minutes my horses were saddled to my long flat wagon and a long line of others and my followers in attendance.

Little Dord Dorothea and Angeline wished to accompany us but Buggado advised against it.

It was a right most grateful to me to witness the rally of my men, who with all their cutting weapons at the ready, to meet the most mightiest conflagration of the creation in hand to hand conflict.

It must be done as it was reported a dozen explosions were detected among that hay. Tackling through was very difficult as there was almost a total absence of rain and it was impossible to distinguish the flames through smoke clouds bigger than any from the biggest volcanic eruption. The greatest

greater part of twenty minutes passed in useless toil, and after finding a stream flowing through

the wheat fields backwards and 2177 forward several times we at length arrived at a large area of still safe wheat in a bend of the stream, that evidently will be overwhelmed when the fire would come up this surface of many acres was backed by a large distant surge of flame, if not stopped here good by hay mound, and what explosions there'll be.

Upon arrival at this spot the platoons of men who appeared to know every inch of the country declared that unless the fire would turn off its course which after all it was appearing to do, it must be close at hand near this territory.

We also were speculating upon the direction of the wind for should it shift to south west, or south it would surely be a blessing. The east wind though it protected the explosive sheds sent the main fire at 1700 it turned south the fire would be driven out of its course, and to its death. I ran off a sketch of the fire was marching majestically from a new course, towards the large area of wheat fields and broadly also stalked towards a small thick forest. Good night if it hits that.

2178 At that time we were stationed under cover of a high bank of ground that had been left by the retreating stream in sweeping around an angle. Even here we could feel the awful radiance. Smoke lowered and spread over head, making it like twilight. The burning bread like smell was strong, and almost suffocating. The question of attack was quickly settled, the 2nd south wing of the five moving westward was attacking slaking towards a new alfalfa field which was three hundred paces from the wheat, this intervening space was thick dry alfalfa that grew to the level of the small river.

It was a dangerous situation - yet I proposed that we should endeavor to attack that fire by cutting everything away along the edge of the river, under cover of a ground bank about three feet high, and that should the cutters and slashers fail, the bucket and gurney sack brigades should come on at full fighting speed, and cut off its advance towards the small forest, when they should have a chance of the cycle ruge and broad sword men, and men with other cutting weapons.

I must tell you the plan 2179
C Truth I almost cursed these farmers for only growing wheat - barley and so on and not fields of other crops. Then we would not have this vast field of heaven.

Accordingly I led the way followed by my head men Logual and Bluggedo and Jim. Florian the chief foreman accompanied us. Yet having the wind unfur and against us, we advanced quickly for about a quarter of the distance at which time we were a hundred and fifty yards of the fire cloud which had just arrived at the stream and commence to halt at a standstill.

The stream was forty feet wide. We now crept cautiously towards it, cutting wheat now right and left and forwards like as if our lives depended upon it. The ground bank had decreased to a height of about two feet and afforded very little shelter from the fearful dangerous flesh rearing heat. Still we crept on and just as we had made a gap fifty feet wide the flames raised its enormous columns, and for an instant seem to waver in its determination whether to retreat or come to a standstill.

2180 but as we still fought wards
it with shouts of exultation I
turned to our right at a good flaming
speed, but at the same moment, another
platoon of my men came cutting and
slashing across like grey hounds in
a course and wisely kept on a line
with the stream, they could cut off its
advance, and turning towards the fire
returned it with gummy sacks aided
by the bucket brigade. others confront-
ing it sword in hand.

At once the furious fire changed
straight at the human enemy, throwing
heat enough to bear you under, but
now came the very gallant but foolish
part of the fight.

Instead of leading the inferno accord-
ing to their usual method all the
men at the same moment, sprung to
a vigorous desperate counter attack,
and battled it with gummy sacks
mud water and sand.

In the way of this returning
counter attack I never saw anything
so magnificent or so abundantly
dangerous. The fire was made with
rage, and nevertheless it seemed
to know that the object of the
embattled men was to fight their
way behind it. Thus it avoided

with great dexterity turning 2181
as it were upon a pivot with
extreme quickness, and changing
the attacking with the retreating and oppos-
ing fury, at one section and then another
platoon of men actually driving them
back before its fiery fellell.

Quick as the fighters had been
they could not get behind it. In the
fury of excitement, a good number
had to be withdrawn scorched by
the heat that had turned their wet
clothing scalding hot.

The thickness, height and depth of
the wheat was in favor of the flames
and was so much against the men
that they avoided the charge of the
inferno with extreme difficulty.

It was with only by the most wild
determined pluck of all that they
valued after being driven back that
they ultimately saved each platoon
as their covering brigade invariably
dashed in at the flanks when the
fire changed those on the rally upon
which reaching the stream flowing
past there the very fire gave up
the onslaught and came to a stand
still, and then turned around on
its attackers.

During this time I had been hotly

2182 labouring through the heavy thick
at wheel, and shortly after I arrived
at the fight, the inferno charged
right through the fields, receiving a
immense resistance and at the
same time a right flank counter attack
of attack from Rayuat, when the fire
charged Jim, driving his men back
in panic and confusion, upon which
I was with great dexterity and
speed threatening to close in behind
them just in time to also turn upon
Ruggedo.

Unfortunately he could not deliver
the counter assault along the right
front, as the fire with increased speed
completely distanced the other field
fire, I charged through the fields
like a sea of hell fire and reached
the small woods driving us all
back like an army of men on the
charge. I myself had to be treated
for heat and scald burns.

A portion of this thick forest
of about two hundred acres upon this
side of the river was already a
flaming torch and the men who
were perfectly familiar with this
territory positively declared that it
was of no use to fight this
new fire as they had no forest fire
fighting equipment.

According to the map to 2183
to skirt the margin of the fields
fire and river near it which as it
made a bend at right angles com-
menced two sides of a burning
square. Upon reaching the fields by the
river side we faced an indescribable
heat and thunder headed clouds of
smoke a few hundred yards distant
which they were in the act of crossing
to the opposite side, to secure itself
in an almost impenetrable sea of wheat
and thick Lino Lhony hedges, and
a rag weed. Word of all thick hedges
of poison ivy was in its path.

All this would produce a poisonous
dangerous smoke, especially the poison
ivy.

And there was as it seemed no way
to stop it. The foremen because of
this extreme danger advised that we
should return to the ford that we had
already crossed, and by re-passing
the river through the field we
would most probably meet and
defeat the inferno, as it would
not leave that territory until
burned over.

Having implicit confidence of their
knowledge of the country I followed
their directions and we shortly

1194 afterwards recrossed the ford and arrived upon a very wide field of ragweed to our astonishment banked by wheat fields and a dense extensive thicket.

Ruggedo now took the management of affairs. We soon heard a strange crackling and sizzling also hissing on the distance to the right and Ruggedo assured us that as he had expected the conflagration was slowly and most hotly advancing along the back bank of the river and would pass exactly before us.

We fought desperately through the dangerous ragweed and the hissing in the distant flaming fields sounded closer as this front of the fire evidently approached.

What made the situation worse the strip of thick thorny hedge covert that fringed the margin was in no place wider than than half a mile beyond that the country was covered with parched grass from eight to ten feet high, raised for making of hay, and if the fire gets here it could never be driven back. In about a quarter of an hour or quarter to more we

heard, by the more in the fields and blood red rolls in the smoke about a hundred yards from the small river that the conflagration was directly opposite us; and it threw such a heat that we had to fall back for we couldn't face it. As our men fell back accordingly I instructed Ruggedo to creep quietly and carefully into the brush and to bring me information of the precise position of the conflagration.

In three or four minutes he returned he declared it would be impossible to ~~make~~ make an assault as the fire was so dense that it would overwhelm and trap the attackers but that I could use a rear guard action as that part of the inferno was close to us, he had seen it between us and the main body of the inferno.

I told Ruggedo to lead me directly to the spot and followed by Brown and Regual, and the utter and slashes with my gunny sack and bucket brigade. I kept within a foot of Ruggedo who led his men also through the fields, side wiping the main holocaust. We whole every body cut and slashed advanced steadily until Ruggedo stopped quietly to one side and pointed with his finger. I immediately observed the worst

2197 conflagration I had never beheld
booming up through wheat grass and
ragweed fields and through the
thick bushes about eight hundred feet
from us. It seemed absolutely impos-
sible to withstand it because of the record
breaking dreadful heat, but determined
to try fairly the what we called the
"forehead" stand, we kept our ground
and fired from some howitzer guns big
slabs of wet mud and sand and even
ground gravel.

These guns were sent from Sa-
rale and Ottawa, more than two dozen.
The stuff struck among the center of
the left of the fire surge. The only
effect was to make it stagger back-
ward, when in another moment it
rushed on burning all before it.
We fired all the howitzers at once
in a long straight line a little lower
than the first volley.

Slightly checked in its mad burn-
ing on onward sweep, it bucked towards
the dense fifteen feet ragweed, throwing
its fierce flaming columns about
and rearing high with its fiery
ragas.

A long line of gunnery men and
bucked men ran fighting straight
at it without waiting for orders or

in adroze made a most deliberate 2198
assault at the center, and once more
strode to stem through despite the
heat and smoke, the guns thundered
again, but the only effect was a
terrific decisive searing counter charge,
during Roguet and all his men fell back
back along his whole front, then
almost got hemmed in and had to
madly fight his way, and scores
were prostrated by the heat and
many others almost overcome by
the smoke.

I withdrew Roguet and his heat pro-
trated and smoke overcome to the rear,
having waiting doctors treat them and
in their place threw in reinforcements
and Carter Green and Reddy and sent a
swift messenger to ask if Kalibo
could send me men as a reserve
as he had the fire along his
front under total control.

Ruggado and his men too rushed
on and with one terrific charge
reversed the 'saw' of the right flank
Ragweed and grain blaze. But that
did not make the inferno help-
less. Then had made three wild
assaults so closely together all
along his battle line, that they
destroyed a space of fire of about half

2199. an acre or three and yet it
had failed to even bring the
inferno to a standstill. There
could no longer be any doubt
that all these desperate insane assaults
could not be relied upon although for the
fire so fatal along Kalikon fighting
front Oh again how I prayed for a
cloudburst. The occasion drizzle we
were having was the same as if it
wasnt raining at all.

I now reformed the men driven back
and the others scorched by the scalding
of their wet clothes and overcome by
smoke and heat prostration quitted the
fire fighting to retire to the shelter
of the railway roadbed, at doctor
orders, while the rest as they had
expected the conflagration had broken
cover through the smoke on the other
side of the fields, in which case the
inferno intended to give chase and
if possible to turn us back into the
flaming fields and engulf
us.

We accordingly at took our stand
on the extensive long open glade, and
I lent Flouan one of my double
lines, as he was provided with
only a single thin line, since so
many of his men had to

retire from what had been 2200.
related before. Ten minutes had passed in
suspense, when finally we heard a
enormous volume of wild cries of confusion
and excitement, on the other side of the
burning fields raised by the troop of
men who had been overthrown by the
fire, driven back, and in searing
heat and dense smoke driving itself
swiftly towards us.

For a few minutes a tremendous wall
of flames three acres long accompanied
by a cloud seen in a coming hurricane
and the continued shouts of the retreating
crowds of men, assured us that the fire
was sweeping on in uncontrollable fury
exactly in our direction. They were
apparently followed even through the
dense fields of wheat or flax too.
It seemed to me that despite the
wide long breach we made that
it could not be stopped at all no
matter what we did.

I called my officials together and told
them to stand fast, not to attack
and to bring on the reserves quickly
and we eagerly awaited the onset that
burned towards us like a fiery storm.
On the flames came burning every
thing before them and which to our

2201 unexpected astonishment apprehension
and honor secured across the breach.
Because of its overbearing heat.
For a moment the fields were totally
obscured in rolling flame and thick
walls of smoke a second later the
long flame storm headed by a most
high tower of fire seeming thousands
feet high surged forward upon us.

The great leader came surging
straight at us, and was received with
resistance right center and left from
a long wide platoon of men with all
the equipment fighters could have,
as fast as they worked with
them.

But the heat and furious rush of
the fire storm made us reel back-
wards for fifty yards but fortunately
the bend in the stream turned
it to the right and the center
like wise on the fierce heat would
have killed us all.

Now most of the men were
recoiling in panic and confusion
as no one could face that awful
fire hurricane though without wind.

My second double line was
rapidly deployed but it too could
not stand up against it. Their
wet clothing threatened to scald

them all, and all faced the 2202
danger of heat prostration or blistered
skin. The left wing of the fire storm
was charging headlong after its center
and right, and truly there was no with-
standing this and resistance was in vain.
I ordered a general retreat all along the
line. I shouted "Get on the heat will
kill you all" which would have been
true.

The retreating men reached the edge of
another wide breach made before by hun-
dreds and the men had all the true
qualities necessary for this desperate re-
treat and were most successful at it.

Now they reached the edge of the
breach five feet across more than ten
at other sections. As they swarmed
across one moment the fire paused
then because of its awful indescribable
heat started to gain the other side
while a shout of half admiration, half
of terror and consternation burst from
the retreating men and leaders.

On the other side of the breach
rose above them a high wall of hissing
snapping flame which was impossible
to resist.

Equal remained motionless in awe
strict consternation. I myself felt with a
shudder my own exceedingly littleness.

2203 in the face of the great real-
ities of the fires, nature and the
of uniformed horsemen galloped along
the breach and rode up to the crowd of
retreating men whose numbers were
increasing every moment.

It was some officials newly arrived
from Ottawa who giving up all hope
of following this perilous course
had gone back the other way
around, hoping to meet less fire.

"Was the fire passed this way?" one
of them called out "It went so far
along the wheat that all the smoke
caused us to lose sight of it."

The foreman cast a terrified look
of smoke and flame, and pointing
towards it said:

"What is it up yonder trying to
cross the breach. God have mercy on
all these farms and the hay
mound if it does."

The officials gazed at the conflagration and at one another in great
horror, and the crowd of retreating
men. The reflected heat from such
high flames was well nigh
too great to bear. The became as
hot as a furnace and the glare
even by day remote fiercely on us

all. The fact that it had 2204
after all not yet cross the breach
ruined my hopes. I had completely
given up all thought of preventing
from crossing by my own exertions
but I still thought help from God may
be possible.

And now that the situation was dis-
covered my leaders I suppose knew
I would do what ever lay in the
power of mine for its halting. So
I kept up my courage and waited
patiently and hopefully.

Many or probably all of the men
slowing down their withdrawal as the
fire halted at the breach were exhausted
by hunger, thirst, by fatigue, by heat
and weariness, which came over them,
and almost overcome by the dense
smoke.

Many repeated furious headache and
dizziness which coming on over them
made them think that they were to
become senseless. Many
squatted where they could and soon all
were being relieved by the charcoal
and drinking water, sugar, and
medical supplies. Because of such
excitement, apprehension and the
effects of the explosions none of us
had any sleep or rest all night.

1204 The crowd of men retreating
men was increasing for a full half
hour and along the front a vast
assembly had gathered at sections giving
them time to rest and get relief from
chow and water wagons.

Those whose slightly scalded by over
heated wet clothing or blistered by the
fires heat were medically treated, some
sent off to the hospitals. Terrible indeed —
who can tell how terrible, we were there
four hours of suspense of these brave
men while fighting this losing
battle with the flames. The scorching
heat drove us back. for no one could
stand it in the least.

I could no longer resist the con-
viction that there was no help possible
that for us all all hope of whipping
the fire was over. It seemed as soon
as I had faced this ~~certain~~ certainty certainly
some overseer suggested a counter
fire. Counter fire? Counter fire? A
calm resignation a high courage
and resolve took possession of my
soul. If I was to risk a counter
fire would the wind remain on
the east? If so I'd dare to make
one. If I was to do it I would do
it as a forest fighter would,
if this were possible with the

wind staying east I would 2205
lay firm hold of the suggestion of
I made one and the wind changed
to west then "Oh my" it would
also be a dangerous difficult job for now
this conflagration was moving forward
through wheat fields grain barley hay
and sward covered ground of immense extent
that stretched in grand waves of rolling
flames beyond as it seemed the range of
vision because of the smoke among hedges,
and ten to twenty feet high weeds
grown so thickly together you can't get through
them. High grass land also was a sea
of fire.

Could any one really counter fire all
that? It seemed impossible ridiculous.
because there was happening an awful event
such as never before happened to any farm
or at least such as it appeared none of these
farms will ever survive to be told about
and already the all night fire fight
and into the morning so far of deadly
terror from the explosions which all of
us fighters then endured have broken
many of us up body and soul, to
wobbling our nerves so that some now
tremble at the least exertion and are
frightened at a shadow.
I once again was on the summit near
the Wicker Castle. For some minutes

2206 either Ruggedo or Roguet were too exhausted to speak. I too struggled in vain to divert myself of the idea that all the farms in the State were in danger from the fury of the conflagration. Finally Ruggedo said:

"Now step up a little higher and look out beyond the belt of smoke close beneath us into the wheat fields"

I looked dizzily and beheld a wide expanse of burning fields of wheat whose clouds of smoke were so mingled in color, or so inky & hup as to bring at once to my mind as to Dante's inferno. A panorama of flaming wheat fires more deplorably savage no human imagination can conceive.

To the right and left as far as the eye could reach there lay outstretched like conflagrations of a world on fire waves and rolling clouds of horribly dark red or orange colored flames whose character of horror was but the more forcibly illustrated by the surf of forward surging flames which reared high into the smoke clouds, hissing like a million tons of snakes.

Yet the appearance of the great conflagration in the space further off

between the wheat, grain tall grass 2207 weed, brush and ragweed had something very unusual about it. There was nothing here like a regular swell of fire but only a very large quick angry cross surging of flames in every direction as if wind blew that way.

Ruggedo said: "Do you hear anything? Do you see any change in this inferno?"

We had now been about three minutes upon the top of this Wicker Castle hill to which we had ascended from the eastern grounds so that we had caught no glimpse of the sea of fire until it had burst upon us from the summit.

As Ruggedo spoke I became ~~of a strange~~ aware of a loud and gradually increasing sound like the hissing of tons of burning grease and at the same moment I perceived that what forest fires fire fighters term the high chopping character of the ocean of flame was rapidly changing into a current which set to the eastward. Even while I gazed this current acquired a monstrous velocity burning all before it.

In three more minutes the whole sea as far as you could see was burning in ungovernably fury, but it seemed that it was between the foreign

2208 growth of Ragweed and so on so
on that the main fury held its
sway. Here the vast bed of the
flames, reared, and soared into a
thousand conflicting rolling cloud rolling fire
bursting into frenzied convulsion, heaving
upward like flaming sheets, boiling like
clouds, hissing crackling gyrating in gigan-
tic and innumerable fiery vortices
and all whirling and plunging to the
southwestward and west with a rapidity
which such conflagrations never elsewhere
had assumed except in forest fires
or brush blazes.

"This" I said at length to Rugg, do
this can be nothing than the great
fury some one suggested to Counten
fire. I could do it, but what a tough
job it would be."

The ordinary nature of this hol-
ocaust had by no means prepared
me for what I saw, to impart the
faintest conception either of the mag-
nificence or the horror of the scene or
of the wild bewildering sense of this
fire sea which confounds the be-
holder. There are favorable descriptions
of the most terrible forest fires, either
in fiction or in truth which may
be quoted for their details although
their effect is exceedingly feeble

in conveying an impression 2209
of this ghastly spectacle. The way it
was now it seemed dangerous to come
within a mile of it without being scorched
by the heat. It was "horrible danger and
that is the truth. Even the whole horizon
was covered very high with singular copper
colored clouds that kept rising
with the most amazing velocity and
spread across the sky like an enormous
enormous thunderhead sheet cloud,

In less than a minute the fire storm
was upon other still untouched wheat fields
in less than two the sky was entirely
overcast and what with this and the
driving flames it became so suddenly
dark that it was like that of
the coming of a big thunderstorm. The
smoke for the smoke was absolutely
intoxicating.

Such a fire as then raged it is folly
to attempt describing and the most best
forest fighters never experienced any-
thing like it. Rugged, grasped my
arm. His words turned to horror
for he screamed:

"Go heading for that big hill
of hay."

No one will ever know what my
feelings were at that moment. I shook
from head to foot as if I had the most

220 2210 violent fit of theague. I know
what he meant by those words
well enough, I knew what he wished
to make me understand. With the
slow wind that still blew from northeast
I had one hope, under all conditions that
fire front must not even get near that
hay. If it did, by the number of explos-
ives among it all La Salle would be
levelled by the explosive, and nothing
could save it.

You perceive that in crossing the breach
the fire had gone a long way through
the wheat, even in this almost calm
weather, and now it was coming up
toward the fields near the hay hill,
and such a fire as this.

To be sure I thought it may hit
a windly made breach along that
front, there was some little hope
on that, but in the next second
I cursed myself for being such a
fool as to dream of hope at all.
I knew very well that that hay
and La Salle was doomed had we
been ten times as strong as we are now.

To my nearest neighbor I yelled
"Get as many men together as possible
and douse the Counter fire."
I took an awful chance for if the

wind would change direction — 2211
By this time the first fury of the
fire tempest had spent itself because
of the crouch or perhaps we did not
see it because of the smoke shroud,
but at all events the sea of fire now
got up into volcanic eruptions of flame.

A singular change too had come over
the heaven covered smoke cloud

Around every direction it was still
as black as pitch but nearly overhead
there burst out all at once a circular
rift of red sky of flame as red as I
ever saw, and of a deep bright lamine
and through it there blazed forth a
large terrific column column of fire with
a lustre that I never knew a fire
to show. It lit up everything about us
with the greatest distinctness, and
we felt scorching heat just where
we were up on the hill.

But Oh God what a scene it was
to light up. I hoped desperately the
Counter fire would be started as soon
as possible and before it was too
late. I dragged my watch from its
pocket glanced at its face by the flame
glare and then burst into tears
as I replaced it. I was only ten
thirty in the morning but nearly
as dark as night. We were I was

220 2212 afraid behind the wire I should
have ordered the counter fire and
the rage of the conflagration was again
in full fury. It would take time
for the men to be gathered to spread
out on a very long line then simult-
aneously start the counter fire. And to
prevent it from spreading right and left
it must be fought on both flanks.

While we were still up I had thrown
a quick glance around, and one glance was
sufficient

I saw our exact position in an instant
but still no sign of the counter fire.
The main fire was two and a half
miles beyond the hill of hay. And no
sign of a counter fire started yet. I
had not known where we were and
what we had to expect, I should not
have recognized the inferno at
all. So far fortunately the breach
was still holding it at bay.

As it was I involuntarily closed my
eyes in horror.

The lids clenched themselves
together as if in a spasm. It may
appear strange but now when we
saw this fire sea probably only tem-
porarily checked by the trench I
felt more composed than when
we saw first saw its awful

extent and fury. Having had
made up my mind to hope 2213
no more, before my command to counter
fire I got rid of a good deal
of terror which was unmanly. I was
first at the thought of the awful disaster
that would ensue if the hay hill
caught. I suppose it was despair
that was straining my nerves.

It may look like boasting but
what I tell you is truth. I began to even
reflect how magnificent a thing to win
against it by a counter fire in such a
manner, and how foolish it was in
me to think of so paltry a consideration
as there was no success this way in
view of so wonderful a manifestation
of God's power.

I do believe that I blushed with
shame when this idea crossed my
mind. I felt if He refused by rain
He'd help us another way long
ago I should have done a counter fire,
but I was afraid to. I had even
become possessed with the keenest
curiosity about the fire itself.

I positively felt a wish to explore
the extent of this fire sea even
at the sacrifice I might have made,
and my principal grief that I
should never be able to tell my

220 2214 old far away city friends about
the mysteries I should see. There
no doubt were singular fancies to
occupy a man's mind in such
extremity, and I have often thought since
that the radiation of the fierce distant
heat might have rendered me a little
light headed.

There was another circumstance which
tended to retard my safe possession, and
this was that the fire though spreading
left and left still could not leap the
breach even though at that distance
it towered above us a high blood
red wall of flames.

If you have never seen a fire
like this you can form no idea of the
confusion of mind occasioned by
the heat and dense smoke together.

The heat blind torture and send you
reeling or fleeing in panic, and
the smoke strangle you smart your
eyes lunge and take away all power
of action or reflection. But because
the breach seemed to halt the
fire I was now in a great meas-
ure rid of these annoyances, just
as death condemned felons in the
prisons are allowed partly undul-
gences forbidden them while their
doom is yet uncertain.

I knew it would take some 2215
good time for the crowds of men
by horse and long wagons to reach the
proper section to dare start the counter
fire which if lighted would head towards
the fire coming from northwest.

It took half an hour and I Ruggedo and
Rogat went with them.

Onward still onward leaping crops
under foot they rushed after leaving the
wagons furious with anger against the
fire for repulsing them and eager for
revenge by counter fire. Fathers were
there, whose grown sons were still
elsewhere among the whipped ones groaning
from fatigue and exhaustion, uncles
brothers nephews and grand fathers
and even the military who left So-
dalla to fight.

In a time the long stretching
out wave or multitude swayed to
and fro like a forest beneath a
tempest and the rage and hate of
that tumultuous throng vented itself
in groans cries and yells of vengeance.

They were to fight the flanks
of the counter fire when it got a
good start so as it will not
spread out of its bounds and start a
new one. Yet from the result that
occurred by making this counter fire

22/7 I felt like having some one give me a good swift kick for not starting it sooner. Then we would not have had to fight this crazy conflagration all night and up to now I with stalemate after stalemate and finally be driven off. But calm cold and immovable as the tree near me I stood and I stretched out my hand over that frenzied crowd with a proudly commanding gesture.

The tumult ceased the curse half muttered died upon the lip and no intense was the silence you could hear the hiss of the far distant burning fields as I address them:-

"You men when the counter fire gets under way, in attacking the blunders don't fight them so much as to bring them under control only to prevent those fires from spreading further than they should go."

If you do you'll weaken the counter fire and it won't do its work. See, they've already started it so watch close.

I might give reason for this on panic comprehension most foolish act of mine not to have done this as soon as day-light came.

We depended on heavy rain, 22/8 none came, only this morning a little that wouldn't wet a paper bag. Here do I defy the fire. And do you think to see me crouch and cover before this devastating inferno

I he was I hope to see impending over this guilty fire realm shall be enough to sweeten our previous defeat though every nerve and artery were a shooting pang.

I hope this counter fire when it gets started good shall prove a proud triumph.

Woe to thee now inferno I hope. Woe to the proud fires of this conflagration. You won't no more put citizens in terror by consuming farm wheat Proud conflagration thou art doomed. The curse of the counter fire is on thee, a clear clinging wasting curse. Now men watch until the counter fire gets a good start then don't let the flanks spread out too far."

About ten minutes later the new conflagration had gotten underway aided by a stiffening northeast wind. The new wave of counter fighters such as had never appeared in Illinois appeared in full force before the right and left flank. Raguet took charge on this occasion and resolved to oppose both flanks and for a short

2219 time the rear Jim having
strongly counseled him to do
so and promised to reach him
with the bulk of Kaliko's victorious
men. Roquat had not more than
five hundred men for each flank
and three hundred and fifty to tem-
porarily battle the rear.

Nevertheless knowing that all depended
on the Counter fire not spreading
too far, and to fight on until Kaliko
came up, he did not wait for
Jim to appear in sight but went
forward with his two three
platoons and first disputed the
rear until it could not spread
eastward.

Then as the counter fire in-
creased to great proportions the
left and right flanks were assailed.

The storming parties now exhausted
after the all night fight now
fiercely fighting advanced in by
unch but were astonished by some
unknown reason the flanks gave
very weak resistance.

Yet a furious rush was made
to keep the flanks under con-
trol. Yet here the wheat opposed
itself like an impenetrable wall
to the mass of men fire, damped

by the slight off an drizzle, 2220
while above the din of battle
and the shouts of the combatants
could be heard sounds to
the flanks near that to my ears
needed no explanation the fighters were
cutting down the wheat in the
rear while yet they fought at the
right and left of the two flanks.

Clinging themselves in hundreds
on the flanks now more stoutly re-
sisting them the stormers soon sought
to clear away and clear the way by freely
giving man for man safely for safely
may four for one.

The flank slightly resisted. But it
would not do. There Roquat and his
men stood, or pushed on like adamant
following every movement of the flank
fire even one man could keep five
batches of burning wheat at bay and
a few pieces of the right wielding
pick, scythe, sickle, and cutting swords
like furries were the engineers of
the cutting crews.

Soon the main Counter fire
raced on, followed by a main wall
of fire, and a shout of triumph
broke from the flank fighters mingled
with cheers cries of defiance exultation
victory, as the brave fellows were seen

2226 to force the flank fire westward, Kaliko in the meanwhile had instantly set out at the head of fifteen hundred men leaving the main army to follow as quickly as possible. On his arrival he first encamped about a quarter of a mile of the scene of action.

Also a hundred wagons arrived in the Kaliko camp from Esterhoun and Da Salle laden with a further supply of equipment for the fire fighters. All these men grasped axes, and all type of equipment, and wet gunny sacks rushed to their job and swept all spaces the flanks would retire to spread to. Finally on the left flank the battling hero came upon a large burned out area. Oh glory, the left flank could go no further south but must head due west following the main counter fire.

The right met a murderous fusillade of scythes, sacks and every fighting equipment. The counter fire was two miles away yet from the main conflagration but it was doomed. The two would soon meet and die out and then the wind changed to much, much

stronger pushing the counter fire forward faster and somewhat slowing down the main fire.

Difficult but successful conquest of the south wing fire"

For those day there the morning came in clouds and very slight showers at intervals. K. Green's fire fighters after being driven back by the deadly heat were drawn up along the left of further threatened fields. A large wall of fire which had ousted them was some distance away and was moving along the field strand towards barley and cockle ground fields from whence they could not be driven back.

Mr Green the head there had achieved the most critical part of his enterprise, yet the success that he so strongly desired placed him in grave imminent danger. At the one side over yonder was the burning cockle ragweed, Affla and everything else and the fire's main center and burning high grass and all sorts of high weeds and high thick brush.

2225 Green's alternative was victory or complete ruin, for if he should be overwhelmed by a combined attack by this fire retreat would be hopeless. His feelings no man can know but it would be safe to say that hesitation or doubt had no place in them. I knew he went to reconnoiter the territory and soon came to the fields of Mr. Shelby Johnson.

It was a vast tract of wheat-barley grown ten foot high grass, and every high crop a farmer raises.

On the south it was bounded by the same, on the west by the same but also a sea of alfalfa.

At the place I learned that Green chose for his new battlefield the whole scene was extensive more than ten miles long and a mile wide.

When the men advanced marched by file till they reached the edge of the fields and then wheeled to form their line of battle which stretched across the open fields and faced the distant but oncoming fire.

It consisted of six platoons and the detached gunny sake

2226 brigade all drawn up in ranks three deep. Its right wing was near the edge of a large field of still untouched ragweed, but the left could not reach the high grass fields along the narrow stream mentioned before which crawled like a withering snake.

On this space side of wide space pre-empted left open and there was danger of being out-flanked. To prevent this Gel was stationed here with two platoons drawn up at right angles with the rest. The platoon of Webb's & bucket men under Burton formed the reserve, the third platoon of "Royal Gummy" sack men was left to guard the road through the field, and Henry, Howe's cycle and cutting men occupied a position near the Wicker cattle full still in peril. Green with Carter and Barker commanded the front line, on which the heavy fighting was to fall and which when all the men had arrived numbered less than thirty five hundred men, a small number to face that slowly coming fire storm.

The fire was not two mile distant but they could not see it.

2227 because of the enormous wall of smoke. The first platoon of men had scarcely come up when about five o'clock A.M. a new & distant field was beginning to be walled in flame and smoke.

While the northeast wind was to much later favor us in our big counter fire it was perilous to Green. It was a new conflagration started by the fierce heat of the main conflagration.

Some time after there was by some platoon hot fighting at a location unknown to Green. It came from a detachment of Re 'Ruggers' men attacking flaming grain near a farmhouse where some of my own men were posted.

This fire was repulsed, but it then smoked fearfully becoming a sea of smothering blinding smoke. As said before light showers fell at intervals but could not wet any of the wheat ahead of the fire because of unbearable heat. Yet it sprinkled the men as they stood almost impatiently waiting the event.

He told me afterwards Green had a troubled or passed a very

troubled night I thought all 2228 the evening at the beginning of the fire, fighting small explosions had belled like a cannon - side from burning fields, and new fires that hovered through the dusk off the grass fires threatening every moment to surge forward like a fiery storm cloud.

Boops made intrenchment while Green walked the fields that adjoined his observation post till one in the morning accomplished by Johnny Johnson and Ben Sagan whose men were desperately opposing the fire.

Johnson said to me that though he did all I commanded during the all night strenuous conflict here and there, he was in in the most greatest agitation and had had no rest or sleep at night. Then at daybreak as he told me he heard the bigger explosions near the main fires and wreckage piles. It was the blasts that shook even as far as La Salle. He sent an officer or four men to the quarters of Reddy which were much nearer the fields of Hay, with orders to bring

22

2229 turn word at once should
 anything unusual happen. But
 no word and about six o'clock
 he mounted and rode thither
 with Johnson. As they advanced the
 country behind the crazy little stream
 opened more and more upon their very
 sight till at length when opposite
 Reddy's battle line they saw across
 the St Charles farms some two
 miles away the worst ^{type} of awful
 conflagration ever beheld.

"That was a serious business"

Green had said later and had sent
 off Johnny Johnston at full gallop
 the "troops" from the center and left
 of the waiting lines. Those of the
 right were in motion already,
 doubtless by Reddy's order. Reddy came
 forward to meet Green who had
 stopped his horse for a few words
 with him, learned the messenger
 had been burned and taken to
 the hospital then set spurs
 to his ~~horse~~ horse and
 rode over the bridge of the
 St Charles Creek to view the scene
 of danger. Johnson said he rode
 with a fixed look uttering not
 a word. The army of fire
 fighters followed in such order

as it might cross the 2230
 bridge in hot haste, passed
 the big sea of endangered rag-
 weed, entered the wheat fields
 and using all their cutting equipment
 pressed on in head long work
 from center to right and left along
 the fields, troops of gunny sack
 men with all their equipment, a
 savage glitter in their deep set eyes,
 bands of slashes where all was
 at stake - faith. all fields not yet
 touched, country side, home towns and
 farms, the bucket regulars and
 accompanying them lines of wagons
 loaded with barrels of mud, soggy
 sand water and mounds of wet
 gunny sacks.

So they swept on along the
 fields in three directions, poured
 on slashing through the grain and
 so on, some at the ragweed and
 some at the high grass and
 hurried desperately at their work
 breathless to even where the
 high grass was.

As he told me in the after-
 noon Green was amazed at what
 he saw. He had expected a
 conflagration and he observed a scene
 like the end of the world. Full in

2231 right before him stretched
the biggest fire he had seen
along a five mile front, the
closed walls of the towering columns
of flames, a hissing blinding &
searing wall of blood red, and the
wild array of its flanks with their
rolling hills of smoke and fire
and their hissing screaming full
defiance.

Reddy did not come as he could
not dare leave off his line of
the fight, but not the less was felt
the evil of a divided movement
and the fury of the rival fires.

Green waited long for the forces
he had ordered to join him from
the left wing of the fire fight-
ers. He waited in vain. It was
said that Reddy was by the
fierce heat driven pell-mell
from the fields, and John had
detained his men to cover Reddy's
rebreath lest the inferno should
attack the Wicker Castle hill.

Even if they did so and suc-
ceeded, the fire fighters might
defy them could they but put
the left wing to rout in the
Rogweed fields.

Neither did Carter come to the

the aid of Green because he 2232
was hard pressed and also giving
way before the fierce heat and
headlong rush of the flames.

Green sent to Reddy for twenty
five hundred men which were fight-
ing near the Crazy creek. But Reddy
was also was being driven back
by the main conflagration. There
were orders, counter orders, misunder-
standing haste, delay perplexity.

Green and his Chief foremen held
a short council of War.

He told me afterwards that he and
they alike were for immediate general
attack along the entire front by
counter-fire, before the main inferno
should curve and carry the situation,
yet Reddy was not a man to assume
responsibility at such a crisis when
already beaten back.

Others say his utmost impetuosity
overcame his better judgment
and of this charge it is hard to
acquaint him.

The left wing of the fire
was hard upon Basha too and
some of his fighting troops were
much nearer, a messenger sent
by way of old Lottie could have
reached him in a quarter of an hour

2233 at the most and a combined attack in front and rear and both flanks might have been concerted with him, if moreover Green could have been reinforced by Teddy his own force might have been strengthened by two or three thousand additional men from Reddy left but "thanks" to the fire Reddy was driven from the field.

Green felt there was no time to lose for he imagined that the main conflagration would be reinforced immensely, which was not at all possible, and he believed that the fires were absolutely fortifying themselves and attempting a burning movement to cut off all his supplies, which was no less an error.

He had been blamed by me, Ruggedo, Roquet and others for fighting too late, but for fighting at all without making right away a counter fire as I advised, yet he too had told me he could not chose at all. I fight he must at all costs for the conflagration was now in a position to cut

off all the fire equipment 2234 supplies. And all horses and mules were being led away to safety. All his men were full of the best and he resolved to attack and counter fire at the same time. He had spoken a few words to them in his keen vehement way.

"I remember very well how he looked" one of the foremen said to me "he rode his brown horse along the front of our lines, bravely brandishing his giant sceptre as if to excite us to do our duty. He wore a soaking wet coat and clothing."

Every body had waited the result with a composure which cannot be described. The three smaller conflagrations plied them with fierce dangerous heat that they could not face or withstand and fifteen hundred yards length of flaming high front fusilladed them with flaming fury in front and flank.

Over all other sections of the fields from bushes, wheat covered knolls and the edge of even flaming corn fields great puffs of smoke sprang incessantly from pretty

2235 fires caused by the unbearable heat and sparks and from smoke of other sudden small squinting blazes.

As you would call it skirmishers were thrown out before the lines of fire fighters to hold these small blazes in check, before they became another big blaze and the nearest fighters were ordered to lie on the flooded wheat wetted heat to avoid the deadly heat.

The fire was liveliest and hottest on Greens left where bands of sharpshooting flames got under the edge of Ragweed decidately among wide thickets high grass and among scattered houses and barns or silos whence the skin searing heat overcame a considerable number of Johnston men who were taken to the rear for safety.

The reserves were called up from the rear. The houses and other structures were burning fiercely now. I heard - I learned Green was seen every where. How cool he was and why his followers loved him was as I was told shown by an incident that just happened in the course of this

fitful morning. One of 2236 his off also was injured by the concussion of the mightiest explosion, and also scathed on the face, neck and shoulders by the heat and made senseless by the smoke and on recovering consciousness he saw Green standing sorrowfully at his side. They told me Green pressed his hand, told him not to despair, strongly praised his services, promised him early promotion and sent a aid-de-camp to Stevens or to me too to beg us to keep the promise if he himself should be burned or injured.

It was six thirty A.M. when from high ground on the right of the line Green saw that the crisis was about near. The burning fields on that low rise of ground had formed themselves into three big conflagrations, regular hell in the center and a surge of infernos on right and left and all the men lying on the ground prepared to receive them with all their ability. In a few moments they were in motion, running or rapidly, the men defying them shouting and uttering loud yells, and suddenly setting the adressed

2237 counter fires immediately. The ranks of fire all ordered because of the stubborn resistance of the made breach at the best were further confused by a number of awfully big and high fire balls which now with the main conflagration, which after hastily attacking the breach burned those fields to the ground and gradually halted, but spreading out. The left flank advanced a few score yards and burned to a stand still.

When it was within twenty yards the word of command rang out, and the counter fire was lengthened all along the line. It moved northward slowly but with remarkable precision.

Along the battalions of the center which had suffered the least from the fieres heat the tumultuous rush of the counter fire was suddenly speeded up from the wind turning southwest, and blowing almost like a squall. This caused the big fire to be doomed.

The advance of that counter fire was afterwards said by

fire fighting officials to 2238 have moved on like a sudden storm at a different further territory another counter fire followed. The advancing masses of the general conflagration stopped short by the wide breach did not advance to meet the counter fires but began to try and spread out right and left but in vain.

The exultant fighters seeing all this turned into a joyful frantic mob shouting screaming and yelling their cheers at the top of their voices and gesticulating. The order was given to charge.

Yet because of the extent of the main Gehenna, it was not necessary, nor needed to contest the flanks of the counter fire. They wanted it to spread so as to outflank the main blaze, just as my own counter fire was now doing.

Then over the fields to the left of the counter fire rose still louder yells and cheering shouts mixed with the fierce yell of the Forest fire Ranger Slogan. Some of the Corps pushed forward with all the cutting and slashing equipment at hand, some advanced starting more counter fires. The fire

2239 fighting clannmen took their
scythes and reesles and broad-
swords and cut their way on and
through dashing on been as
blood hounds. At the right of the
allowed spreading counter fire, though
the attacking column of the conflagra-
tion was broken to pieces the fierceness
of the fire was still kept up chiefly
from hot high flames from bushes.
Grass Cornfields rag weed tumbleweed
where this fire had raged for
hours.

Here Green led the charge at the
head of his main wave of men.

All of a sudden here all the
men had to make a swift retreat
the other way, as the two big fires
suddenly met, flaming twice as
high and making a heat that
sent everyone, scrambling out of
reach. Green staggered and sat
on the ground overcome with fatigue
and exhaustion.

A man by the name of John
Brown, one Frank Henderson, a
volunteer in the same com-
pany, and a foreman aided by
an officer of the Gunny sack crew
who ran to join them carried
him on their arms to the rear.

He begged them to lay him
down they did so and
asked if he would have a cold
drink of water.

"Yes" he answered & sure overtook
myself 't, soon though all over
with the fire. Thank God"

A moment after one of them cried
out "They burn down see how they
burn down"

"Who burn down?" Green demanded
like a man roused from sleep "The
counter fires sir. The flames give way
everywhere"

"Go one of you to Colonel Johnson"
returned Green "tell him to hurry
Webbs regiments down to Charles
River to cut off the retreat of
the fire from the bridge, now God
be praised I can relax in
peace. Bring me a lunch and some
coffee from the show wagon"

In a few moments this
gallant man was having his
best meal since the beginning
of the fire fight yesterday
evening. The men sent flying
by the heat when the two fires
had met had returned to the
flanking attacks. Maybe it was
the winds of the south west pushing

2241 their fire onward after being started some what later. or what ever cause, both counter fires and the conflagrations came together at the same time burning doubly high as they met and fiercer like screaming fury, and then to gradually slackening down.

Now the war was over and we could easily combat the still remaining conclusive fires. The two big conflagrations met together at Eleven A.M., by my watch. They wanted to counter fire the others and I said Go ahead but watch the wind I if it again changes direction —

It did but straight southwest, and that was still more fatal to the wheat fire. But being under control it doubly smoked. It had burned down to a fierce hot smoulder and for all its exert how it did smoke. I learned later, forty miles of country side was under a thick canopy of smoke and fog smoke fog fifty miles away there was thick enough to obscure vision two hundred feet away.

What a smoke and gray white

2242 too. We didn't expect it to turn into such an ocean of smoke. It drove people out of near by farms, towns and also villages and cut sunshine for twenty five miles.

Teddy still an hour back had by fierce endeavor regained his lost ground, but his whipped fire added to the smoke of the fierce hot smoulder. As he approached the scene he quailed before the intolerable heat but he kept his seat. He too said "Thank God it'll soon be all over"

Near me on one of the passenger type wagons was Dorothy Angelina and Baby Bobben. The wagon was drawn to a stop among the excited crowd who though they had come here for a well needed rest were too joy full to rest as yet. The little girls were drawn no doubt by eagerness to know the results of the fight.

"It's nothing, its nothing but a big smoulder now my friends" I replied "don't be troubled about it my good friends. In a matter of a few hours more the rest will be absolutely under control"

"But my what smoke" said Dorothy.

2243 By the time of the worst of the fire we had reserved the heap of able bodied men from Sa Salle, Chester Brown, Ottawa, Moline, Peoria, Morris Joliet, Aurora, Rock Island New Ill and even Chicago. All came mostly by rail till 10000 were fighting the fire.

And still unsuccessful untill we dared the Counter fires. Even Prophet town and Dixon Ill sent help and also Kankakee and Bloomington and Lincoln.

And still untill we counter fired the awful fire was whipping it. If we were lashed Sa Salle and all the Country round about would have been doorned.

The direction of the wind kept Sa Salle free from the smoke, but at Ottawa, Morris, Aurora, and even Elgin, Wheaton, and Chicago got enough to fog everything almost in invisibility also Joliet.

Waukegan got a little trace of it.

Do you can imagine what an immense cloud came from

that many miles of smoulder.

How did I know how far the smoke covered the Country?

The newspapers of every sort

said so. Zion city had 2244 a strong smell of it, and so did Racine Wisconsin Wisconsin. The declaration and decision of Counter firing was a declaration of desperate war to the final issue, as you would call it war to the knife and the knife to the hilt.

It was a declaration of defiant and offensive war that in my decision, against the whole world was worst conflagration ever beheld and insanely fought.

All night untill near noon the next day, there were fearful odds against all our fighters and explosions of the most terrible kind, that spread new and terrible fires when we threw down the gage of battle.

When it seemed after the most desperate and determined fighting ^{that} we were putting the fire on the defense, rather stalemate, or whipped along some fronts altogether to a final finish there explosions by scattering burning masses had started extra fire fires so fierce that it was impossible to face them because of the killing heat.

On one side was the main conflagration of the hot rainless night, strong with hellish heat and fury, strong in the consciousness of extending

2245 power and irresistible burning movement unmeasurably strong in the prestige of fire sovereignty, fully armed and equipped for the worst flames ever beheld, raging in an offensive defiant insolent manner, hotly haughty scornful even to entertain the idea of possible check or defeat.

Time and again we had got the best of it at sections and it then it would actually rout us elsewhere. Time and again it was a stalemate.

On our own side with ~~new~~ reinforcements gradually and continually coming with all the fire fighting equipment on wagons you could think of stretching for the most part along the whole fire front, vulnerable at a hundred points and open to rearing flaming attack by grain wheat and all inflammable growth, at the beginning without a sufficient number of men, without equipment or ammunition in material fighting fire was, having for troops only crowds of inexperienced men and farmers and of unclassified men near by village citizens who had left for a while plow and arrow and hurried to fight the fire with what equipment they could lay

hands on to fight the veteran fires of what was going to be the greatest fire on record, skilled in their terrible trade by burning the most inflammable stuff on all record.

Some times during that awful night wild inferno those who had time between rest from exertions and fatigue had been in session. There at these times only four or six delegates present. That night was one of gloom, tense, terror, horror and determination. The air was dark and heavy with ill news of the frequent turns and returns of the fight, all news from the north where it began near the flaming fields of high piled torched debris it had begun there where the suspicion is still arson, and the first expedition and assault had miserably failed, won and failed again, afterwards stalemate. All news from the northeast a fleet of fires started by the first explosion had crossed what is called the Charlerton fields. East, all news of explosive sheds in grave danger where they fought like hell to avert the disaster near what was the Lord Howe grass fields wheat meadow and corn field. A high thick thick brush and a army of

2247 uncontrollable seas of flame
menacing even the distant city
of nearest Ottawa with attack.
From all sides came ill tidings
Everywhere doubt, suspicion and desper-
ancy. Great fear about the sheds, and the
fatal results of the big hill of hay or
the tornado rained Wicher Castle caught
fire.

Off and on the most desperate re-
hements efforts were made to prevent
this. It was a dark and gloomy time
when even the boldest might well
be forgiven for losing heart. Even
once the boldest and most courageous
man. Stevens was for giving up
and abandon the fields and towns to
their fate.

For times the hay hill and the
Wicher Castle were in extreme danger.

By early morning when along my
front we nearly had the conflagra-
tion driven back came the loudest
and mightiest devastation of ex-
plosion. The shock wrecked build-
ing in Ottawa So. Side, and leveled
all the farmhouse. The wide
spread flaming wreckage it strewn
about started fires we could not
stop or stale mate.

This time of the conflict was

2248 a most terrible alternative.
Such was the hour when all our main
leaders entered upon the question on
which hung the fate of hundreds of
miles of country side. We were being
driven back, or would gain ground again
and again scattered by the killing heat,
and suffocating smoke.

There was so much heat it was very
difficult to keep our clothes wet. Many were
overcome by heat or exhaustion. Explosions
drove many into panic.

We lost ground yet we were loath
loath to lose it.

Even new platoons of men coming to
our help saw the fiery horror and
they shuddered and started back appal-
ed.

Then at my command the undiscipli-
ned throng of city and country fire
fighters at 10:30, A.M. taught in the stern
school of hardship and reverse soon
started at two sections of great counter
fires before which the toughest con-
flagrations the world had seen re-
coiled.

Many towns and three or four
cities even far distant Chicago surprised
into sympathy with our fight against
the fire sent their best and bravest
men to keep us to fight the fire.

2249 and Kaliko, Roquist, Ruggedo,
Green Carter, Rasko, Teddy, Reddy, Jim,
John Manley, Scamlon, Stevens and
others drew their bright scythes, sickles
broad swords in leading the men in
the various successes and reverses until
finally the successful counter fire was
accomplished.

Best of all support was that calm
fearless steadfast soul from La Salle,
which undismayed in the midst of
extreme fiery peril and explosion
disasters, undaunted amid wrecks
fiery seas of the inferno and fire
devastation ruin stood like a tower
reflecting all that was best and
noblest in the character of the desper-
ately fighting men, and person-
ifying their resolute will to win
at any cost.

Once he was decided to quit when
all seemed hopelessly lost, but
changed his mind, and strove more
desperately still to the latter end.

Happily were all our fighting men
to whom in our own of need bounti-
ful Heaven provides a leader
so brave and wise, so fitted
to guide and lead as was in that
night crisis of our fighting men
in for most man under me

but much better trained and 2250
learned had twice before I finally
decided, advise to me to counter fire,
Jim Peter Stevenson Stevens for
short, I made the counter fire and they
met with great shock and the two great
conflagration were broken and shattered but
turned into a sea of horrible hot smouldering
ruin sending smoke over more than
a hundred miles of territory smothering out
town and cities and driving the people out
of house and home and the towns.
Yet from these places as well as
Chester Brown the fighting men had
come and as their battle line advanced
along both flanks of the counter fire
the main flames fell back subdued
and came to a final standstill.

Of triumphs like this who can esti-
mate the value.

I believe if I had ordered the counter
fire sooner the conflagration would
never have gained such immense
headway, But I was apprehensive of
the dangerous type of wind change
which never came. What a fool I
was. I rode on my horse back to the
high Wicher Castle to have an observation
of the smolder from there. Though twelve
thirty it was still dark because of
the smoke. Some of it whirled round

2251 and round. The edges of half
burned wheat nearest the smoulder
seemed to be beset by a pack of
hungry little swells of flame. First
one would take it on the edge then
whip back into the main smouldering
sea. While this section was being
attacked by the fighters-

Presently a bolder swell of flame
would rise and pitch into the wheat
with a ferocity that threatened in-
stant destruction. It only smouldered
back to the main fire sea. While the
fighters was turning to charge the
daring assailant in the face the fire
rogue had pitched himself back
into the fire sea-

No sooner that than a very bull-
dog of a billow of flame would
attack the wheat in the face. The
serenity with which the impetuous
assault was borne, was complete.

It was turned into a puff of
fiery dust glowing the nearest
smoulder with much fresher
dazzling brightness. Nothing would
be left of bull but a little
froth of fiery sparks displayed
on the fiery and too
glaring white would burn and
send into his parent fiery sea.

Perpetual little waves of flame 2255)
after a fiery dash, singly all around
upon the common enemy of resistant
wheat, as if by silent agreement of
the awful smudge, they would all
burn forward at once, with their loudest
hiss and shaggy foam of sparkling
fire, and overwhelm the poor wheat
so completely that nothing less might
be expected than to behold it burned
into four quarters and burning hope-
lessly away. Mistaken me.

Although by its momentary smothering
it was incidentally aroused, yet neither
this wheat field nor his fire assailant
were at all the worst for all the wear
and searing. You know why? All
that wheat was too badly scorched
to actually catch fire good again.

We now were looking upon the
big hot smoulder as closely as we
dare. You couldn't get within two hun-
dred feet of it so bright its great
glare and immeasurable heat.
To our apprehension what we had
not been expecting and watching
for was actually taking place, ex-
plosions of low swirling fire
with heavier rolls of smoke followed
by the burning gears like husk,
and the high thin seas of fire actually

2253 wheeling away beautifully created
with sparkling fiery foam if it
is possible imagine the effect upon
us beholders, this sea of smould-
ering flame with tremendous hissing
and crackling or snapping swaying in
the breeze with a majestic and awful
fiery motion.

Down refuses to sink the under long
smouldering seas of livid fire a speech-
less and awful baptism of fire.

Now it pauses and returns up rises
greater clouds of smoke streaming with
the dazzling blinding ^{white} glare up
comes the great mountain walls of
light white blue smoke followed by
red crimson, and orange colored flames,
balconies of fire up up it rises
higher and higher still crowning the
very breast of the smoulder, and
all bathed with rivulets of fiery
foam.

Now it pauses pauses in its up
ward roll, threatening to spread
more across the sky towards the
northeast, mingled with millions
of glittering sparks, this spectacle
is terrific and most magnificent
Emotion is irrepressible and
feels of wild yells of disappoint-
ment burst forth from all.

2254 The upper portions of the
thick blue white and tan colored smoke
have a light and aerial effect a des-
cription of which is simply impossible.
Beaks and spires of flame rise out of
the strong and apparently changing base of
hellish smoulder.

A mighty sea of smudge of smoking
fire all or half burned down wheat.
If any of us decided to do so it would be
suicide certain death, to try and fight
and overcome this leveled fire sea. The
heat could blister your skin two hundred
feet away. I sympathized with all that
distant northeast part of the country
being smoked out by this immense
cloud of smoke. I had too thought, that
smudge like this should have burned
smokeless.

But no, And before we were through
there were other fires to conquer and
then they too would become smudges
and add to the smoke. But what could
we do.

This event I have never seen or heard
of before, or at least such as no large
country side has ever survived for
us to tell of and the six hours of
desperate morning fight and deadly
terror was a record breaker. This
could had broken up all of us bodies.

225-6 and soul. It took less than an hour to change the situation by the counter fires, but it seemed the strain of making them was satisfactorily without disaster to weaken my limbs and to leave my nerves unstrung by the exertion that I trembled for quite a time. What a cost to make the counters a success. Do you know I could scarcely look at that damn sea of smudge without being somewhat frightened?

This smoulder fire upon whose fiery edge a great deal of flaming tongues still appeared was caused by the lower sections of the burning wheat not being actually overwhelmed by the counter fires, as the upper parts mostly met and almost burned out.

So this smudge or white hot smoulder stretched a clear ~~wide~~ unobstructed sea of flame of still burning lower strata of wheat, nearly the same extent and width as the main conflagration had been, and I observed some fifteen or sixty or more nearest acres making the appearance of a vast lake of molten lava without the crater.

Nothing would have tempted me or any of the men to within fifteen

hundred feet from its edge 225-7
 because of the frightful heat 225-7
 and dense clouds of smoke. In truth so deeply was I so excited by the perilous position of this smudge that I fell at length and full length upon the ground, clung to the shrubs on the top of the Wicker hill about me and dared not even glance upward at the thick smoke covered sky while I struggled in vain to divert myself of the idea of what would happen if the very foundations of the two big smudges would be in danger from the fury of the winds should they blow in a sudden gale from the south west.

It was ten minutes before I could reason myself into sufficient courage to sit up and again look out into the fiery distance.

"You must get over these fancies" said Kaliko, "for you have brought us here that we might have the best possible view of the scene of this new ground conflagration we are observing and to describe to yourself whether a gale of wind will do harm or not with the conflagration just under our eyes. We are now" he continued in that particularizing manner which always

225-8 distinguished him, we are now close upon the biggest ground wheat fire that ever burned in hundreds of acres, and in the districts of ragweed cockle and thick impenetrable high brush and other stuff.

The hill top upon whose top near the ruined wicker castle is known now as Wicker hill.

Now raise yourself a little higher hold on to the grass if you feel the apprehension of the scene and look out beyond the sea of smoke beneath us into the fiery sea."

I looked with dread even dizzily and beheld a wide long expanse of bright dazzle ocean of ground wheat fire, which glare even in this part of day were so glaring blinding white in hue or yellow orange too as to bring at once to my mind, the forest ranger's account of one of the biggest forest ground fires on record.

A panorama of a seething ground hell more deplorably fiery and smoky no human imagination can conceive.

To the right and left as far as eye could reach, there lay outstretched like fiery furrows fields of

horribly fiery glowing and smoky horizon. Beyond description, whose character of glare was but the more forcibly illustrated by the fire surf which reared high up from its center like a white and ghastly flaming crest.

Just opposite the promontory upon which apex we were placed and at a distance of some five or six miles there were long crowds of men fighting the remaining conflagrations that seemed for a time to even defy their counter fires, or more properly their position was distinguishable through the wilderness of flames in which those fields were still enveloped.

About two miles nearer this arose another or smaller inferno hideously rearing hot and rearing high and encompassed at various intervals by wheat not touched off yet.

A desperate fight here too was being waged by hundreds of men. A cluster of fires were alone where burning unchecked. A counter fire was sent against them but they won.

The appearance of the ocean of flame especially in the space between the more distant parts of the bridge and the

2260 nearest section resembled one of what
 is called the "lake of ever burning"
 fire on the lower part of Mauna Loa
 on the biggest sandwich island and
 also had something strangely and much
 more unusual about it.

Although at this time very little breeze
 was blowing from the southwest it was act-
 ing as if so strong a gale was blowing
 across and along the big smoulder
 that like a log in the remote offing
 lay to under a double reefed lug-
 sail, and constantly plunging her whole
 hull out of sight, still there was not
 at all a regular swell of smouldering
 wave of fire, but only a short quick
 angry cross dashing of smoke and
 hellish smoke apparently in every di-
 rection, as well on the teeth of
 every promontory of wind as otherwise.
 Yet of wind there was very little.
 except in the immediate vicinity of
 its left and that didn't amount
 of anything at all. Then what made
 the fields of smudge fire act so
 queer and what it continues so when
 I was hoping it should soon burn
 out, which it most stubbornly
 refused to do.

"That rest resting out fire in the
 distance" resumed Kaliko we could call

the diabolical inferno of Dante's poem. 226 &
 The one mid way is the infernal 226
 smudge. That a mile to the northwest
 is seething hell. Yonder are smouldering
 green fields. Ryegrass, alfalfa, cocks, soy
 grain, barley wheat and heat ground,
 and buck wheat. Farther off between the
 ragweed and smouldering grass, six foot high
 impenetrable brush and Otterholm buckwheat,
 flumen, Sandflossen and Skarholm Bay-
 who weed is high weed or were all now
 an immense smoking smudge. There are
 the true names of the overgrowth of
 stuff. but why it has been necessary
 or thought necessary to name them at
 all is more than either you or I can
 understand. Do you hear anything? Do
 you see any change in the smudge?"

We had now been about an hour
 and a half upon the top of the hill almost
 in front of the gates of the wall of the
 Wicker Castle to which we had ascended
 from the border of untouched fields and
 of wheat and so on so that we had
 caught no glimpse of the sea of fiery
 smudge because of the wall of smoke
 until it had burst up on us from
 the summit.

There was a high safe part of the
 ruins easily accessible to the top of this
 we ascended to get a better view. We
 had found that the reports of dangerous

2262 ourselves on explosives being in the ruins was well nigh absolutely untrue. As Kaliko spoke I became aware of a strange loud hissing sound as if lots of the burning stuff was falling in, and a gradually increasing sound like the moaning of a vast herd of buffaloes upon an American prairie and at the same moment I perceived that sea soon took the chattering character of the ocean of fire beneath us was rapidly changing to high clouds of fiery sparks which swarmed like blagging bees northward and also east.

My heart was in my mouth for I feared they would start a new conflagration. But they burned out and did no harm, & ever while I gazed fearfully the smoke glare seemed to be changing in a current from the breezes which set to the northeastward and seemed to acquire a monotonous velocity and glare lighter and the smoke to increase. Each moment added to its speed to its strange headlong impetuosity. In five minutes the whole sea of smudge or smoulder as far as the eye could see here and there collapsed

to the ground and in flaming 2263 hay like debris was lashed into ungovernable fury but it was between the two places of where both counter fires had met together that the main sea of horror held its sway. Here the worst beds of smouldering & wheat debris, seemed to seem seem and soar into a score thousand conflicting channels of seething high or low flames, then colliding to the ground burst suddenly into most frenzied convulsions heaving furiously like waves of the sea boiling like molten iron loudly hissing gyrating into gigantic and innumerable vortices of smouldering glares and bright reflection and all whirling and plunging back and forth to and fro, up and down and yet sweeping to the eastward with a rapidity which such fires never before assumed, not even in the mightiest forest fires.

In a few minutes more there came over the scene another radical alteration. The general surface of the fiery smudge grew somewhat more smooth and the fiery whirlpools one by one slackened down, while the prodigious clouds of smoke became three times worse, and also clouds of smoke became apparent where none had been seen before.

2264 I here saw new clouds of smoke at length spreading out to a great distance and entering into combination took unto themselves the forms of awfully high reaching blue white thunder heads and seemed to form the germ of another smoke cloud much more vast

Suddenly - very suddenly - this assumed a distinct and definite existence into a cloud more than ten miles in width over the fields. The underpart of the smoke was represented by a broad belt of dazzling illumination that lighted the cloud to a pinkish glow but no particle of this glare slipped upward through the clouds upper roll or boiling sheets, whose interior as far as eye could fathom it was a rolling shining jet black thunder heads, inclined to the horizon by the light breezes at an angle of some forty five degrees, once in a while with a swaying stretching side long and small sweltering motion and sending forth to the northward across landscape and sky an appalling canopy such as not even the mightiest forest fires ever lifted up in its smoke pall to the heaven and landscape. All the country

side as far as you could see. 2265- was shrouded smotheringly thick and the sky darkened more & I threw myself upon my face and clung to the scant herbage in an excess of very nervous agitation.

"This" I said at length to Kaliko "this can be nothing else than the cause of wheat and grain growing so terribly thick together and smouldering like hell when the burned upper parts collapse and falling partly smothering the burning masses beneath."

So it is sometimes termed "said he. "We people of Do Salle call it the "smolder most" because the smolder because of it is harder to put out than the other type of fire."

The ordinary accounts of this fiery smolder sea had by no means prepared me for what I saw. That of chief fire ranger of the California frontier districts which is perhaps the most circumstantial of any cannot impart the faintest conception of either of the most magnificent or the abject horror of this scene or of the wild most bewildering of the scene and sense or extent and mood of the novel which confounds the beholder and holds him spell bound.

2266 I am not sure from what point of view of big forest fires the writer in question surveyed them, nor at what time but it could neither have been from the summit of Wicken basket hill nor during any fire storm. There are some passages of his description of the worst kind of forest fires ever burned, nevertheless which may be quoted for their details, although their effect is exceedingly feeble in conveying an impression of the awful and fiery spectacle.

Between the wheat and Rag weed fields he said, "the dept or height of the tall field grass is between thirteen or fifteen feet but on the other side towards the awful stretch of burning tornado wreckage this height increased so as not to afford a convenient passage of any one because of toughness and immeasurable thickness and tangled growth also with out the risk of getting stuck tight between the mess which happened even among the down Rag weed. So when it was all over the conflagration burned up the country between So Falls and Malina with an unbelievable heat but not

great speed, but the rearing 2267
 billowing heat and the hiss
 of its aftermath, impenetrable fiery ebb
 to the sea of fire was never equaled
 by the forest fires and the volume of
 flames were of such an extent and height
 and depth that when it came upon other
 fields of wheat they were inevitably absorbed
 and consumed, and there turned into
 new clouds of fire and smoke
 and when the big Cornier fire and this
 met together that caused this most
 awful confluence.

Where our trouble was in fighting this great wheat fires were not actually caused by flotsam far flung debris by the explosions exactly. At first early at night it only was a sort of garden variety of wheat field fire, the kind that our competent crew of fighters could have quickly cooled or wiped out had we the sufficient number of men at the time.

Then it would not have had the chance to explode suddenly into such a major conflagration hundreds of feet high.

Doresten would have called this wheat fire a "blow" up fire because it created fiery tornadoes that sent swirling columns of gases

2268 and hot air and smoke thousands of feet into the heavens, I'm sure the flames leaped hundreds of feet bathing the country in the fiery light of death. It was an actual fierce maelstrom of fire.

We worked like hell to make wide breaches and strip vegetation to check it to no avail. We made the counter fires which finally overcame the conflagration, but left smudges which though they cannot spread, are worse than the main conflagrations and throw far fiercer heat and make a big sea of the thickest smoke and fumes.

I believe the heat of these smudge sea as is so intense that it is very dangerous to come within a mile of it where the wind is from it then towards us. I believe if this southwest wind would be come very boisterous, and its fury heightened by turning into a windstorm these smudges likely could be blown into a new conflagration.

All farm houses near here have been burned away they say because of the heat of this smoulder though they did not seem to be within its reach because

of the breeze borne excess - 2269 we heat. Of the early main blaze I heard it like was happened that horses cows and other farm animals too near the inferno were overpowered by the violence of its heat and they say it was impossible to describe their howling oinking neighing yelling and bellowing in their fruitless struggles to disengage themselves from the flaming horror.

A farmer's bull attempting to outrun the flaming fury, was overtaken by the fire sea and fatally burned while he roared 'terribly so as to be heard nearly a mile. Large stacks of fields of brush and ragweed after being absorbed by the fire current was going fiercely with fire as to also turn into a smoulder to such a degree on seeing it you would think you were in hell.

This plainly shows the bottoms of the grain fields was too thickly grown together to burn out as it was supposed to be.

It seemed that the fiery surge of smoulder was regulated by the flux and reflux of the streams of killing heat, it being constantly high from the breezes fanning it. In this early morning I

25 2270 remember this worst explosion which
had raged with such noise and
impetuosity, so that the shock des-
trayed many buildings in 20-30 all around
and no line, but sometime before the
planned counter fire we received proved re-
ports that the news of all that was
gratifying greatly exaggerated. All windows
were out but few buildings dam-
aged."

In regard to the height and depth of
the wheat barley sowed and grass fields
so far, I could not see how this could
have been ascertained at all in the
immediate vicinity of the main smudges.

The two hundred and forty acres of
the smaller smoulder, (not mine) must
have reference only to portions of the
once main conflagration close upon the
burning tornado debris, either two
hundred feet beyond the explosive
sheds or Ragweed field which was
still burning.

The depth of the smouldering flames
on the center of the tremendous smudge
must be ~~unreasonably~~ ^{unreasonably} greater, and
no better proof of this fact was
~~necessary~~ necessary than can be
obtained from even the sidelong
glance into the abyss of vortexes
of smouldering fire which may

be had from the highest 2271
but safe perch on the ruins of
the Wicker castle, looking down from
this furnace upon the sizzling smoulder-
ing below I could not keep dread-
ing, what would be the consequences
of a strong ~~southerly~~ southerly wind to
start to blow, and I also could not
keep smiling at the simplicity with
which the honest farmers records
as a matter of difficult belief, the
anecdotes of all the outside farm
animals, for it appeared to me in fact
a self evident thing that the
largest fields of the many ill
fortunate farms in existence overcome
by the influence of that deadly sea
of fire could resist the conflagration
as little as a piece of straw in the
fire hurricane without wind however
and must disappear bodily and at
once into all fire everywhere.

The attempts to account for this
unusually strange phenomenon of which
I never remember seemed to me plau-
sible in perusal now was a very
different and most aspect that was
very unsatisfactory.

The idea generally received is that this
as well as dozens of smaller vortexes
among the smouldering fire sea, have no

2271 other cause than the breeze produced collision of fiery smouldering waves of fire rising and falling in forward and sideways motion, at flux and reflux of the immense smoulder sea, against fiery tops and shelves, which confined the smudge so that it spread like a fiery ocean, and thus the higher the heat rose the deeper must the smoulder be and the natural result of all was because there was so immeasurably amount to continue to burn that it could reduce itself the prodigious heat of which is sufficiently known afterwards by lesser experiments.

For a time Ruggedo and others did imagine that in the center of the smoulder of the reduced conflagration was lots of left over stems of wheat from other harvest seasons penetrating the new lower stems, and its fire issuing in some very remote part, the gulf of smoke fire being somewhat decidedly marked in one instance as the "smoulder of the deepest hell shell"

This opinion true in itself was the one to which I gazed my imagination must readily assented and mentioning it to Ruggedo I

rather surprised to hear 2272 him say that although it was the new almost universally entertained of the subject by many fire-fighters it nevertheless was not his own, as to the former notion he confessed his very inability to comprehend it, and here I did agree with him, for however conclusive on paper it becomes altogether unintelligible and even absurd amid the glare of the smouldering inferno.

~~Yes~~ "You have had a good look at this smouldering inferno" said Kaliko "and if you will creep around this way of these Wickes Castle ruins so as to get in its lee and be out of the blinding glare I will tell you a story that will convince I ought to know something of the "Maelstrom" fire I fought and after difficulties whipped it"

I placed myself as desired and he proceeded:

"Myself and my two overseers John Manley and Jim Scott Scanton got together to battle that big fire along its six mile front, with which we were in the detail of attacking through a still unburned wheat field sea beyond some big farm houses and barns nearly to a small village which caught and burned.

2223 In all valent violent eddies
of the fire it resisted all
our efforts, but there was no good
attacking, at proper opportunities if
one had only the courage to attempt
it, but among the whole of the fight -
among men we three were the only
ones who made a regular business
of going out to make a general
headlong assault as I tell you.

The usual grounds of grain were
a great deal lower down to the
southward.

There the fire had all hours to get
a headway and we had to fight it
at very much risk and the easy
front to fight it was at first much
preferred. The choice spots to fight
against it over the line among the
still untouched wheat however not
only at first yielded before us,
but seemed to be conquered but along
our right wheat fields were catching
in far greater abundance so that
our fighters there got into a serious
scrap in a single hour what
the more watchful could not hold
together in a day. In fact we
made it a matter of desperate dan-
gerous speculation - the risk of
life, or being injured or injured

during the work and courage 2224
arriving for reckless heroism. We
for a time kept the conflagration
in a cove of the fields about a
mile higher up and along the fields
than the one on the left, and it was
our most desperate effort, to take advantage
of a eighteen minutes slack to push our
way across or along the main stretch
of fields far beyond the main inferno
to make the long breach, and then
drop down upon another section near a
small village where the eddies
of fire were not so violent and hot
as elsewhere.

Here we remained fighting until
we could create a slack again when we
deployed and made for the attack
again. This was very early morn-
ing. We never set out upon this
this attack without a steady side wind
or breeze for the storming, one
that we felt sure would not fail
us during our attack, and we seldom
made a miscalculation upon this
point.

Then things commenced to happen
because of the first explosion.
Once we were forced to retreat
or stay plugged up in the same
place on account of a big fire trying

2275 to overtop my fighting line which is a rare thing for a wheat field fire just about near the village and we also again had to remain along the same front again fighting like to death owing to the fire flanking and almost trapping us which raged up after the renewal of the assault and made the fire wall too hot to face and caused our temporary withdrawal.

This territory of the fire was too dangerous to be thought of. Upon this occasion we should have been driven entirely from the fields in spite of everything, for the fires threatened even our rear, no matter how violently we counter charged that at length we fouled our right flank movement if it had not been that we had to fight our way through one of the field fires and pull our way into the one of the innumerable cross currents of smoke and fire - here to day gone to smoke which drove us back to the road but were by good luck we did bring it at bay.

I could not tell you the 2276 awful difficulties on the twentieth part of the difficulties we encountered in this section during our withdrawal. It was a bad spot to be in, even when we finally again brought it to a stand still, but we made shift to run the gauntlet of the inferno without accident although at times my heart had been in my mouth when we happened to be a minute or so behind or before the shock.

The wind from the northeast was not as strong as we thought at the starting of the rally and then we made rather less way than we could wish, while the fury of the conflagration became absolutely very unmanageable and we had to retreat again.

Reinforcements would have been of great assistance at this time, in making the sweeps (scythe attack) as well as afterwards, in standing ground or flanking attacks, but somehow although we ran the risks ourselves we had not the heart to let new platoons get into the danger - for after all mud and done it was a horrible danger and that is the truth.

2. 2277 It was then within a few-
hours at the time of the big-
gest explosion of what I am going
to tell you what really happened.
It was at six thirty a.m., a time
which the people of this part of the
world will never forget, for it was
one in which because of the blast
came the most terrible fire that
ever burned anywhere in the whole
world. And yet all the early morn-
ing and indeed until near six
thirty there was a gentle breeze still
coming from the northeast. While
even then the fire flamed brightly
so that the older forest fighters
of fires among us could not have
foreseen what was to so unexpected-
ly follow.

The three of us leaders had
rallied our retreating men and
fought and pushed over through
still unburning wheat and
soon had made a longer and
wider than ever breach which
we all remarked was the
longest and largest that
we had even been known to
make yet.

It then was just quarter to
six a.m. by my watch, when

by the help of this great 2278
breach the advancing flaming
wall was actually halted and
as near as we dared started to
fight the fire itself, so as to make it
halt for good and reach a slack-
ing burn, which we knew would
keep us good.

We set out on our fighting course
with a fresh breeze on our rear
and for a time spanked along at
a great rate never dreaming
while over exultant with success
of danger, for indeed we saw not
the slightest reason to apprehend
it.

All at once we were taken aback
by a breeze from over the east.

This was unusual - something
that never happened before and
I began to feel a little uneasy
without exactly knowing why.

We changed the course of our
onslaught but could make no
headway. This state of things
had only lasted a second or so
and I was on the point of
proposing to retreat again ^{when}
and the two other including many
of the other flew about at each
other as if being shoved back and

2 2279 both while I went flopping
down on the seat of my pants
as if violently shoved down
at the same time we
saw a large section of blazing
wheat field rise high in the air
adorned a high large singular black
roll of smoke that rose with the
most amazing velocity.
There was at the same time
an immeasurable thundering sound
which was the cause by vibration
of us being so strangely thrown
about.

At the same time the breeze
that caused the fire to tick us
fell away. All this had hap-
pened however and did not last
long enough to give us time
to think about it. In less
than a minute burning sheaves
were upon us in less than
two the sky was almost en-
tirely overcast by the smoke
cloud and what with this
and the driving "spray" of fiery
wheat, new fires became
gradually so fierce and
spreading that we all could
do nothing better for a
time but run for it.

Such an explosion as then 2280
blew up half of that wheat field
is folly to attempt describing.
The oldest experienced persons in ex-
periences never experienced anything like
it. We retreated carefully but rapidly
before the new fires it caused but
at the blast the flying burning wheat
had scattered everywhere as if they
had been flung by a hurricane,
a corn sheave going through the
air like a giant torch.

The blazing flying sheaves were
the lightest feather of things that ever
sailed through the air. If it had not
been for this circumstance we would not
have had extra fires, and for the same
circumstance also we should all have
perished at once by being trapped, for
we were entirely outflanked for
several minutes and had to retreat
and fall back like mad to clear
out of there like frightened field
mice.

How we all got out of there and
escaped destruction I cannot say for
I never had the opportunity to
ascertain. For my part as soon as
we had withdrawn far enough, we
rallied one hundred yards from one
of the new fires, and threw ourselves

2 2281, forward to do more breaching.
I was mere instinct that
prompted me to do this which
was undoubtedly the very best
best thing I could have done
for I was too flurried to think.

For some moments we were com-
pletely deluged by sparks as I say
and yet all this time I held my
cutting and slashing work and clung
desperately to the new breach
making.

When we could stand the heat
of the oncoming fire no longer
we slowly all retreated to the
rear, still keeping hold to the
cutting and slashing, while I thus
got my head clear.

Presently we shook ourselves
from new wheat beginning to
burn, and thus rid ourselves in
some measure of the dangerously
imperiled and threatened wheat.

I was now trying to get the
better of the repulse that
had come upon us and to also
collect my senses so to see
what was to be done when
I felt some body grasp my
shoulder. It was you I ought
come to my aid with heavy

reinforcements, and my 2282
heart leaped for joy for I had
made sure that I had to face
these infernos all alone but the
next moment all this joy was
turned into horror, for he said

Mr Danger advises you to get the
hell out of here before you all
perish. The fire is trapping
you in three directions.

Who would ever know at that very
moment what my feelings were.
and for a few minutes I was
shaking as if I had the fit of
the ague of the worst kind, I knew
what he meant well enough, I
knew what he wished me to
understand. With the new fires
started by the explosions the main
new inferno was trying to en-
circle us, and if we did not
withdraw right away nothing could
save us.

You may perceive that in our
sudden retreat or withdrawal and
crossing fields already starting
to burn we then went a long
way up that confounded little
inner field stream, and then had
to all run and watch carefully
what direction each flank of the

2. 2283 conflagration was advancing - but now we were still being in danger as in retreat we plowed and cut our way through, and in such a Gehenna as this - To be sure I thought we shall get to the breach just about the turn of the stream - there was some little hope in that, but in the next moment I cursed myself for being such a fool as to dream of hope at all.

I know very well that unless we got out of here we were doomed, had we been thirty thousand strong in the number of fighters.

Such a situation. But yet by this time the first maddening fury of the conflagration had spent itself or perhaps we did not feel the heat of it so much as we still retreated before it but at all events the distant left wing which at first had been kept at bay by the breaches, and now with only dense smoke and frothing clouds of sparks now got up into huge columns and walls of flame.

A singular change too had come over the unburning fields. The sky

itself before the great smoke was as black as pitch but on 2284 the unburned fields near the center there burst out all at once a circular rift of clear smokeless flame as clear as I ever saw flames to be or that I never knew flames to appear. It lit up every thing about us with the greatest distinctness. But oh God Almighty what a scene it was to light up.

I now made two attempts to speak to Roquat to ask him to send for help but in some manner which I could not understand the hissing snapping din had so increased that I could not make him hear a single word although I screamed at the top of my voice in his ear.

Presently he shook his head looking as pale as death and held up one of his fingers as if to say "listen."

At first I could not make out what he meant, but soon a most hideous thought flashed upon me. I dragged my handsome gold watch from its fob, I couldn't hear it going. I glanced at its face and then burst into tears as I saw it said seven o'clock.

2285 We were behind the time of the fire slack and the rage of the conflagration was in full fury. When the wheat in the fields are fully grown and properly raised, it grows so thick together that you find it very tough & impossible to work your way through.

So therefore the waves of the big fire when it is burning large seem always to burn fiercest on the underneath part which appears very strange to those who don't understand such fires and this is what is called undergrowth fire.

This is the hardest to fight almost impossible. Well so far we had first retreated, and then rallied very cleverly, but presently a giant gigantic sea of fire appeared to take us near the left rear

and forced us to again to retreat as it advanced. I would not have believed that any wheat fire could become so big. And so to the rear we retreated in a sweep & side wind & plume that made me feel

sick and dizzy as if I was falling from some lofty mountain top in a dream. But while we were falling back I had thrown a quick glance around and that one glance was enough. I saw our exact position in an instant.

The main fire was about a quarter of a mile dead ahead, but no more like any other of the conflagration as we saw it then. If I had not known where we were and what we had to expect I should not have recognized the character of the inferno at all.

As it was I looked on in horror and decided as the wind was favorable, to set up a counter fire which was our only salvation.

As it was I involuntarily closed my eyes in horror. The lids clinched themselves together as if in a spasm.

It could not have been more than two minutes afterwards when we suddenly felt the heat slightly and suddenly subside; and were enveloped in thick smoke and sparks. The fire made a sharp turn to the west and then

2 2287 shot off in its new direction like with the speed of a hurricane. At the same moment the strange hissing and crackling noise of the flames was completely drowned in a kind of shrill shriek such a sound as you might imagine given out by the water pipes of dozens of steam ships, letting off their steam all together.

What made this crazy sound I could never tell or find out. We were now facing the belt of fire surge that was always trying to jump the breaches and I thought that another moment would plunge the main fire across into a new sea of inferno forward to which we could only see indistinctly on account of the slow but amazing sure course of the big smoke clouds which were rising so high and thick.

The wheat did not seem at first to fall or sink before the fire at all but to burn standing straight up, the flames to seem like air bubbles upon the surface

of the fields of wheat 2288 The zigzagging stream was through the flaming wheat but not wide enough to prevent the flames crossing it and on its south side rose the world of flaming ocean we had retreated before.

It reared like a huge writhing wall between us and beach No 2.

It may seem strange but now when the fields were in the very jaws of the flames, I felt more composed than when we were only first fighting it.

Having made up my mind to hope no more I got rid of a great deal of that discouragement and terror which unmanned me at first I suppose it was despair that strung my nerves.

It may look like boasting but what I tell you is truth I knew I received no orders to do so, but I began to reflect how magnificent a thing it was to start a big counter fire while I had the chance and how foolish it was in me to of so paltry a consideration as to delay it, in view of so wonderful

228⁹ a manifestation of Gods great power. I do believe I blushed with shame when this idea did

cross my mind. After a while I became possessed with the sharpest curiosity about the counter fire itself.

I positively felt a wish to see what the results would be even at the sacrifice I was going to make and my principal grief was that I should never be able to tell my old companions about the real mysteries resulting from the great counter fires I would see.

There no doubt were singular fancies to occupy a mans mind in such extremity, and I've often thought since that the heat, smoke and fatigue might have rendered me a little bit light headed.

There was another circumstance which tended to restore my self possession, and this was the wind stayed on the northeast, only blew a little breeze, which if I took advantage of it could reach

our present situation for 228⁹ as you saw yourself and 229⁰ induced you to counter fire; the belt of fire was slightly opposed to the breeze and the wheat burned a ~~lot~~ considerably faster slower than the general bed of the upper portion of the fiery ocean, and this lattered towered above us a high long ridge of fire. This too me was lucky for a successful counter fire.

If you have never been near a big forest fire even in a heavy gale called "the fire hurricane" you can form no idea of the confusion of sound occasioned by thousands of trees burning at once and smoke together.

The glare even by day blind you, the smoke strangles you and take away all power of action or reflection.

But ~~even~~ we were now in a great measure rid of these annoyances and I sent you word I was going to take the chance and counter fire. Did you get my message? "Yes. I answered" I wrote back go ahead."

2291 How often we made the circuit of the Gehennas right wing it is impossible to say we tried the counter attack desperately for about an hour, fighting to make one breach after another, getting gradually more and more to the middle of the fields behind us but the fire kept coming on nearer and nearer with its horrible utter edge throwing heat that no one can withstand.

All this time I never let go of the line of battle. What was so hard is that the lower stems of the wheat was so toughly grown, and so thick together it was almost impossible to sever and we only could three or feet from the top down.

The thrashers were somewhat good but too slow. Jim Scanlon was at the center holding his line of battle which was securely lashing against the right center and was the only line of fighters that had not been swept back on retreat when the fire threatening to trap me, had

me on a swift retreat 2292 as the fire approached the bunk of the breach, he sent two men forward and made personally for the fire storm, in which in the agony of his desperation he endeavored to force back as it was not a long enough fighting front to afford us both a secure grasp, I never felt deeper grief than when I saw him attempt this act, although I knew he was fighting like a madman when he did it, fighting like a 'naring maniac through sheer desperation and dare devil recklessness.

I did not care however to contest the point with him. I knew it would make no difference whether either either of us held on at all, so I let his line do battle to the flames face to face and went to storm the left center and right.

His there was no great difficulty in doing for the flames held steadily to its fringe by the breach and upon an even line only swaying to an fro with the breeze and the immense sweeps and swelters of the main blaze behind it.

2293 Scarcely had I rescued myself in my new position when the flames gave a wild lurch forward and rushed headlong across the breach because of its exceedingly searing heat.

I muttered a hurried prayer to God and thought all was over that now we were really licked.

As I then observed the sickening sweep across that breach, I had really instinctively tightened my battle line and closed desperately with it. You ought to see how madly we fought. For some minutes I dare not think of retreating, while I expected instant destruction of every thing before us, and wondered that we were not already in our death struggles with the fire.

But moment after moment elapsed. We still held. It couldn't cross the second breach. The sense of losing the battle had ceased and the forward motion of the flames seemed much as it had been before while in the belt of flames with the exception that it now too held its own. I took courage

with the arrival of noon 2298 men and looked once again upon the scene. Never shall I forget the sensation of awe honor and admiration with which I gazed about me. The flames appeared to be hanging back as if by magic, midway from the second breach upon the interior surface of the large field vast in immensity prodigious in length and whose perfectly flaming walls of fire might have been mistaken for golden, ~~and~~ white and red flames. But for the bewildering rapidity with which they spread across the fields and for the gleaming blinding dazzling and ghastly radiance they shot forth as the rays of the inferno from the towering sea of fire stream from those rolling clouds of smoke which I have already described streamed in a flood of golden fiery glory along the black walls of distant rolling smoke and far away across the fields to distant farm houses.

At first I was too much confused to observe anything

2295 accurately - The general burst
of terrific grandeur was all
that I beheld. When I recovered

myself a little however my gaze
went instinctively forward. In this
direction I was able to obtain an
unobstructed view from the manner
in which the smoke and flame
hung on the upward surface of
the raging inferno. It still was
quite in a long straight burn-
ing wave - that is to say the
flames stretched in a plane
parallel with the fields of wheat,
but this latter stretched at an
angle of more than one hun-
dred degrees so that we seemed
in danger of being trapped
again.

I could not keep observing
however or nevertheless that I
had scarcely more difficulty
in maintaining my hold to
the fighting and situation
than if we had been on
a real "Civil war" battlefield
and this I suppose was owing
to the speed at which we
were now fighting forward.
We were now winning I was

sure and without using the 2296
chances of a counter fire. The
radiance of the fire seemed to
search every section of the land-
scape, but still I could make
out nothing distinctly on account of
the thick smoke clouds in which
everything there was enveloped over
which there hung under the smoke
darkened sky a magnificent
overlapping sheet of flame.

This smoke cloud was no
doubt occasioned by the burning of
the lower wheat stems as they all
burned together almost to the
ground - but the hissing and crack-
ling and other sounds I cannot
describe.

Our first headlong attack through
the wheat fields themselves from the
best of fire in the forefront had
carried us forward to a great dis-
tance along the front fighting
line, but our farther advance
was by no means proportionate.

Onward and onward we fought
not with an uniform move-
ment but in sweeps here
and there, and jerks that kept
us sometimes a few hundred yards,

2298 sometimes nearly the complete length of the fighting front. Our progress onward at each exertion was slow but perceptible.

Looking about me upon the whole waste of almost liquid fire against which we were sweeping no successfully, I perceived that our assault was not the only one directed against the conflagration.

Both right and left of us were visible ranks of men large masses with gunny sacks and bucket brigades and men with all the various cutting utensils, were aiding us.

I have already the unnatural curiosity which had taken the place of my original discouragements and terrors. It appeared to grow upon me as I drew nearer and nearer to the chance to over come the inferno. I now began to watch with a strange almost uncanny interest the numerous men that mingled with our company. I must have been delirious - for I even sought amusement in speculating

upon the relative success 2299 of their attack upon the flames towards the main assault line a little further beyond. This line of men I found myself at one time saying will certainly be the next one that pushes on in the awful assault and drives back the fire - and then I was disappointed to find that another line of men else where along side over took them and drove on before.

At length after making several guesses of this nature and being deceived in all - in fact, this fact - the fact of my invariable miscalculation set me upon a painful reflection, that made my limbs again tremble and my heart beat heavily heavily once more.

It was not a new terror that thus affected me, but the dawn of a new hope.

This hope arose partly from memory and partly from present observation. I called to mind the great variety of successes already being gained by others that strewn the fields having been victorious and then throwing

2300 desperately forward to further assault. By far the greater number of men shattered the wheat fields in the most extraordinary way - so shafted and cut down as to have the appearance of being stock full of straw, but then, I distinctly recollected that there were scores of other men which did not disfigure the fields at all.

Now I could not account for this difference except by supposing that the toughened veterans were the only ones which had been completely successful, the fire could not withstand them, that the others had entered the fray at so late a period of the fight, or from some reason had advanced so slowly after entering the battle that they did not so far forward, before the turn of the main assault came, or of the reinforcements as the case may be.

I conceived it possible in either instance that they might be driven back again to the rear of the field like I

had been without 2301 ungenerating the fate of my men which early this morning had been forced to retreat with such rapidly. They held adamant. They swept all before them.

Then I made also three important observations. The first was that as a general rule the larger the bodies of men were, the more rapid their advance. The second that, between two masses of the same extent, the speed of forward assault was at the same time, the third that between two lines of men of equal size the troops by the fire could not be understood.

Our success here was becoming a small race now. Since my sweeping success I have had several conversations on this subject with Duggs who counterfired along your district, and it was from him that I learned this was the best method of attack.

He explained to me - although I have forgotten the explanation, how what I observed was in fact the natural consequences

2302 of the formation of the assaulting troops and showed me how it happened that two lines attacking together offered more success to their advance and were gone forward, so that the fire was holding with much greater difficulty than an equally lucky body of fire of any form what ever.

There was one startling circumstance which went a great way in enforcing these observations, and rendering me anxious to turn them to account and that this was that at every assault by new numbers, we cut the flames off from the breaches, while there assault which had been along our front when I first opened my eyes upon the awful wonders of the conflagration were now doing a sort of mill race and have seemed to have driven the flames far in front of us.

I no longer hesitated what to do. I resolved to dash myself forward at the double near the breach we had held the fire at bay to cut loose

like a savage, and throw 2303 myself forward with all my might. I attracted Jim's attention by signs and made him understand what I was about to do. He comprehended my design and prepared to do so also. It was impossible to signal John Manley the emergency admitted of no delay so with a bitter struggle I resigned him to his own will and precipitated myself and whole line into the greatest assault against the fire ever without another moment's hesitation.

The result was precisely what I had hoped it might be. As it is myself who now tell you this tale, as you see I did win and as you are already in possession of the mode in which this great success was effected, and must therefore anticipate all that I have farther to say - I will bring my story quickly to conclusion. It might have been about a quarter of an hour or thereabout after my start of the general assault after having pushed forward quite a ways. I observed that Jim's assault had outstudded mine, when while

2304 John Manley leading on
his men plunged head
long at once carrying all
before him. I don't know at that
time things were going elsewhere
along the fighting front but we
had our fire licked to stay put.

But how it did smoke.

For all a great change took place
in the character of the conflagration. The fierceness of the
flames became momentarily less
and less resistant to us and
by degrees we finally could
fight our way through it
and it seemed slowly to
yield.

But the sky was smoke covered
the breezes still held off
nearheart, when at that distance
I saw your Counter fire and
now for me that the danger
was over and I was really
successful I was speechless from
the memory of its honor.

Fright distress deprivation and
most violent death by storm
and devastation by a wheat
fire of unsurmountable magnitude
affecting countless thousands

of the people of 22 in 2305
many cities and villages in the
nation and villages destroyed by
the field fires property loss
amounting to a great million many
millions of dollars, all that our great-
est imagination can conjure
from the words and more has
hung over the American public
like a persistent nightmare filled
with unnamed horror and
has stirred the whole nation and
even the world with profound
sympathy for the victims.

And among our people that
sympathy has taken form in sub-
stantial assistance for all the sur-
vivors by the gift of money pro-
visions clothing and government
supervision, for all the farmers who
lost their wheat by fire, and
other property by explosion or
shock. The president set in
motion every agency of the federal
government for relief
terms, nations medical supplies
while many states and cities
were quick to respond.

Following closely the dis-
astrous storm of middle
north the first of a far worse

2306 tornado, and destructive field fires ever on record occurred on August 15 1900. The cities of Chester Brown and Jamesville were the worst sufferers, the latter swept away with no trace. All of Eden Chesterbrown also wiped out except thirty one building, but unlike Jamesville it was not blown away.

Yet too for countless acres of valuable wheat, barley and other fields an even worst fate was in store at the moment that the nation was filled with sympathy for the victims of the tornado victims.

For several days after the storm very little rain had fallen over the entire Mississippi Valley and the weather of special drought over the states of Illinois Indiana Ohio, and many others even Texas.

Every where was an intolerably hot sun, creeks were drying up and rivers very low.

But the worst was yet to come. Since the "air maelstrom" many farmers clearing their wreck strewn fields from the

rear of tornado wreckage 2308 from the town had near the right of way of the Rock Island had piled immense mounds of debris of great extent and close to wheat fields.

Though arson is suspected though without proof a mysterious fire broke out among the debris closest to the fields and the wheat field fires rose to unprecedented extent, height and heat.

It suddenly increased so that the entire farm territory was completely inundated by a terrific conflagration forcing thousands of us to fight it all night to no avail. Owing to the suddenness and swiftness of the conflagration it was impossible to get adequate relief to those who first came to fight, and they could make no progress what ever.

With each dispatch from the stricken farms of Ill. it became clearer that the first impressions of the fire disaster shocking as it were fell far beneath the dreadful reality. Help in fighting came and their equipment came promptly

2309 and steadily steadily yet, hundreds overwhelmed by the heat and driven back, many being through carefulness spared from being heat prostrated, scorched only to suffer from over exhaustion hunger and thirst, and hardships, and the perils of being trapped by the fire, fields submerged in a sea of fire villages burned away many farm houses destroyed miles upon miles of populous landscapes of fields in the grip of this fire sea and over all because of the wheat loss, the grim shadows of starvation and towns smothered out, this catastrophe defies picture and parallel to express its desolating horror. All because of that damn debris blaze.

This wide spread wheat fire calamity which smote with its cruellest force and burning fury the beautiful wide country side was one of those for which no personal responsibility can be blamed or placed. Like the Chicago fire which wiped out the city, and the great forest fires of the west, it is a inferno which could

not have been foreseen or stayed. There had been no lack of preparation for anything short of an unimaginable out burst have been guarded against. Cupidity and recklessness had no part in contributing to the cause as in fire starting on the windrows of corn and debris.

How on the world did it get afire. Not from spontaneous combustion, and it was proven the sun didn't do it, as it was cloudy the morning the fire started.

Discussion simply came from there and nothing that man could do or might have done could resist the devastating fury of the fire.

In the presence of such a fearful disaster there were a few persons whom we did suspect and some did think that in some unseen manner or violated an order not to fire the debris under any conditions because of the wheat and this violation could meet the death penalty if the arsonists were found out and caught.

Yet there were many persons who did say and well say and there are some who did and will think that this was

2311 some manner of retribution
decreed upon the communities
which suffered by or on account
of the very magnitude and super-
human force and fury of it will
suggest to many minds the sure
thought of fire logging work
in spite of warning signs near
the debris piles.

Such a concept unhappily held
now was of course revolting to
sober judgements and instincts
and to the instincts of religious
or any reverence. It implied that
multitudes of people should be
smoked out of their cities by
smoke coming their way it would
attempt the impossible feat of
justifying the smothering of
So I also and afterwards many
northern and distant places by
smoke where all the inhabitants
who lived lives of peaceful
helpful industry had to clear
out to get away from all
that smoke. That too caused so
many to come and help
fight the fires.

We did not believe that
this was any vengeance de-
creed by some one who may

have a grudge against 2312
some of the farmers. It was
superhuman but not supernat-
ural. We firmly believed it
was but a manifestation of a
fire bug or more causing an un-
changeable irresistible fire of fury
governed by natural laws which
were inexorable. Nature herself
knows revenge or pity or charity.

She does not select her victims
nor does she turn aside to save
the good who may be in her
path. As her concern is not with
individuals but with the race
so she is moved not by mercy
but by law. And also Nature
cannot stop a fire bug in the
act.

Yet to the limited vision of man
with his brief life, nature
seems incredibly cruel and waste-
ful. But can she be compared
to the heartlessness and cruelty
of an arsonist? Never. The experience
of what arson causes is always
learned at fearful costs. As men
will ask ourselves what lessons
are taught by the arsonist causing
this overwhelming disaster far
worse than the tornado.

2313 But there flows from such
a catastrophe a higher and
better influence than this. With
all its horror and unmeasurable shock
there inevitably a great joining of minds
and heart. It will make the whole
world feel the thrill of kinship and
common humanity.

For the time being I'm sure it
will cause all conceptions of social
caste and class distinction the most
unworthy thoughts of being fashioned
in all the image of their Maker
to be leveled and totally for-
gotten. Then also will disappear
selfishness and indifference.

Throughout the nation also
the world there thrills and uplift-
ing current of brotherhood to
make the consciousness that "we
be of one blood."

Wherever civilization has
exercised its beneficent influence
upon the minds of men there
is felt for a little time at least
the sense that all humanity
is one, that enforced strife
of all of us 10,000 wheat fire
fighters was but a pitiful
thing, and that we may better

concern ourselves. not
yet victorious because we find no
means to fight the smoulder
while trying to make the common
lot brighter and to soften the
scorching and over smoking rigors we
must all face.

Specifically does not such an app-
alling appalling event serve to awaken
responsibility among us, such a severe
wind break out and rouse the
smoulder into a new conflagration?

Thank heaven it never did
happen. When all goes well when
there are no thunderous warnings
such as this of the helplessness of
man against the forces arrayed
against him, the fortunate do not
realize that for millions mere
existence is a poignant struggle.
that there really is a hell on earth
from cruel nature that hunger
cold, intense suffering, shock of
severe unbidden unexpected losses
and all various of hard diseases
prevail when there are no ghastly
storms earthquakes, floods the
horror of fire to make them
word and picturesque.

We do not doubt that there
are many who will be killed,

2315 or stirred by the shock of
this dreadful story to a deeper
and more sympathetic understand-
ing with the conditions that
surrounded us on all sides

Later without our knowledge during
our late late fight investigators came
to me handing a 'large paper' to
read -

So Salle August 18 ~~1885~~
1908. Henry Gore ^{Danger to shot?} Dangerous

I am deeply distressed of your
suspicion of the wrecho set
afire by vandal arsonists. We
did keep in investigation

You will understand when I
say that because of your assist-
ance to the safety of the
town by battling this greatest
fire of all times everything
will be done to apprehend
the vandals.

If caught they'll be handed
over to you who can handle
the situation. There's stunning
evidence its arson. And also
the people of So Salle,
whats left of Ester Brown Ottawa
Mourne Mores and other
places desire however to
express their gratitude to

you you and your army 2316
of fire fighters for over come
over coming that terrible fire. Only
the smoke still bothers us.
James Wallis.

Mayor of So Salle

I.e. if any further good can come
from a fire large made catastrophe so
cruel it may be in the stimulating
pride of race which it engenders.
Such experiences have a unique effect
upon the American nature. The
greater the calamity which falls upon
a community the greater seems the
rebound

Destruction and hardship seem to
open great reservoirs of latent energy
inventiveness and enterprise.

St Louis suddenly overwhelmed
by the devastating cyclone apparently
was doomed to moulder away in
forgotten ruins but her people
cleared the wreck and built a
greater city than before.

It's now also ought to be for
Chester Brown and Chesterchire and
So Salle.

For them visions of better com-
munities should rise before them in
hibants and make them real.

2317 civilization of any kind does
not free a flow of creative
power that destruction itself makes
for progress. There are great
disasters concentrate upon constructive
enterprises stores of emotional energy
that in other times are expended
in the fierce struggle of competitive
existence.

Yet what did I witness? Scenes
of savage fighting for nearly
thirty six hours against fire adorned
suffering and fire horror that did
beggan all description. Countless millions
dollars worth of wheat consumed, and
other farm property destroyed. The
world will be shocked by this
appalling news. And the meaning
hot smoulder that refuses to burn
down and out because of the amount
and the unmeasurable thickness of the
growth of all.

Kug weed war with its poisonous
smoke. All this following the
tornado which swept the cities
without warning. We of the
human race will always be
the plaything of Old Mother
Nature. We are always boast
loudly we can in time whip
and conquer her, and the earth

takes a terrific spasm and 2318
cities collapse into clouds of ashes
dust a famous writer said of our
famous illustration Franklin "He
snatched the scepter from tyrants and
the lightning from the skies, but
the lightning strikes man dead and
consumes his home. Blizzards imprison
him in his home and also Cold waves
and ice storms.

Hot weather either tortures him pro-
trates or kills him. Man thinks he
has mastered the ocean but the fates
contradict him. He declares his
independence of the wind upon the
ocean and the wind upon the land
wrecks his buildings and sweeps away
villages towns and parts of cities and
wipes out farms.

Unlike all these disasters however
whole sale fires break all records.

San Francisco fire. Moscow Baltimore
Baltimore and the big Chicago fire.
Forest fires Galore. Volcanic eruptions
of the greatest fury. Dangerous
whirlpools of the air and sky some-
times from thunderstorm.

There have been many most
terrible calamities by storms flood
fire in early modern times
but none to equal these two

2319 two which came so suddenly.
No one was aware of the im-
pending fate of all those fields
of wheat in a moment in the
twinkling of an eye we all awoke to
the awful fact that the worst fire the
world had ever seen was upon them.

The news of this overwhelming fire
disaster will come as a stunning
blow to people everywhere. If
I had time I could write a whole big
history which could contain striking
descriptions of our desperate fight
against this awful calamity.

It could depict the terrible scenes
of success and reverses that followed
the agony and even exhaustion
of the fighters, and heroic efforts of the
volunteers from other towns to halt
this "world" fire until out of
sheer desperation we counter
fired and by that method won
counter firing at night was
too dangerous.

My story of the appalling horror
caused by those firebugs, the
oncoming of the mountain of
flame without warning, the
unrelenting of fiery fury, the
great numbers who so bravely
contested it at the risk of being

cut off from escape 2319
thousands forced to flee 2220
before it only to rally again
and fight it fiercer than ever,
chosen everywhere, explosions spread
spreading the fires all this could
fill up a big history volume.
All this because of arson. If they're
caught and brought to me -

I thought I couldn't stop it as it was
done against my will. Idle eye witnesses
made thrilling stories about us and
exaggerate a lot of it. I thought let the
fighters speak for themselves. Why not
let them tell of even facing sudden
danger how they in thousands this awful
morning fought manfully the horror
flames which for a time made them
helpless against the onslaught of
the conflagration.

Farmers can also tell how they
saw their homes barns and extensive
fields swept away. But these were
good examples of heroism. It could
thrill the reader if I described
them. Amidst the alarms the
terrific fighting the threatening of
death if being trapped, the over-
whelming fire and desolation,
until the counter fires, I saw how
nobly men struggled almost beyond

2326 their strength to subdue the
fires to save the other fields.
They seemed to ride on the crest
of the flames and witness with their
own eyes the terrible tragedies.

I would have to say again was
man humbled by the power of
the Almighty and the great dis-
asters of the middle west with
its fertile grain fields lies
smouldering by fire.

Like a pygmy man the pow-
erful has seen his farms mowed
down and his house leveled by
fire and all consumed to the
four winds. Because of firebugs
and their heinous work there
grew a conflagration of almost un-
paralleled destruction which swept
over more than a thousand acres
to awe mankind and claim
as tribute untold millions of dol-
lars of field property.

So the incendiary fire laid
waste the proudest handiwork
of man despite our desperate
war against it and won
everlasting recognition of fiery
power and added by big
explosions gave brought

2327
2328
2329
2330
2331
2332
2333
2334
2335
2336
2337
2338
2339
2340
2341
2342
2343
2344
2345
2346
2347
2348
2349
2350
2351
2352
2353
2354
2355
2356
2357
2358
2359
2360
2361
2362
2363
2364
2365
2366
2367
2368
2369
2370
2371
2372
2373
2374
2375
2376
2377
2378
2379
2380
2381
2382
2383
2384
2385
2386
2387
2388
2389
2390
2391
2392
2393
2394
2395
2396
2397
2398
2399
2400
2401
2402
2403
2404
2405
2406
2407
2408
2409
2410
2411
2412
2413
2414
2415
2416
2417
2418
2419
2420
2421
2422
2423
2424
2425
2426
2427
2428
2429
2430
2431
2432
2433
2434
2435
2436
2437
2438
2439
2440
2441
2442
2443
2444
2445
2446
2447
2448
2449
2450
2451
2452
2453
2454
2455
2456
2457
2458
2459
2460
2461
2462
2463
2464
2465
2466
2467
2468
2469
2470
2471
2472
2473
2474
2475
2476
2477
2478
2479
2480
2481
2482
2483
2484
2485
2486
2487
2488
2489
2490
2491
2492
2493
2494
2495
2496
2497
2498
2499
2500
2501
2502
2503
2504
2505
2506
2507
2508
2509
2510
2511
2512
2513
2514
2515
2516
2517
2518
2519
2520
2521
2522
2523
2524
2525
2526
2527
2528
2529
2530
2531
2532
2533
2534
2535
2536
2537
2538
2539
2540
2541
2542
2543
2544
2545
2546
2547
2548
2549
2550
2551
2552
2553
2554
2555
2556
2557
2558
2559
2560
2561
2562
2563
2564
2565
2566
2567
2568
2569
2570
2571
2572
2573
2574
2575
2576
2577
2578
2579
2580
2581
2582
2583
2584
2585
2586
2587
2588
2589
2590
2591
2592
2593
2594
2595
2596
2597
2598
2599
2600
2601
2602
2603
2604
2605
2606
2607
2608
2609
2610
2611
2612
2613
2614
2615
2616
2617
2618
2619
2620
2621
2622
2623
2624
2625
2626
2627
2628
2629
2630
2631
2632
2633
2634
2635
2636
2637
2638
2639
2640
2641
2642
2643
2644
2645
2646
2647
2648
2649
2650
2651
2652
2653
2654
2655
2656
2657
2658
2659
2660
2661
2662
2663
2664
2665
2666
2667
2668
2669
2670
2671
2672
2673
2674
2675
2676
2677
2678
2679
2680
2681
2682
2683
2684
2685
2686
2687
2688
2689
2690
2691
2692
2693
2694
2695
2696
2697
2698
2699
2700
2701
2702
2703
2704
2705
2706
2707
2708
2709
2710
2711
2712
2713
2714
2715
2716
2717
2718
2719
2720
2721
2722
2723
2724
2725
2726
2727
2728
2729
2730
2731
2732
2733
2734
2735
2736
2737
2738
2739
2740
2741
2742
2743
2744
2745
2746
2747
2748
2749
2750
2751
2752
2753
2754
2755
2756
2757
2758
2759
2760
2761
2762
2763
2764
2765
2766
2767
2768
2769
2770
2771
2772
2773
2774
2775
2776
2777
2778
2779
2780
2781
2782
2783
2784
2785
2786
2787
2788
2789
2790
2791
2792
2793
2794
2795
2796
2797
2798
2799
2800
2801
2802
2803
2804
2805
2806
2807
2808
2809
2810
2811
2812
2813
2814
2815
2816
2817
2818
2819
2820
2821
2822
2823
2824
2825
2826
2827
2828
2829
2830
2831
2832
2833
2834
2835
2836
2837
2838
2839
2840
2841
2842
2843
2844
2845
2846
2847
2848
2849
2850
2851
2852
2853
2854
2855
2856
2857
2858
2859
2860
2861
2862
2863
2864
2865
2866
2867
2868
2869
2870
2871
2872
2873
2874
2875
2876
2877
2878
2879
2880
2881
2882
2883
2884
2885
2886
2887
2888
2889
2890
2891
2892
2893
2894
2895
2896
2897
2898
2899
2900
2901
2902
2903
2904
2905
2906
2907
2908
2909
2910
2911
2912
2913
2914
2915
2916
2917
2918
2919
2920
2921
2922
2923
2924
2925
2926
2927
2928
2929
2930
2931
2932
2933
2934
2935
2936
2937
2938
2939
2940
2941
2942
2943
2944
2945
2946
2947
2948
2949
2950
2951
2952
2953
2954
2955
2956
2957
2958
2959
2960
2961
2962
2963
2964
2965
2966
2967
2968
2969
2970
2971
2972
2973
2974
2975
2976
2977
2978
2979
2980
2981
2982
2983
2984
2985
2986
2987
2988
2989
2990
2991
2992
2993
2994
2995
2996
2997
2998
2999
3000
3001
3002
3003
3004
3005
3006
3007
3008
3009
3010
3011
3012
3013
3014
3015
3016
3017
3018
3019
3020
3021
3022
3023
3024
3025
3026
3027
3028
3029
3030
3031
3032
3033
3034
3035
3036
3037
3038
3039
3040
3041
3042
3043
3044
3045
3046
3047
3048
3049
3050
3051
3052
3053
3054
3055
3056
3057
3058
3059
3060
3061
3062
3063
3064
3065
3066
3067
3068
3069
3070
3071
3072
3073
3074
3075
3076
3077
3078
3079
3080
3081
3082
3083
3084
3085
3086
3087
3088
3089
3090
3091
3092
3093
3094
3095
3096
3097
3098
3099
3100
3101
3102
3103
3104
3105
3106
3107
3108
3109
3110
3111
3112
3113
3114
3115
3116
3117
3118
3119
3120
3121
3122
3123
3124
3125
3126
3127
3128
3129
3130
3131
3132
3133
3134
3135
3136
3137
3138
3139
3140
3141
3142
3143
3144
3145
3146
3147
3148
3149
3150
3151
3152
3153
3154
3155
3156
3157
3158
3159
3160
3161
3162
3163
3164
3165
3166
3167
3168
3169
3170
3171
3172
3173
3174
3175
3176
3177
3178
3179
3180
3181
3182
3183
3184
3185
3186
3187
3188
3189
3190
3191
3192
3193
3194
3195
3196
3197
3198
3199
3200
3201
3202
3203
3204
3205
3206
3207
3208
3209
3210
3211
3212
3213
3214
3215
3216
3217
3218
3219
3220
3221
3222
3223
3224
3225
3226
3227
3228
3229
3230
3231
3232
3233
3234
3235
3236
3237
3238
3239
3240
3241
3242
3243
3244
3245
3246
3247
3248
3249
3250
3251
3252
3253
3254
3255
3256
3257
3258
3259
3260
3261
3262
3263
3264
3265
3266
3267
3268
3269
3270
3271
3272
3273
3274
3275
3276
3277
3278
3279
3280
3281
3282
3283
3284
3285
3286
3287
3288
3289
3290
3291
3292
3293
3294
3295
3296
3297
3298
3299
3300
3301
3302
3303
3304
3305
3306
3307
3308
3309
3310
3311
3312
3313
3314
3315
3316
3317
3318
3319
3320
3321
3322
3323
3324
3325
3326
3327
3328
3329
3330
3331
3332
3333
3334
3335
3336
3337
3338
3339
3340
3341
3342
3343
3344
3345
3346
3347
3348
3349
3350
3351
3352
3353
3354
3355
3356
3357
3358
3359
3360
3361
3362
3363
3364
3365
3366
3367
3368
3369
3370
3371
3372
3373
3374
3375
3376
3377
3378
3379
3380
3381
3382
3383
3384
3385
3386
3387
3388
3389
3390
3391
3392
3393
3394
3395
3396
3397
3398
3399
3400
3401
3402
3403
3404
3405
3406
3407
3408
3409
3410
3411
3412
3413
3414
3415
3416
3417
3418
3419
3420
3421
3422
3423
3424
3425
3426
3427
3428
3429
3430
3431
3432
3433
3434
3435
3436
3437
3438
3439
3440
3441
3442
3443
3444
3445
3446
3447
3448
3449
3450
3451
3452
3453
3454
3455
3456
3457
3458
3459
3460
3461
3462
3463
3464
3465
3466
3467
3468
3469
3470
3471
3472
3473
3474
3475
3476
3477
3478
3479
3480
3481
3482
3483
3484
3485
3486
3487
3488
3489
3490
3491
3492
3493
3494
3495
3496
3497
3498
3499
3500
3501
3502
3503
3504
3505
3506
3507
3508
3509
3510
3511
3512
3513
3514
3515
3516
3517
3518
3519
3520
3521
3522
3523
3524
3525
3526
3527
3528
3529
3530
3531
3532
3533
3534
3535
3536
3537
3538
3539
3540
3541
3542
3543
3544
3545
3546
3547
3548
3549
3550
3551
3552
3553
3554
3555
3556
3557
3558
3559
3560
3561
3562
3563
3564
3565
3566
3567
3568
3569
3570
3571
3572
3573
3574
3575
3576
3577
3578
3579
3580
3581
3582
3583
3584
3585
3586
3587
3588
3589
3590
3591
3592
3593
3594
3595
3596
3597
3598
3599
3600
3601
3602
3603
3604
3605
3606
3607
3608
3609
3610
3611
3612
3613
3614
3615
3616
3617
3618
3619
3620
3621
3622
3623
3624
3625
3626
3627
3628
3629
3630
3631
3632
3633
3634
3635
3636
3637
3638
3639
3640
3641
3642
3643
3644
3645
3646
3647
3648
3649
3650
3651
3652
3653
3654
3655
3656
3657
3658
3659
3660
3661
3662
3663
3664
3665
3666
3667
3668
3669
3670
3671
3672
3673
3674
3675
3676
3677
3678
3679
3680
3681
3682
3683
3684
3685
3686
3687
3688
3689
3690
3691
3692
3693
3694
3695
3696
3697
3698
3699
3700
3701
3702
3703
3704
3705
3706
3707
3708
3709
3710
3711
3712
3713
3714
3715
3716
3717
3718
3719
3720
3721
3722
3723
3724
3725
3726
3727
3728
3729
3730
3731
3732
3733
3734
3735
3736
3737
3738
3739
3740
3741
3742
3743
3744
3745
3746
3747
3748
3749
3750
3751
3752
3753
3754
3755
3756
3757
3758
3759
3760
3761
3762
3763
3764
3765
3766
3767
3768
3769
3770
3771
3772
3773
3774
3775
3776
3777
3778
3779
3780
3781
3782
3783
3784
3785
3786
3787
3788
3789
3790
3791
3792
3793
3794
3795
3796
3797
3798
3799
3800
3801
3802
3803
3804
3805
3806
3807
3808
3809
3810
3811
3812
3813
3814
3815
3816
3817
3818
3819
3820
3821
3822
3823
3824
3825
3826
3827
3828
3829
3830
3831
3832
3833
3834
3835
3836
3837
3838
3839
3840
3841
3842
3843
3844
3845
3846
3847
3848
3849
3850
3851
3852
3853
3854
3855
3856
3857
3858
3859
3860
3861
3862
3863
3864
3865
3866
3867
3868
3869
3870
3871
3872
3873
3874
3875
3876
3877
3878
3879
3880
3881
3882
3883
3884
3885
3886
3887
3888
3889
3890
3891
3892
3893
3894
3895
3896
3897
3898
3899
3900
3901
3902
3903
3904
3905
3906
3907
3908
3909
3910
3911
3912
3913
3914
3915
3916
3917
3918
3919
3920
3921
3922
3923
3924
3925
3926
3927
3928
3929
3930
3931
3932
3933
3934
3935
3936
3937
3938
3939
3940
3941
3942
3943
3944
3945
3946
3947
3948
3949
3950
3951
3952
3953
3954
3955
3956
3957
3958
3959
3960
3961
3962
3963
3964
3965
3966
3967
3968
3969
3970
3971
3972
3973
3974
3975
3976
3977
3978
3979
3980
3981
3982
3983
3984
3985
3986
3987
3988
3989
3990
3991
3992
3993
3994
3995
3996
3997
3998
3999
4000
4001
4002
4003
4004
4005
4006
4007
4008
4009
4010
4011
4012
4013
4014
4015
4016
4017
4018
4019
4020
4021
4022
4023
4024
4025
4026
4027
4028
4029
4030
4031
4032
4033
4034
4035
4036
4037
4038
4039
4040
4041
4042
4043
4044
4045
4046
4047
4048
4049
4050
4051
4052
4053
4054
4055
4056
4057
4058
4059
4060
4061
4062
4063
4064
4065
4066
4067
4068
4069
4070
4071
4072
4073
4074
4075
4076
4077
4078
4079
4080
4081
4082
4083
4084
4085
4086
4087
4088
4089
4090
4091
4092
4093
4094
4095
4096
4097
4098
4099
4100
4101
4102
4103
4104
4105
4106
4107
4108
4109
4110
4111
4112
4113
4114
4115
4116
4117
4118
4119
4120
4121
4122
4123
4124
4125
4126
4127
4128
4129
4130
4131
4132
4133
4134
4135
4136
4137
4138
4139
4140
4141
4142
4143
4144
4145
4146
4147
4148
4149
4150
4151
4152
4153
4154
4155
4156
4157
4158
4159
4160
4161
4162
4163
4164
4165
4166
4167
4168
4169
4170
4171
4172
4173
4174
4175
4176
4177
4178
4179
4180
4181
4182
4183
4184
4185
4186
4187
4188
4189
4190
4191
4192
4193
4194
4195
4196
4197
4198
4199
4200
4201
4202
4203
4204
4205
4206
4207
4208
4209
4210
4211
4212
4213
4214
4215
4216
4217
4218
4219
4220
4221
4222
4223
4224
4225
4226
4227
4228
4229
4230
4231
4232
4233
4234
4235
4236
4237
4238
4239
4240
4241
4242
4243
4244
4245
4246
4247
4248
4249
4250
4251
4252
4253
4254
4255
4256
4257
4258
4259
4260
4261
4262
4263
4264
4265
4266
4267
4268
4269
4270
4271
4272
4273
4274
4275
4276
4277
4278
4279
4280
4281
4282
4283
4284
4285
4286
4287
4288
4289
4290
4291
4292
4293
4294
4295
4296
4297
4298
4299
4300
4301
4302
4303
4304
4305
4306
4307
4308
4309
4310
4311
4312
4313
4314
4315
4316
4317
4318
4319
4320
4321
4322
4323

2233 history of this country - and the situation is still absolutely with parallel. We want to fight the rumouder, but the heat wont let us get near it.

Owing to the frightful fire conditions throughout the entire territory of which the Zaneville farm districts was the heart fire fighters and all their fighting equipment and other supplies could not all reach my own fighting lines until midnight after the great fire broke.

During our desperate fight against the fire a long thick cordon of armed men from survivors of Chester Brown and So Falls barred the way to co. borders of curious spectators but forcing the men or able bodied men among them to help us or else - Only those bringing fighters or supplies for the fighters were admitted and many supplies were needed even medical Chas wagons was the staple most in demand.

The fields had been alive with the fighters.

They even joked and cued on song songs while desperately fighting. Many prayed for rain. An eye witness of the start

of the awful condition which 2334 threatened all the country side with total destruction is well shown the description to Mrs. Stevens by an official farmer, and a National Guardsman - who were making a tour of the ruins tornado districts of what was left of Chestershire.

They discovered the fire started on or in the south section of the debris in three places at once nearest the first wheat in that territory, worked its way through the wheat, jumped to a field of high rag weed fought its way towards the south, jumped over a wide stretch of bare ground as its way eastward and northward.

All this before I and all my first men could get ready to fight it. The farmer and the Guardsman saw four men running after the fires start and shot at them but they escaped.

By the time we began our work it was a full fledged hell. Yet we might have had a chance even then to beat it if it were not for the explosion scattering flaming material all about.

As I said while we fought and so much there was in the grip of the fires, and people of other districts

2235 looking on in horror while also sending us help the darn explosions scattered flaming wheat and added to the peril and the destruction of that part of the state.

The released fiery brands from the explosion, being hurled this way and that caused new fires to flare forth causing further conflagrations and damage to an extensive site of territory.

The fields were thronged along a vast front with frantic fighters seeking to stem its tide. Hundreds fought along my front to push it back but the heat restrained most of us. In doing so the fire by midnight had swept hundreds of acres out of existence or turned them into fierce fiery moulders.

I forgot to mention that not one photographer or newsmen were allowed near the scene. No one was allowed to take pictures if they were caught at it their cameras were smashed and the pictures taken away from them. Along the main right flank of the fire it was impossible to face it.

One thing I learned which during the excitement of the dreadful fight

I did not have the chance 2236 to see or hear. It was at ten thirty at night that a large herd of cows of some well to do farmer became badly panic stricken and raced before the flames for safety joined by a flock of wool covered sheep. They ran madly through the fields and down pathway uprooting trees knocking over frame sheds and knocking down rail fences and other cornals.

Dozens were overtaken by the flames and others because of panic went on the war path. A path was broke out between them and thirty five cows were killed in a pitched battle horn to horn.

Many perished in the flames and the bull who tried to get away fell exhausted as a result of its effort and died amidst the flames.

No reason of being too slow runners not one sheep or ram or lamb escaped and two dozen valuable hogs were roasted alive.

No one I smelled smoke as from burning meat. I found there are thousands of dead cows horses sheep hogs and farm goats and other farm animals strewn about the burning farms, and it will require many days to dispose of the carcasses as many of

2337 of these. lie deep among the smouldering inferno which before they can be removed may as well be in the incinerating plants for they'll all be ashes.

About the wheat fire they talk of the loss in dollars and cents and some with a commercial sense of proportion place the money monetary loss on the affected country at something like \$200 000 000, not including the animals or burned farm houses and barns.

And what estimate of value can be put upon the services of the brave enduring fire fighters or calculate the earning capacity of those few killed by being close to the field where the worst explosion occurred, and what the world has lost in the destruction of other crops.

Untellable horrors with persistent reports on the cities near by of additional calamities on the way of flaming towns, the desperate and at first unsuccessful fight of them and against the flames added destruction by fire among the rocky grass and alfalfa fields and the fleeing of wheat, grain, and barley from farmers, and dangerous smoke

perilousness. were pictured for 2338 the smoke bounds cities north west in south within a short time after the fire got such headway.

In one district it was related at So. Falls Sanitary Department headquarters that a whole flock of sheep could be seen from the Wicker Castle hill under piles of smouldering wheat.

No efforts were directed in any attempt to get at those burning bodies because of the withering heat and smoke.

Efforts had begun soon after dark to hold back the left to check the main fire back of it, but those fields were actually "carried" away by the fire storm storm before its left could be turned and this released an immense storage of fire back of it. This added a new crest of to the fire beyond and started hundreds of other fires which burned all before it and which were impossible to stop or even impossible to dare approach.

So no wonder so many animals in the fields or barns perished.

The crowded north of the fields a veritable volcano of smoulder where there may be thousands of all sorts of animals dead or dying in the smoulder.

2334 lay far beyond reach,
probably within the duration
of the smoulder there will be the
bodies of unknown farm animals
turning to ashes and it will be im-
possible to care even for the many
escaped which were scorched or in-
jured.

If any part of this section could
be relieved of the smudge it may
permit the city authorities to get to-
gether with the militia and the
Relief Committees and make some or-
ganized attempt to give aid in
the efforts to quench it.

Too much clouds of smoke going
everywhere added to the terror of
the fire elements. Countless refugees
from smoked cities are being
cared for in towns far to the
west and north west.

The weather is terribly hot,
adding to the suffering of those
forced to flee because of the
dense smoke enveloping their
cities and towns.

They went by trains or what-
ever they could ride on, be-
cause all this smoke added
honors to the already terrible
situation.

extensive fields are so blocked 3227 of
by debris & burning debris 2340
wheat smoulders that is impossible
that bodies of animals can be re-
covered. And far beyond the piled
mountains of tornado debris are shoot-
ing flames hundreds of feet high.

That big fire is just two miles
from us and adds immensely to
the heat and smoke. It is feared still
embers from it would set fire to
the exposure sheds, and it looks
serious.

There was one queer incident of this
disaster. Farmers found the body of a
dead bull over come by smoke, in a
corn field beyond the fire. Fastened to
his horn was an ripped umbrella.
How it happened no one knows. No
person could be found which was
assaulted by the animal.

Before the Counters fires had been
established the inferno had reached
its climax.

And every hotels and other places
were crowded to their capacity from
refugees fleeing their smoke smothered
cities and towns. All trains were
pressed into service removing every
body from the dense smoke area.

but hundreds died of before they escaped
from smoke inhalation.

2342 Rock Island they say is a
vast refugee camp. This city is
caring for the smoke refugees from
Illawa along the embankment on which
lies the Burlington and Quincy tracks is
one long smoke refugee station.

Countless thousands are refugeeed at
Burlington and Quincy, it is said
many are near death from the ex-
posure to the smoke and over ex-
posure they have undergone.

The stress of the situation is
taxing the generosity of the
citizens to the limit. Social divi-
sion lines have been forgotten
as all classes have thrown open
their homes to receive the
smoke sufferers.

In city halls big registration
bureaus are being conducted by
city officials under the personal
supervision of the Mayor of cities
and towns receiving the refugees.

It is reported that hundreds of
thousands of persons were forced
to leave the cities and towns and
are being cared for wherever
possible. Even there were refugees
from Gold and Chicago it is
reported.

Railroad officials and the relief

committee are urging smoke 2343
refugees to accept the hospitality of
the municipalities in the refugee cities.
They hope to relieve all sufferers.
No story of this awful fire and
smoke catastrophe would be complete
that failed to note the good work
on behalf of suffering humanity
on the part of the great newspapers
of all cities, those semi-public in-
stitutions through which the people
speak and hear their fellow men.

The far reaching effects of the
dense smoke can in no way can
be more clearly illustrated than in
the reports of the identification bu-
reau established by the newspapers.

Trains coming out of the fire territory
in every direction carried refugees from the
ill wheat smoked out cities and towns,
who told disturbing but thrilling stories,
described picturesque scenes of the fire
and gave wide views of the tremendous
damage wrought.

While most of the stories of the
smoulder and smoke horrors told
by the survivors were of the same
tenor some were able to give graphic
descriptions of the smudge and smoke
honors and told of miraculous escapes
of the fire fighters. The fact that

2344 that the railroads not interrupted by the twister were able to get their trains from Ottawa and other places through cities of the west was the cause as I've heard for a great influx of refugees from the smoked choked cities into northwest and western cities who for the first time were able to leave their smoke stricken cities by rail or by other means.

Another thing I heard of The Illinois Governor had drafted the services of some Senator I forget his name who because of his experiences in sociological work had been placed in charge of the issuing special permits to ride on trains sent over the railroads which the State had decreed must not carry righteers and undesirable people to the tornado struck places. A new decree came that no undesirable or right reers were permitted to the burned territories either.

Permission to ride on these trains was freely given to those who have relatives for whose safety they were concerned, but none other were allowed on them. Some were given

transportation and other orders 2345 which the railroad had to have before selling tickets. I had forgotten to mention that the same number of people were still outside of Chester Brown waiting for their missing ones of the wiped out Sacred Heart Convent.

Strange to say nearly every able bodied man among there, had come to help fight the field fire and proved good at it too. Dozens of trains also brought from northern cities, even from as Chicago, great numbers of equipped men to zoneville territory to combat this smoking hell if possible.

With them came thousands of tons of supplies for the fire fighters to be transported to relief points free of charge and gave the fire fighting merchandise preference in transit. Some right seeing parties did get through however. All of them were ordered out of the trains by Simon Segner fire fighting guards and put to work. And they'll work or else—

Hotels at even Springfield were crowded by smoke distressed refugees. One smoke sufferer I read of one

2346 insane by the experiences through which he had gone, He became suddenly violent on the streets of Springfield on a Tuesday afternoon and smashed a two dozen plate glass windows of stores, and violently attacked pedestrians, pedestrians before he was overpowered taken to a hospital and placed under restraint.

Yet the smouldering fires again assumed terrifying proportions because there was so much that did not even burn yet word was received from La Salle and Ottawa from the headquarters of the Relief Committee of the cities that the minute horses and fire apparatus could be rushed to the burning zone the equipment would be massed for the attempt. But can they do it in the face of all the killing heat and vast sea of rolling dense smoke?

Again I dare to say if there came a gale of wind—

While the smouldering flames still raged through the territory and threatened to eat into more and more wheat and the outside world wrung its hand in sorrow for all those

who by smoke heat and 2347 threatened death or death by suffocation had been threatened there existed in the town they fled to in which positions were made for working out towards a haven that was known to exist in the refuge cities.

Scorers were worked out for caring for those who were in want for provisions. Even means for attending to the sick and those suffering from smoke prostration were not overlooked.

Many new fighters added to the old made desperate attempts to contest the smouldering fire sea only to be driven back by the excessive heat and dense suffocating smoke.

The leaders returned to one another the other with reports that they couldn't penetrate within three quarters of a mile of the scorching smoulder, and they were not able to give an accurate report of what actual conditions were in the worst section of the miles upon miles of the smoulder inundated fiery fields.

The smoke covered the sky like a thick pall. Heaven alone knows how many fields have been wiped out. The terrors of this sea of smoulders were unfolded before us.

2348 The women and the men were wild with the terror as from the terror they had gone through their smoke filled cities, in the places of refuge it was a panorama of terror the half of which will never be told.

I read that in Ottawa men women and children not easily escaping the town were falling from being overcome by the smoke on the streets everywhere. By train news they were hurried onto vacant coaches and hauled away to safety.

Bravery fighting this terrific wide and miles long field fire lacked neither rank or station. It may thrill the soul of a Napoleon or a Wellington, or a See or Grant. I may ^{nerve} ~~save~~ the soul of the most humble, give envy to the proud.

From the ranks of these desperate fighters have come many whose daring facing all that fierce heat and fires fury all night and morning, whose daring has made history inspiring. It was so during the terrific battle of Garmelle.

So this story of the wheat sea fires was marked my unusual

tremendous feats of undoubted - 2349
able daring and fearless accomplishment even to dare death utmost reckless men. Brave men by the thousands contributed to the richness of the heritage of unbelievable bravery that will fall to the next generation. If those whose quiet bravery was effective receive medals there will be a long list when the next bestowal takes place.

What? why don't I speak of my own bravery? I do. Aint I one of the men. Though the main official set others aside me. I've no time or place for them. Bolder be humble, than humbled.

The long list of these men who faced such peril not for a moment but for all night under untill the time I counter fired, and passed through with due credit men who were far from the spotlight when their call came may never be known.

It was hard hot, dangerous work, hours of facing untold heat and blinding smoke were long and accommodations what they happened to be. There was neither logging nor complaining. My men on fire duty slept on the railroad bed

2400 after long hours of tail fighting a fire as desperate as they were and now to repeat the same in uncomfortable and dangerous tasks. Not in the history of world heroism outside of war times has there been a scene similar to that which maintained in the stricken farm fields when such number of men established such stubborn fighting lines.

The number of fighters grew from time to time as emergency demanded, and ample provisions and equipment was provided for them. Though they came to help the wheat thrashers could do nothing some were periled, and their operators had to flee.

And all this loss and destruction could not have happened if it was not for the suspected four fire bugs.

The lesson of this conflagration has been a bitter one, but if in the end it results in the adoption of plans that in the future will make safe all fields of farms, and other farm property and their possessions the price paid for the lesson will

not seem so high. And 2401 odd feature of the loss was that so little of the wheat was insured, not farm buildings were insured against fire and the loss from fire was inconsequential so far as known.

7 arm building, leveled by the shock of the last and biggest explosion were not insured against that.

The state the eighty eight Counties and the cities are face to face with a most discouraging problem in which the only ray of hope is the traditional capacity of the American to surmount all obstacles.

Official experts of St. Paul and of Ottawa said there was a direct relationship between the fire that swept the expanse of fields and the four arsonists. Every thing is being done to trace and capture them. The authorities are of the opinion regarding the fire.

That in a general way it was due to four arsonists setting fire to the debris nearest the wheat fields coupled with the act, that working men picking debris from farm deposited so much in so precarious a territory and crowding those grounds with so many countless tons of wood wreckage until it all

3403 became a dangerous fire hazard. They too are responsible for this disaster. And also there were no guards by the wreckage when there should be.

Wheat field fires it is explained are local and of various types which as I've read are briefly described as follows:

These kind of fires are violent hot commotions of the flames occurring because of the impossible thickness of the growth, and differs from other fires, in the extent over which they so swiftly spread and the sudden changes which take place in the direction and strength of the wind over wide areas.

There is perhaps no question in science in which there was long so large and admixture of speculation with fact as in the attempts made to reduce the phenomena of this great fire under general laws the reason being that fire station observatories are too few in number and too wide apart to represent the intensity of this tremendous conflagration like general covers of the steady but weak winds and the lack of well

needed rainfall without error 3404 drawing largely on conjecture. Since 1860 however sufficient data have been available for a fuller and more satisfactory statement of the facts.

In the beginning of the field fire the area was somewhat circular or elliptical, starting from the debris, the major axis of the fire ellipse being at first generally less than twice the minor axis causing it to be almost impossible to fight.

Rarely in any forest fire, but in wheat fields in the form of such fires much more elongated. At first the outline of this storm of fire was very irregular causing us them to get a little headway against it, but because of the first explosion in the windrows of debris, new fires were started then forming two or more distinct conflagrations that became hectic and dangerous impossible to control or oppose or it comprised within itself several severe satellite storms of fire. These drove us back the first time.

At the start the approximate circular form of this fire was its general character.

1465 This was the most important feature whether as determining the practical rules for the first guidance of the men then fighting the fire storm or for the observing the spread of the fire in all directions at once like it did, in respect of the direction from which the flames were expected to come, and the veering of the winds during their continuance and swift spread.

The extent over which this fire became was very tremendous, very few breaches could halt it, and by ten thirty at night it was consuming 60,000 yards of grain and wheat, barley and alfalfa. But soon became two or three times greater and soon even five times that amount.

Added by more explosion flying far off more fiery brands more than the whole of scores of acres was over spread almost at one time by an air scorching storm of fire.

The area of the fires was not constant at first from time to time but varied in size, sometimes expanding

and sometimes contracting 2406 and it is worthy to remark that when a fire of this kind contracts in the central depression, gives signs of filling up and if it had not been for the explosions we would have had the fires whipped, for before that the fires had seemed to be slowly dying out.

But the flying burning stuff thrown by the explosions increased it in extent the central blaze became fiercer, the fires increased in size, the heat increased in violence, and occasionally it broke up into two or even more infernos which became very big separate infernos with strange winds circulating around each caused by the intense heat.

Then we did have our hands full. Some breaches helped, some breaches made the situation worse. The tremendous heat made the flames advance the the northeasterly winds, slowly but irresistibly.

It burned from the southwest towards the northeast, the smoke then going towards the southwest smoking out towns and cities there.

We were totally surprised that

2408 The tremendous heat of this terrific conflagration did not cause whirl winds because I know there was enough ascending and descending currents of air it occasioned ^{now} occasioned by it to make one. We actually whirling columns of fire appearing as tall pillars of fire clouds stretching from the burning fields to the smoke cloud on the sky whirling momentarily around the axes and exhibiting the progressive movement of the whole mass precisely as in the case of a dust whirlwind.

The fire sea at the base of the whirling vortex of fire was thrown into very violent commotion resembling the surface of water in rapid ebullition.

These strange fire whirlwinds appeared on a scale of the most appalling grandeur.

This strange phenomenon might have been caused since the tremendous heat of the fire may have given rise to ascending columns of very superheated air, and descending currents of cooler air contiguous to them which resulted in eddies that drew up large clouds of flame

except that they were not drawn forward by the wind to be blowing from the northeast at the time but remained stationary and were a grave danger to us fighting men. This was probably the origin of these fire stationary whirlwinds of the conflagration, which we call "fire devils".

In facing it often the fire had become unbearably hot. In facing the ~~unbearable~~ unbelievable heat men dropped with sweat.

Wheat or even forest and brush fires rarely travel against the wind in some of the instances which have been noted the opposing course had been arrested but such opposing course is temporary, that strange course being afterwards resumed if it happens to be calm. Our wheat field fires did not always proceed in the same uniform direction, from hour to hour because of the thickness of the wheat growth, and the activeness of the killing heat, and though the change which occurred in the direction of their progressive motion was generally excessively extensive, it was too great to be described or imagined. Thus of the many interesting features peculiar to this storm of fire.

which started in the early evening from the wreckage pile and burned through so many countless acres by early morning none were more remarkable than the sudden changes of its progressive motion.

As stated before it was first observed starting from the flaming wreckage from which it advanced towards the straight north then turned south, through the main wheat fields, and to the ragweed fields it then from change of wind appeared to retreat northeast through the Oxford and Shields Alfalfa fields from which it proceeded east to threaten the big mound of hay under Castle Hill, and the long line of sheds full of explosives.

By the time it arrived at this territory its extent unbelievably immense more dangerous of what it had been the previous hours before and the central inferno breaking records for its flaming heat and hellish fury. Here though we fought it with such insane desperation that it could not reach the hay or Wicker Castle, though the sheds were still in grave danger.

Four hours later the main 2411 fire was restored the storm of fire having increased and it drove us before it. The southern edge of the conflagration followed a different course.


While a ~~new~~ number of new fires caused by embers flying by explosions took the general easterly course a large number of new fires originated in the fields west of the main inferno and pursued directions and courses over the western extension of the field because of the easterly breeze and heat and spark till they again changed course several advanced from west along its eastern burning front and others comparatively overlarge advanced in an easterly course towards the main conflagration heading for the west to then meet but instead of being subdued by the counter movement became a hell sea of fire and smoke clouds.

A marked feature of this unusual storm of fire including the rubbish blaze from which this started was its fast frequently retrograde and erratic courses and the immeasurable space of territory traversed by it, the height of its terrific fire, the canopy of the smoke across the sky, the ability to cross the breaches and while they overcome the mistral with

2412 the awfully hot upsurging sur-
ging currents of air swept down
on the wide grass fields. By far
the greater number of the fires
of this Gehenna take their rise in the
vast fields from scattered fire brands
hurled by the explosions and
thence advanced in an easterly
direction over the fields, gradually
joining together as one immense
sea of fire their course being large-
ly determined by the stiff Alfafa,
some parts of it crossed the
windiest gaps made and burst
in mauling fury on the eastern
fields.

But yet the connection of the
two big fires was not entirely
well established, these explosion
produced fires general generally took
their rise some where north of fields
not stricken yet, and tracing out
a parabolic course proceeded first
towards the southwest and west,
then turned to the south, not
a few traversing toward the east
against the easterly breeze as
said before to threaten the
hay Wicker Castle and ex-
plosive sheds, and because
of the easterly breeze smoke so

greatly that it seemed as if ~~2-28-3~~
the world was at an end. 2413
This fire we couldn't handle
fight as it was too dangerous and
threw such a killing heat. In fact
it was the worst of the whole con-
flagration. Why didn't I change the
counter fire then. We'd have been
then relieved. But I was really
afraid then.

On the south the fire followed
an opposite course toward the south-
east and then gradually curved
to the northeast. One section of
the main blaze pursued a para-
bolic path, first traversing the
eastern fields  towards the hay hill
and then turning to the
northeast across the fields towards
the sheds.

It took a mad danderall hell of
a fight to successfully cut it off
its course, and many fighters
were so overcome with ex-
haustion they had to be kept
ed to the rear of the field of
battle. Three times the conflagra-
tion threatened the sheds and
three times fresh men fought
with the fury of desperation
and were repulsed, but they saved

2412 the
ong the
the g
of this
vast of
hurled
thence
direction
forming
sea of
by the
some
under
on one
fields.
But
two
well
produces
their
not
a pair
toward
them
a few
again
said
he
for
of the

2415 the sheds and prevented
a monstrous explosion where
shock would have been terribly
disastrous every where for fifty or
more miles. The fires of the mat-
ter fringes resembled in the course
they took the fires heading east-

I've read that big fires such as
this or immense forest fires usually
cause whirlwinds and fiery tornadoes,
but they differ essentially in nature
from ordinary storms.

They form within the awful
conflagration and these individual types
of fiery whirlwinds
seldom continue longer than a
minute or a few seconds
at any place within the inferno,
their breadth varying from a few
yards to nearly a quarter of a mile,
and during their short duration
the changes of the hot fiery
wind are sudden and violent and
with the fire high up in most
cyclonic fiery fury.

But these fiery cyclones do
not move much forward but
what it can do does do is very
instantaneous and throws a heat
that would start your clothing to
smoke five hundred yards away whether

you believe it or not. The 2416
direction of the eddy of these
fiery whirl wind, especially when
the diameter is small differs
from the rotation of bigger ones
in a storm of destructive maelstrom
of fire in that it may take place
either way right to left or left
to right according to the direction
of the stronger of the two hot
rising and descending cold wind
admit the storm of fire which
gave rise to the real whirlwinds
of fires.

Whirlwinds often originate within
burning extensive wheat and grain
fields during the hottest of the
conflagration especially if the fire
is very extensive covering many
acres at one time since there
becoming unequally heated by the
hundreds of feet of roaring flames
gave rise to ascending columns
of singingly heated air to a great
elevation, and descending cooler air
contiguous to them which results
in flaming eddies that draw
up with them large clouds
of superheated flames and the
whole is borne forward by the
wind across the fields that may

2417 to be blowing at the time.
As I wrote before this is the
origin of the awful fire whirl-
winds of the "inferno" locally
known as "fire devils". They do
not however move forward like the
cyclones or tornadoes do but stay with
the fire. There is an exception how-
ever with forest fires. Created by the
heat and formed by cool descend-
ing winds they rage furiously
blowing the fire swiftly forward,
and they are called "Fire hurricanes".

These winds are absolutely strong
and very cyclonic. They could damage
and have damaged ranches and
other property.

These whirling fire storms are
frequent in the hottest more ex-
tensive forest fires, were if it
fire started on a very windy day.

And in the case of a forest
fire racing up a mountain side,
they appear on a scale of the
most appalling grandeur or record.

That has been said or written
but I do not believe a forest
has ever put itself out by
forming a rain storm above.
I have never read or heard
of any such an incident or

of it ever being proven, 2418
Extensive wheat wh field and
grain fires such as the burning
of these fields in Ill and the
alfalfa and ragweed on these farms
has not caused these sort of giant
whirlwinds, though smaller stay in
place ones have been caused by
the ascending hot air and descending
currents of cooler air these fires occas-
ioned and there as well as the
forest fire whirlwinds and fire
hurricanes were never known to
be accompanied with rains and
lightning and thunder.

And I do firmly believe a good
rain would not have any effect on
forest or this wheat field fires,
and would more intensely redouble
the amount of smoke.

Whirlwinds of fire were of
frequent occurrence in this fire sea
of the wheat fields but they never
traveled forward or left the
infernos.

Fire maelstroms are fiery whirlwinds
nearly the size of the whole forest fire
and making fighting this fire absolutely
impossible. When fully formed they
appear as tall as the average tornado stretch-
ing from the forest fire to the height of

2419 thousands of feet whirling
around their fiery axes and
exhibiting the progress movement
of the whole forest fire precisely
as in the case of the tornado, but
this whirlwind stays with the fire and
does not go beyond.

It is a popular fancy that
tons of blazing forest debris is sucked
up in a solid mass by the fire
tornado, it being only the fragments
of burning trees or branches from
the forest fire which is carried
up. Observation of forest rangers
conclusively prove this.

What are called whirlwinds on
burning wheat fields are quite
different phenomena. They generally
occur during the hottest and ex-
tensiveness of the conflagration or
on the surface of the inferno being
quite analogous to severe fire
storms from which they differ
only in point of the temperature
of the great fire. Also all the
burning brands that fall after
being carried up can set new
fires over a new wide territory,
where as in the worst fire
whirlwind the burning embers
is mixed with fiery wheat

2420
storms which have been
caught up from the main inferno
carried aloft by the ascending currents
of the fiery whirlwind and ultimate-
ly precipitated over all unburned territory
as thick as fiery rain.

A still long description
but conclusion of the fire
horror.

"Why surely Henry you are not think-
ing for a moment of sending them
forth to fight the smudge inferno?"

"Well I don't know" I said. "Yes I
am certainly thinking of it though
I have not at all made up my mind.
There are advantages and disadvantages."

"Oh but its such a long wide hot
smudge and to risk it while it
is doing such dreadful things driving
people away from their far away
homes because of that dreadful smoke
and as I have heard you say,
passing slowly through the under-
parts of the remaining fields and
making miles of rolling dense
smoke"

"Well they wont go out for weeks
otherwise" Stevens. You
must remember that the condition
of the people of these cities and towns
because of the smoke is terrible. We

40 must not be surprised
2421 therefore if we have to really
push matters to an excess at
first but all matters will right
themselves if a combined attack of some
kind is established. But all this
is no reason against the fighters
with long range how streams going
out there.

You don't suppose that the smoulder
is going to spread and renew the
fire, no the men will be just as
safe there fighting the smudge
as they would be here. That's it
isn't it Jim?

"Yes Henry I think so. You see
there's a way. Outside our circle
the whole situation seems a whole
lot to us. These smoulders refusing
to burn out are still dangerous to us.
I tell you Henry the time is coming
when this will not suffice. The
men are stirring, the State is
lifting its head and muttering the
reports about the ever heating
smoulder and its smoke horror
is more and more grave.

The air is as dark as with a
thundercloud from this smoke,
and in Ottawa Morris and other
places there's no sun because

of the smoke and its only 2422
as light as twilight. There's enough
smoke in the streets to smother a
person. The Assn Assembly has assumed
the supreme authority over this situation
and even everything is being done to
find and capture the arsonist.

There yet may be such a storm of
fire to sweep over Illinois as there has
not been in the nation's history.

"But the Counter fires did us a lot
of good," I said. "They have reduced the
main conflagration to a smouldering
fire only."

"Yes" Mr. Stevens assented "and
there lies the danger. It is one thing
or another. If as soon as the temper
of the smoulder had been seen the
distant fighters had entered into the
fray and cleared the flaming
territory as Garrison hoped to do when
the smoulder was less troublesome to
him that would have been one
way, and we would have won heat
or no heat.

However that was not the way
tried. They began the attempt against
the smoulder by concessions, they'll
go on with concessions and each
concession is made the ground for
more. It is like sliding down a hill.

2423 when you have once begun, you cannot stop yourself, and you go on until there is a crash, then it may be you pick yourself up sorely wounded and bruised, and begin to climb or re-climb the hill slowly, and painfully, it may be that you are dashed to pieces.

I am not a politician. I do not care much for fighting the smoulders and am well content to let it burn out, but even I can see that another storm of fire is gathering, and as for my brother Kaliko he goes about shaking his head, and wringing his hands, his anticipations are the darkest.

What can one expect when wheat fields are permitted to be exposed to arsonists like those four who set this off by firing the wreckage pile and cause all this. The heads of these four scoundrels should have been cut off before they began to set the fire.

Those four are at the root of all this trouble, with their pestilent fire setting, but

it is too late now the mischief is done. The sooner they are captured the better I'll feel, and so things drift on from bad to worse and the smoulders fires are the masters of the situation.

"I in the early night of our desperate fight relied upon the chivalry of my fighting men," I said. The hordes of fire fighters we put in the field counted for nothing.

Gum upon the other hand relied principally upon his rifle and scout men and the mud and water brigade, and yet it must be admitted that the inferno beat us handsomely, and the flames proved themselves superior to our efforts.

It is galling to admit it but there is no blinking the facts of this conflagration.

At this moment I heard a loud yell from one of the men. At a short distance was a big number of armed men rushing toward a portion of wheat field nearest the smudge. Kaliko had thrown these men into action at once uttering loud yells.

Looking around in astonishment to discover the cause of the excitement I

2425 saw nearest the smoulder a large new fire starting among the wheat moving forward at the speed of a dog on a trot. It was starting to burn savagely and some of the fire even whirled. I had heard Ruggeds tell Roquist three hours ago that this section of the smoulder seemed strange and unquiet, smothering more heavily and had ordered it to be contested.

It had evidently broken loose among that wheat for it was now a mounting flame. It flashed across my mind that the smoulder at this edge had gone mad, but without an instant hesitation I and my men and Kalikon dashed off full speed and threw ourselves actually in front of the danger before the fire reached the main field and awaited the infernal attack.

Without changing its course the fire sprang forward at us with an already high flaming front.

Regt. Ruggeds was the first to throw his men to the counter attack. I following and then Stevens and Jim.

The impetuous of the fire's assault

assault and its heat forced 2426 us back but we would not yield. The flames struggled furiously to go ahead but all of us retained our ground, everyone including me using our water soaked coats savagely.

In vain the flames tried to free itself of our assault or to scorch us enough to force us back and struggled to outflank us with its swift movements.

I maintained my attack tightly against the inferno. Several times it almost drove me back. At last I and my men made a great effort when we were up to our necks and managed to get the bucked brigade around its rear and then swarming to the most desperate assault pressed on with all their weight upon the storming attack.

There was a loud sound as from steam when the fires struggle to forge on ahead suddenly ceased, it retreated, the fighters closed in with might and main and soon it was all over. The fire died out as it was overwhelmed by too many men. Another big conflagration had been prevented, and we stood admiring what was left of the inferno, just as

2427 a large body of reinforcements with scythes and sickles broadswords, and a bucket brigade ran up to the spot from their stations while John Marley, with his men equipment in hand arrived from the railroad bed.

Most of our fighting men now almost too paralyzed by fatigue exhaustion and breathless and sweating profusely from the heat was now standing lying down or sitting close by, while the struggle was still going on with the reinforcements.

I had brought forth more men and Reddy and Green had come up and with their men ready to join in the fierce fight if the flames had overpowered us.

Seen accustomed to running than I or my men and for a moment rooted to the ground with horror to the new fields danger they had not arrived at the spot until the heinous struggle between my men and the fire was half over and had then seen no way of rendering assistance but believing that the fire was sure to be

the conqueror they and their 2428 men had placed themselves before the others to bear the brunt of the next assault.

Seeing at a glance that his farm fields after all were untouched that farmer ran up to me as I was standing panting hot sick from smoke and breathless and threw his arms around me to my embarrassment.

"My brave fellow" he exclaimed "you have saved my fields from dreadful destruction by the courage of you and your men, and devotion. And how bravely you fought and closed in on it. How can I and my wife and my children ever thank you? I saw it all from the terrace the speed with which you and your men and officials under your orders sprang to the impending assault, the quickness of thought with which you with wet gunny sack tore into the flames and threw it back. After that I could see nothing because of the smoke and men storming it in a confused mass. You are not hurt I hope."

"Not hurt but a bit scorched and overheated sir"

"And you have killed it - wonderful. During this conversation the men were

2428 in this dangerous territory cutting
a wide breach of great length and
the bucket brigade wetting every
thing down and saving the remainder
of the fire to prevent it from repeat-
ing again.

There was nothing in that our I. I.
it had gotten away on us we had
had another big conflagration on our
hands. "I've heard of forest ran-
gers who are forest fighters say that
men could kill the biggest fire
if they could get it trapped on its
own line of advance and then
close in on it, or counter fire it,
so I managed to close in on it
with overwhelming numbers and
then I felt everything was all
right. We outwitted the part main
fire by counter fire."

"Ah it is very well for you
to speak as if it were nothing"
the farmer said. "There are few
men indeed who would throw
themselves in the way of such
a mad fire especially of such a
formidable inferno as that. You
too have behaved with grave
courage my boy "To Kaliko" and
I saw you were actually
ready to give your lives to check

that monstrous fire, but 2428
you have not the quickness
and readiness of your friend and
leader and would have been too
late."

"It is true Mr. farmer" Kaliko said in
a tone of humility "I should have been
too late and moreover if the fire had
gotten away from Mr. Danger I should
have been useless, for the fire would
have driven me and my men back
in hasty retreat in no time, and
then ignite everything and gaffrey a
new general conflagration." "So the men" "Keep
working hard at my buddies. We don't
want a repeat" "Henry he said to
me frankly "I owe I have been wrong.
"I have thought myself a good fighter
as you've said I was but fighting
wheat field fires is different and worst
than fighting forest blazes but I
see everything now. The results of
this new fire" "Keep it up men" has
put me to shame. When I saw the
fierceness of this new fire I felt
powerless for I had not my gunny
sack men with me and it burned
so furiously that my scythe and
sickle men would not have time
to reach it. But you you rushed
to the fight without a moment's

2430 hesitation trusting in the strength of your men, their equipment and your head. Yes your custom, have made a man of you while I am a boy still.
"You are very good to say so"
I said "but I am quite sure that you would be just as quick and ready as me in most circumstances and if it had been a matter of scythes, cycles or water brigade very much more useful, but I must say you seem to have forgotten how you yourself beat back and defeated the main fire along your front to a finish, and sent most of your men to my aid when I was hard pressed, and made the wisely planned counter fire for me. But I am glad to see there is some great advantage in my experienced forest fire way."

The farmer had put his hand approvingly upon Kalika's shoulder when he addressed me and then turned to look over how much was burned.

For some unknown reason unexplained the great smoulder during the few hours after the counter

fire had increased in 2431 violence from hour to hour, that had been at that location the cause of the new fire so despatched by us, I am still being smoked out and this measure had been followed by the people making an exodus every where. All safely because of the smoke had been declared at an end, and by night fall a decree had passed that all people still remaining behind must quit immediately to safety under penalties of a fine.

This decree had taken effect in Ottawa, Morris and even towns further north and in other towns northward and also in some parts of the country where the passions of the people because of the dense smoke fog were most aroused against the immeasurable and exceedingly excessive smoulder, but in Galt and Chicago it had remained a dead letter.

I regarded the degree a urgent necessity. That smoke for the people there was dangerous with its fumes, and it caused the assembly for their sake to pass laws of the most sweeping description

2432 assuming something like
the sovereign power and using
it as no president of America
had ever ventured to do, they
must get out of their smoked
towns or be forced out. "Do you want
the smoke fumes to kill you"?
they was asked.

Moderate men were shocked
at the headlong course of events
and great numbers of able bodied
men from these towns took
southeast bound and south bound
trains to flock to our help as
quick as possible to try and
contain the smoulder.

They were to throw themselves
heart and soul into it yet many
shrank back in dismay at the
size of the smoulder and its hellish
heat and miles of rolling smoke.
I cursed roundly and violently
because no rain would come and
when some one asked me if I
would go to Church to morrow
I said "No".

It seemed to me that a general
madness had seized seized
all of the smoulder, but at
present nothing could be done
to arrest or subdue it or even

approach it because of the 2432
killing heat.

I had then said
"I have telephoned the mayors of
So. Balla and Rock Island, and also
Burlington and Quincy. They have
resolved to do nothing that is to
let events take their course and
what that will be heaven only
knows. The assembly had taken all
power into its hand in removing
people still remaining in the smoked
out cities and towns. Ottawa is more
a smoked coker, the violence smoke
and heat of this smoulder is beyond
all bounds. The air is by turns hot
cold and we cant get within a mile
of the worst part.

At any rate there is nothing to
be done at present but to wait most
patiently. Already great numbers of the
people obeying the decrees of the assem-
bly, and terrific at the aspects of
affairs have left all these towns
except their men folk who are
coming to help us, and I am
sorry to say they had not
gone sooner instead of standing
and suffer for all that smoke in
their towns. I am glad the assembly
has passed this law to force all to
emigrate from the smoke & smog."

2433 Although as I knew that my leaders were much alarmed at the news brought by me they think of questioning my decision about some desperate means to find a way to fight out the smoulder.

It did not seem to them possible that there could be danger for me and them to first scout on the great smoulder and the wheat country still dangerously around it. There might be disturbance and some danger and even revolution in the Eyehenna smoulder but surely they could not meet the dangerous heat so far away.

When ever you think it is right to go on a scouting tour I will go with you" said Kaliko.

"We've got to find a way to get like back this smoulder"

I heard that a deep gloom hung over all the people of northern western and Southern Ill and also east and North west. The smoke it self was committing great depredations. Nothing like it was seen or ever heard of before and damn it all because of those damn arsonist.

Upon the first of these occasions

Ruggedo Kaliko and Oquiat 2434 were in high spirits for they were to take part and lead my scouting parties. It was the first time Kaliko had done so for during the previous night and late night had so fiercely and successfully fought the great fire along his front.

At an early hour the evening being quiet and still the men invited to take part in the scouting expedition all there having slept since the counter fire began to assemble near the road bed. Many who had rested since noon came at 7.0 pm in this evening and the great roadbed presented a lively aspect with the horses and attendants of the scouts.

In a few minutes some hundred thirty experienced scouts were in the saddle. I who acted as grand courier of the territory blew my horn and the whole cavalcade got into motion, raising their scouting caps as they rode off to the other borders of men who were standing, sitting or reclining on the roadbed to see us depart. We had decided to scout by night as the smoke had most of the glare by day which we needed to scout the smoulder by.

2435 On arriving near the hay hill upon which we intended to climb to get a better view we came across several national guards men who had been since the hour of the counter fire marching and surveying the locations most hotly burning of the smudges. They have given their reports and the party were just starting to be changed by other guards when a national guard rode up.

Mr Darger he said "I have strange bad news for you, over to the north the smoulder looks ready to leap its bounds. I saw a flurry of sparks making along a wheat field half an hour since I was on my way hither. I turned back with a platoon of sappers and put it out but not too good. That territory is absolutely very tightly choked with grain wheat barley and very high undergrowth."

The news created great excitement among us.

"The smoulder trying to get under way?" I repeated "Are you sure the fire started by it wasn't bad?" "Quite sure it was bad" Mr Darger. "It gave us a hell of a fight and how could I mistake it?"

It was caused by the smoulder 2436 igniting the brush not yet the wheat. I'd rather fight the burning wheat than that dreaded brush."

"We are in bad luck indeed gentlemen" I said. "We will see if we can't bring their threat to an end. We can't let any section of this smoulder give us the slip."

"And it will again if not cautioned" one of the foremen muttered. "I do not believe any common amount of rain will quench it."

"What is that part of the smoulder?" Ruggles asked Kaliko.

"It is being a smoulder of most extraordinary size and fierceness. Its heat is undecidable and its smoke as if from a big forest fire. Nothing can go too close to it. It will range your hands off three hundred feet away. Great attempts have been made over and over again specially to slightly subdue it by means of shooting from common fire extinguishing stuff but the sea fire seems to lead a very charmed life. It has been fired on over and over again but it seems to be extinguishes poor."

The fighters regard it not as an ordinary smoulder but as hellish low fire. Ah

2437 if we could conquer that
damn smoulder #0 might
it would be a grand occasion"
"Is there anything particular about
its appearance?"

"Nothing, except its size. Some of
the observers who have it declare
that it is as big as three ordinary
forest fires, but my foreman who
inspected it says that this is an
exaggeration, though it is by far
the largest and longest smouldering
fire he ever saw."

"Well" I said "Lead us to that
spot. We've got content that part
of the smoulder somehow?"

The party now started under the
guidance of the forester with the
purpose to reach the spot where
a new fire had threatened to break
out. He had said the choking
brush was at the head of a long
sloping stretch of ground. It did
not slope steeply and was very
long and broad, and edged dan-
gerously near the smoulder. It
took us some hour to get there.
But when we finally halted
I arranged the plan of action.
I myself with three of the
most experienced fighting men

took our stations across the ground 2438
with two strongly equipped brigades
of men, which was but one hundred
and seventy yards wide and twice
as long.

The battle of Bush valley.
Eight hundred of the bucket brigade
were to dismount from their equipment
wagons and take post on either side
of this wide ravine.

"I'm sorry gentlemen that I cannot
find territories for the rest of you in one
local spot as it would be dangerous but
you may have your share of the work
in a sort of disultry manner. Over and
over again this smoulder at this section
may slip away into the brush and
therefore we must surround as much of
this brush as possible and cut it down,
for what the smoulder has done before
it will repeat.

Therefore let each of you platoon
leaders take up such a position as he
thinks best outside our circle, but
keeping well behind embankments
or other shelter so as if to
cover his platoon of men from any
random assault that any fire may
hurl at us. Do on your part counter
fire only when the blaze has passed on
tries to pass your fighting line, or you

2439 may be trucked and trapped,"
Ruggels and Carter were naturally
among those those to contest the main
fire if it started.

"What do you think Ruggels shall we
remain on our positions here in this
large country hollow, or guard the
flanks of the brush?"

"I should say wait here Carter on the
first place because it is the least
trouble if the big smolder starts any-
thing here and in the second
because I think the smoulder is as
likely to start something this way
as any other. At any rate we
may as well entrench ourselves
here and let the horses crop
that place of high fresh oats untill
we hear the horn that will tell
us when Jim Jamson has led his
men to stop any fire where they
are if one breaks out."

It was a quarter of an hour before
they heard the note distant note
of the horn.

"A fire on over there and the fight
is begun" Ruggels exclaimed. We
had better take a quarter of our
force and go forward at once.
We'll leave the rest to watch
it here. If the fire is still

2439
there and gaming ground it is
just as likely because slash brush is
so inflammable being such an old hand
in burning like gasoline to make
a general fiery assault at once untill
untill instead of waiting untill the
wheat flames up along side it."

"What are we to do if we see the
brush fire?"

"War" "We are to counter fire it if we
can. If we miss or that or it burns past
us, or at us, before we can counter fire
it we must follow and make a
flank and rear guard action, and do a
lot of loud yelling, screaming and
shouting as to guide the rest as to
the direction the fire is taking."

"My chances of winning by a counter
fire is not great" Ruggels said "Kaliko
is excellent at it, but I'm not even
very good even at my best try as
there is risk making one, wind
direction or not, but starting one on
this kind of ground, I do not think
it likely I should get any where
accomplishing one. And if you do it
wrong it's dangerous."

Another quarter of an hour passed.
The occasional occasional note of the
horn, the distant shouting of the
men, encouraging themselves at their work

2440 and to work their way around the impenetrable brush through the dense thicket could be heard but no sound of brush fire fight - my could be heard or meet their ears.

"Either there is no fire there at all, or it is lying very close" Ruggedo said.

"Look look" I said suddenly pointing at the brush "to the right"

"That is a line of fire sure enough" Paquat exclaimed "Come along."

We spurred our men recklessly through the wheat covered ground towards the line of fire which seemed to flit like a shadow past us instead of coming head on.

"Mind to thickness of the wheat or you'll be stuck in it like a vice. Humah Ruggedo the wheat is more open in front"

But although the wheat men were moving forward at the top of their speed, they seemed to scarcely gain on the fire, which never occurred before, and was very extraordinary the fire as it seemed to them kept its distance ahead without any great exertion.

"We'll never catch it" I exclaimed after we had followed it

it for nearly half an hour 2441 and the labored panting of the men showed that could not long maintain the pace. Quickly I threw forward a platoon of men to try and head it off.

They got around it to the left-front putting themselves directly in its path with scythes, sickle, extinguisher bombs, and bucket and mud attack. Without a moment's hesitation the fire rushed on in a most vicious assault and drove them back, burning all before it, firing to head next for the wheat.

This sort of brush fire is harder to fight than a wheat fight and very dangerous. There was a desperate struggle for a few moments, and then the brush fire headed on the men retreating before it, but fought desperately as they slowly gave way.

"Get ready to attack Ruggedo" I exclaimed as the fire was driving the men back "to our last chance if it gets away on us we'll have another big conflagration on our hands."

We went at it like we did the other fire. Ruggedo's men went first

2447 but the wrong movement of his
parting men deranged the course
of his concentration and his assault
went wild. More accustomed
to attacking such a fire Boguat's
assault was true, he struck the
fire a telling blow on the right flank
and it rolled backward to the rear
and recoiled.

With a shout of triumph Carter
men joined Boguat's assault dashing
forward, using their equipment
with might and main, but
when they were within within a
hundred paces, the center of the
flank sprang on through and en-
deavored to rush them off the
field. Jimmie recoiled aside so
sharply that the fire hurled him
and Boguat back pell-mell.

The shock of the fire's counter
attack was a severe one and before
the men could rally the fire
was close upon them, Boguat
tried as he rallied his men to
cut off the fire's front but be-
fore he could do so, Ruggeds
Kaliko and I who had seen Jimmie
recoiled back at once
rushed forward, threw ourselves
not exactly before the fire
but did like we did to the

other fire and in a most fierce 2448
attack with all our effort dealt the
fire the severest attack that we had
ever yet done to any of these blazes.
Raging furiously the fire rushed for-
ward in exceeding viciousness and drove
Carter men back in panic.

The heat was horrible and Carter
so got a badly scorched right shoulder
despite his soaking wet shoulder.
Kaliko called his bucket brigade
forward, and extinguish grenades,
and also calling forward the scythe
and sickle men struck a terrible
blow while Jim at the same moment
ran his rakers actually through
the brush fire.

So strong and tenacious of burning
fury was the fire that the fire-
changes were repeated several times
before it recoiled and fell back for
good. Then all the men went at
it with all their strength and
vigor and soon it was only a
smouldering smoking heap.

"The you scorched bad Carter?"
was my first exclamation.

"Oh never mind that, that's
nothing" Carter replied "Only think
Henry you and I killed this
demon fire and no one else had

2445 a hand in it. There is a triumph for us."

"The triumph is yours," I said. "The fire would have gotten away had you not stopped its mad rush with your fierce attack and it would have made short work of my men had you not come to my aid, for we were being outflanked with the fiercest ferocious charge and it might have done for my men as quickly as it did for Teddy and Roquats men over there."

"That is true Henry but it was you who gave the fire a fight to good success. It would have mastered me and my men otherwise. The attack of the fire was too strong for me and would have borne my fighters to a total defeat. So it's a joint business and we both have a right to be proud of it. Set us go to the hay hell now to scout but before we do that we must see to the binding up Jim's shoulder somehow. I only got scoured but some how he received a broken shoulder from a bad fall during the retreat of his men. Yet too in spite of my thick soaking wet doublet the heat of the

fire has scalded me very sharply. But first let's see if the fire is all out."

"It was soon seen that it was not even smoking any more."

I therefore from the first aid kit and cloth cleaned Jim's injured shoulder. The flesh was badly torn and the arm was so useless that I really feared it was true that some bones were broken.

Having done my best to bandage the wound, I strapped the arm firmly across the body so as to prevent it being shaken by the motion of the riding to the main hospital tent not too far away.

He felt faint and sick with the pain of his wound. Carter, however, I bandaged too but his was not serious enough, so he still could stay on duty. Stevens and some of his officials came up to us. There was a shout as we were seen.

"Why Henry," Stevens called as they approached. "we thought you had lost us, you have missed some more fire fighting, but what's the matter with your arm Jim, and what happened here?"

"A new fire started near here and we wiped it out," Carter replied, "so you have not had all the fighting to yourselves."

2442 There was a general exclamation of surprise and almost incredulity and then everyone rode over to meet us and when

it was seen that we had conquered a fire there was a shout of satisfaction and pleasure. Again the notes of the moat rang out through the fields and every one crowded around us to congratulate us and ~~examine~~ examine.

The large stretch of burned brush and cackle, Jim Scanlon was lifted from his horse for he was now reeling in the saddle and could not have kept his seat many minutes longer.

His wound was carefully examined and Stevens pronounced the shoulder bone to be broken. A litter was made and four of the men hoisted him upon their shoulders.

While the preparations were being made Carter had given the history of the wiping out of the local fire saying that he owed the victory to the quickness and courage of me.

"And I owe mine to him," I protested. "The fire would have defeated me and gotten a good headway had he not

connected cornered it 2448
I was lucky in stopping it with a counter fire but the rest was entirely a joint affair."

The whipping of this second local fire was so important an event that it urged us more to our scouting plan. Two other local fires had been added to the danger, but their remains looked small and insignificant beside the one I and Carter overthrew. I learned no one had suspected that we were forced to combat this new blaze.

By Plagas men a vigilant lookout had been kept up all around the territory while others hunted small new fires from end to end but no signs had been seen of any and none were able to understand how our hard fought fire could have slipped between the watchers unseen.

It was 8 A.M. when my platoon reached the great hay mound. Before we started for here I had sent one of my men to bring a surgeon with all speed to the hay mound, the other, to tell Farmer Jim that James Scanlon had been hurt and that everything was to be got in readiness for him, but that he was not to make himself uneasy

2449 about his son as the injury was not a serious one. The messengers were charged strictly to say nothing about the death of the second local fire. The wagon arrived to us on which were Dorothy and little Angelina Riches.

The sight of the litter added to the anxiety Dorothy and Angelina were feeling but I rode on a short distance ahead of them.

"Don't be alarmed little girls." I said "Your special friend is not very seriously hurt. He stumbled over a sharp stone during a retreat before that second local fire and has behaved most, most, splendidly."

"The messenger said he had been hurt in a bad fall, but how come he to put himself in such peril and being too close to the fire?"

"He will tell you all about it little girls. Here he is to speak for himself."

"Do not look so alarmed girls" Jim said as they ran down to the side of the litter "It's no great harm and I should not have minded it if it had been ten times as bad."

"Bring the phogothropl" I said "and Reggat and Carter do you come here and stand by Jim's side. Dorothy and Angelina" I went on handing the photo one of the former look to them" Do you see that there

raging local fire? That was 2450 the "demon" fire which threatened to become the terror of the district and become a new big one, and these are its players, though I had a hand in it too. Carter and me and Jim and us alone have reaped the glory which every fire fighting brigade has been so striving to attain, we alone the three of us in fighting that blaze near the big miller long snail-der, pursued and overthrew the second local fire, a war scourge than the first one we so rapidly slew."

I put my horn to my lips. The others who carried similar instruments followed my example.

A triumphant transalio was blown. All present took off their hats, real water dripping caps and cheered, yelled howled and screamed and Angelina and Dorothy added their shouts to the chorus.

"Is it possible Henry?" Angelina said "terrified at the thought of the danger we three must have run in an encounter with the dread fire. "Is it possible that you three alone with your women have wiped out the second local fire?"

"It is quite possible my dears" said Reggat. "since it has been done."

2456 I should have asked me yesterday. I should almost have said these three leaders ^{as we} have covered them ^{referred} with glory they will be the heroes of the department. They also whipped the big main fire yesterday forenoon by a well planned counter fire and reduced it to a smoulder. But we must not stay talking here. We must get Jim onto a tent bed as soon as possible. A surgeon will be here very shortly. Henry sent a messenger on to the main medical camp for one at the same time he sent you little girls. But the doctor must see you scalder too. Carter"

I stayed outside for a few minutes just as the surgeon rode up to the tent.

Please tell us all out it." Dorothy and Angelone asked Carter when having seen the surgeon set the broken bone and bandage the wound operations which Jim bore with stoical firmness, I went down where Dorothy and Angelone were anxiously expecting me "All about it please. We have heard nothing for. Ruggeds went to the tent with Jim and has not come back again"

Carter told the whole story how the local fire had made its escape

from Roquats men who tried 245-2 to get it in the rear and came upon Carter Kaliko and me, and how we three closed in on it and whipped it out of existence. The little girls surely shuddered at the story of the ferocity of the local inferno and the short but most desperate conflict with the wild blaze.

Then twice Henry has the principal honor this time?" Dorothy said.

"It is pretty evenly divided" I said. You see I brought that savage inferno to bay by counter firing, and tore up its line of advance and sent my men to strike the first final blow as it was flaming with fury and terrific heat upon Carter whose men had been temporarily thrown back by the seemingly unstrained head long assault. Jim was routed too, and trying to rally his men he tripped on that big stone fell and broke his shoulder. If it weren't for his men the fire would have been upon both he and Carter.

Then again both would have been routed out of all proportion and the fire got out of control had not I with my brigade come to their assistance, made the irresistible counter attack and dealt the inferno its mortal

2453 Blows There is not difference
but perhaps the chief honor went with
Carter.
"I am glad of that" I exclaimed, "His
men do during the worst of the fight
prevented me from being out flanked, it
is only right the chief honor should
be with Carter and not with me. I have
had more than my share already I
think"

"You would not think so if I had
saved you" Kaliko broke in impet-
uously, "It was very brave and even
a dangerously reckless of them
to kill that inferno but I think
it was ever, ever so much braver
to attack a great big conflagration
and then whip it by a big nick
counter fire without proper help
"Don't you think so Roguete?"

"I don't think you should speak so
warmly about the situation Roguete
said. "Bill in answer to your question
Kaliko I admit that the fight was
very much the braver deed. Fighting
all night till forenoon without
hardly any rest or sleep and
little food or drink because they
dare not stop. I myself had
also stood before that main
conflagration with all my men at
hand, and also I had been concentrated

against the north west front 2453
and counter attacked so faintly fully
that I finally carried all before me,
but yet I never had thought of
carrying out so promptly which Henry
advised of counter firing along his
sighting hot front. But there is no need
to make comparisons.

On the present occasion of the two
local fires the three Jim, Henry, and
Carter have behaved with still greater
bravery and I am proud that Henry
is one of the conquerors of the biggest
fire that ever occurred. It will stand
him in life with a reputation already
established for courage. Henry deserves
beyond measure to be what he is our
main leader, Commissioner and
director. The doctor said that Jim
fortunately is not half as injured
as feared, thanks to good brave
Henry who saved him. But it does
seem he will be back on duty this
afternoon. But the doctor told him
if necessary he still can lead his
men, but at present must not
join personally in any direct
fighting. Be careful of his shoulder
by all means."

Jim did prefer to remain in
bed for several days.

2456. "I now talked with Stevens over the situation of the overwhelming smoulder, the danger it threatened the impossibility to fight it because of its hellish heat and smoke and flames, and compared the events of the two local dangerous fires, and main conflagration.

"There was one point of difference between the two local fires," I said to Stevens while we were climbing the hay the girls following "In the general conflagration the fire had already gained power in its spreading. It was from the wheat or barley grain and other high crops that the main fire was drawn.

"It is the farmers who suffered this overwhelming loss.

"Yet it seems the Counter fires did make things worse with this interminable smoulder."

"I still hear news that the distress caused by all the smoke enveloping all those northeastern towns, which prevailed everywhere is still most terrible," said Kaliko "There is a feeling of despair everywhere. The fugitive people can scarcely keep life together, and many have died poisoned by the smoke fumes.

There is also a dull hatred of those who caused the fire, for

the fugitives even so far as 2457. They went learned about the arsonists. I heard about opinions of all kinds expressed. The reports which came from all parts of northeast and west all as well from Chicago, together with the talk of those attending the refugees convinced me that the state of affairs over the smoke and fumes was more serious than the authorities of the refugee cities and towns were inclined to admit.

The direct assault the flames and the wholesale wiping out of the wheat, the dreadful clouds of smoke obnoxious to the residents of towns and cities and farms northeast of us, not only in the nearest cities but in those of other northeastern great towns, proved that the smoke if it once obtains the upper hand was ready to go all lengths while the number of people who were flocking to other cities west or northwest showed that among this body there existed the most grave grievous apprehensions as to the future.

We already know the account of the frightful excesses perpetrated by the great wheat field fire all night and until noon. That dreadful conflagration had been crushed into an enormous smoulder.

2458 by our great counter fire,
but who was to undertake the
task such a flame again out because
of the smoulder. It would be up to
us again I suppose So Galle had already
shown its sympathy with our great efforts
against the parching smoulder and could
be relied upon. That Ruggedo himself
should face out any danger which might
come seemed to me right and natural
but I thought that he was wrong
to send his chief foreman, and at any
rate Reddy around the small edge
of the smoulder where the main dangers
were. Should the wind shift to the
northwest and blow.

But Ruggedo had no fears. Some one
had mentioned that the main con-
flagration was whipped, but Ruggedo
had put it aside as being altogether
apart from the question.

"That main inferno took place the
evening and night of the last" he
said. "The counter fires brought it
under control. Can we imagine it
possible that at this new morning
because of the smoulder a new one
could break out and would be
capable of such excess?"

The answer of the foreman he
addressed had weighted little with Mr.

Ruggedo but I thought it over 2459
very seriously. "Instead of smouldering out I
has increased Mr Ruggedo since of
the counter fire yesterday forenoon, the
smoke cloud is stupendous, and because of
it the condition of the people has not
improved and the increase of the smoulder
and from which the people flee, makes
them hate even more bitterly those ~~of~~
Ansonist You know very well that
we'd lynch them if caught.

I am a reformer I desire to see sweeping
changes, and I want to see this damn
smoulder killed, and I desire these things
because I fear that if they do not
come peacefully they will come in a
tempest of fire and hell vengeance.

What if the wind would now shift
southeast. Then all those towns and
cities north west would soon
yet what the northeast town and
cities are getting. Then where will those
refugees flee to?"

"The wind is blowing the smoke
mostly downward and the people
are getting nearly all of it" I said my-
self. They are swarming to every
refuge possible, and knowing the
situation no one is opposing them.
What can be done about this. What

245⁵⁻⁸ "Say you Roquat?"

Roquat said mildly "We must allow for human nature Mr Darger. No one can stand all that smoke. They or must flee and who can say when the smoke will stop. They can find no benefit for any sort of change.

If you want to put it that way this smoulder is 'drunk' with its own success and who can say where it will stop.

This smoulder is very extraordinary.

If we don't watch it carefully its fury will run higher and higher and who can say to what length it will go. I say we must find some way to wipe it out. It has already caused two severe local fires, and it may yet bring on another general inferno."

"I had no idea you were such a prophet of evil Roquat." I said with an uneasy laugh, while I could see by their faces feelings of gloom and anxiety fell over the others who heard Roquat's words.

"God forbid that I should be a prophet" O. Roquat said gravely "I hope and trust that I am really mistaken and that He has not reserved this terrible punishment for the rest of the countless miles of the wheat fields. Yet heaven

keep us if a strong wind springs up" 245⁹
But you asked me for my opinion Mr Darger and I have given it to you and Ruggado because of this is apt to be gloomy and depressed. Moreover should there be difficulty or danger while we can't trust this smoulder I trust very much to your good sense and courage and of Kalika. You two are the best fight leaders. I know cheerfulness is at a sorry premium in as far as Zion city at present. The incident of the two local fires shows how quick you two are to plan and how prompt to carry your plans into effect. It may seem absurd when there are several of our staunch and tried friends here to rely on any way on you but we all do not of course as before our faithful friends but as two whose aid is not to be despised."

The time was soon to come when I had to give proof of what he praised me for. I could see that things were going worse and worse. The violence of the smoulder was even on the increase instead of simmering down, the mobs of newly arriving men said the fierier smoulder was the real master of the situation, the greater part of people had fled smoke smothered cities and towns and any who still stayed

2460 behind disregarding the with drawal
order were liable to arrest and fine.
The feeling in the Northern Counties
of Illinois kept pace with that in
Iollet and Chicago and Elgin, but
all feared renewed dangers. There some
distance east or west even fifty miles
away say they can see the smoke
high up in the sky like a giant
thunder cloud.

The people who emigrated did so
because they found the smoke situation
most intolerable and hoped that a
large army of fire fighters would come
to my assistance, and set in mo-
tion to put out this unusually
extraordinary smoulder with from its
smoke constituted a very grave dam-
age to cities, farms towns and all
other property all over Northern
Illinois.

But as yet there was as yet noth-
ing to foreshadow the terrible events
which were to take place or to
indicate that a movement of exodus
which began of a smoke driven peo-
ple would end in great sorrow
distress and apprehension. I learned
that the smoulder was slowly and
surely spreading, and becoming
more and more violent and I
sent swift spies, scouts and

2461
watch men to see that none
of new local fires start. And more
people even from Gary Ind. were exodus-
ing to the east from the smoke. I thought
to myself "My God what next?"
There are fifty cannon firing fire extin-
guishers into the smoulder, and it
defies them. We'll have to discover a
means to battle it and how? I had
a conviction that terrible things were
about to happen.

My leading companions were very appre-
hensive at the great emigration of the
city and town folks farmers and even
from Country and city upheavals because
of the dense smoke fog that is going
on. In the first place Stevens holds
that what if the wind would change
to the southeast and then drive the
smoke to their places of refuge, and
in the second place their assemblage
to all refuge spots and their inter-
gues at Committee against the smoke fall
would cause people of refuge places
to look with suspicion upon the
whole thing and would think the
situation is much worse than it really
is. It seems the refugees were as
surely veritable prophets of exaggerate ill,
but I hoped to see the day I'll smile
over this gloomy prognostication.

2463 Just because of the increase of the smoke, and slight breezes stirring up my officials became more and more anxious, the position of unburned fields was now much more precarious, most of the men from La Salle, Morris, and other places had and were being sent to reinforce us, and those resting from the big recent fight were re-organized and ready to rejoin us.

Four out of five of the south side and broadsword men had been sent away to the north to watch out for local fires, and but one remained at the Wicker Castle territory.

Of the National Guard all could be trusted to defend the explosive sheds. The rest were opposed to the general smoulder and desired to attack it as soon as possible.

An hour from now 8:30 AM a large number of the National Guard from La Salle Rock Island, Quincy and even Chicago had arrived here and the battalion from far off Fort Sheridan the most reliable of all had immediately that it arrived in this territory, come into collision with a local fire of which I was yet ignorant of. The other brave fighters I had learned were

without organization their sole 2464 aim being to defend the wheat fields should it be in danger and if necessary to defend it on the whole front. At quarter to nine I heard the sound of drums to beat to arms.

All morning there had been sinister rumors circulating, but Stevens had sent privately to his officials that he did not believe any sort of danger was ~~near~~ imminent, and that he had no need of extra fire fighters, however as soon as the alarm sounded Teddy Green and Carter Green with John Manley and O. Lang got their men ready and started for the local fire.

It was half an hour before he came racing on horse back to me. His wet clothes were torn off his head was bound up, and one of his arms disabled. Dorothy and Angelina gave a cry of honor at the sight of him. No one was off guard since he left, for every minute fresh rumors of fighting had arrived, and the sound of cannon sending fire extinguishers into the resisting flames had been heard continually.

"I'm afraid it's all over Mr. Dwyer," he said. "We have done our best but Captain King and others can do nothing."

2465 We cannot say we are losing the battle, for we have never tried to win it, but it would be the same thing in the long long run."

Before hearing of what was passing I insisted upon Green having his wounds bound up and attended to while I assembled all my men. This time with Regat Ruggado and Kaliko to lead them.

As we were on the wagon the girls we were on we permitted them to see the fight as I believed their presence would inspire us.

As we were hurriedly on the way the horses of the wagons running for all they were worth Green began

"We had a great difficulty in getting into that part of the field for an arm of the fire tried to prevent our passing. However we gave it a knockout blow and got through and we found there were three hundred men against the main part of the local blaze all men with the gunny sack. One man O Malley led us into the left of the endangered section.

"Mr Green" he said to me. 2466 There are more of your faithful men eager to replace you among men if they get worn out. The National Guard will aid us."

We formed in what was called Wheat-field number sixteen and another officer with his scythe in his hand walked down our ranks and those of the bucket brigade. He seemed without fear but he did not speak a word or do anything to encourage us. Roman came up to this officer and pressed him to leave the burning territory before it was too late.

"There are not five minutes to lose sir" he said "There is no safety for you sir but the men of the third brigade and they will not be able to hold."

He resisted but upon Teddy saying that an enormous crowd with cannon were coming I had ardent hopes. Carl or Green thought of us and asked what was to become of us if the fire would overwhelm us. A foreman said that as we were not weak in numbers, and by being fully equipped we could fight through the fire without much difficulty. Teddy moved on, followed by his men,

26 and officials The crowd of men
close and menacing against the
2468 coming flames lined the small-
passage, and Diddy and his fol-
lowers made their way with great
difficulty to the endangered wheat.

We remained along our line swiftly
breaching and trying to counter fire
while every moment the throng of
sickle and bucket men be-
came more and more numerous.

The cannon they brought were turned
against the inferno.

The first section of the burning wheat
was torn apart by the exploding ex-
tinguisher bombs, the fire did not
yield, the populace of fighters
nevertheless poured in and mixed
with us and the bucket brigade.

Some one got burned and was
hurried to the rear. Whether it was
a soldier or one of the fire
fighting mob I know not but
the fight began.

The National Guard in good
order pressed through, drove back the
fire along their line, and
turning the cannon upon the
inferno opened fire. The mob
of men fought the blaze
like fury and I believe we
would have conquered all the

scum of the fire, had not 2468
Kings troops been overwhelmed
and fled in terror I managed by
 dint of courage to throw in a fresh
brigade, while my officers rallied the
others. A part of Kings men were shut
up in the field by the flames but
were able to fight their way out without
a single man being hurt scalded
or burned.

A portion of the National Guard
had remained on guard in another
part of the field but despite all
terrific resistance and counter attack of
all that throng of men the fire
fiercely surged on.

I and my men were driven back
fell men though by our attack
the flaming wheat front was literally
cut to pieces. Even the counter fire
was no success. The fire swarmed
over the field and set everything
into an inferno. During our forced
retreat I rushed into a toilet house
when assaulted by a wall of flame
and slamming the door behind
me made my way out by the
back and so escaped it getting
off with only these two burns
then I hurried to the house of a
friend and thence to here where I sit seek

2469 you and the help of your men"
"What has happened at the fire and where are the other fighters?" Dorothy asked after the first exclamation of honor at the tale had been heard.

"Others are still fighting and hoping the breach will stop it. Carter Green said: 'The fire has triumphed over my force. We must be prepared to face the worst. I fear success is now impossible.'"

"Not if I can help it," I said most decidedly.

Yet the violence of the fire as I reports from others has been increasing every minute, and the blind rage of the inferno had risen to such a height that it was impossible to say what might happen. Yet come what may I was determined to overthrow this red demon, for the urges of the conflagration, and then its daim smoulder which for some unknown reason refuses to burn out had filled me with such horror and disgust that I would have risked much to save all the other fields, even a scrub from its flaming fury and lastly I felt fascinated of the wild

excitement of the times 2470 and congratulated myself I should see and perhaps be an actor in this astonishing drama which I heard was occupying the attention of the whole civilized world.

I forgot about a moment of the little girls coming on our wagon to witness the fire fight and never before in my career did I ever involve in a fight as I did before. My men and the men of the others attacked this third and bigger local fire as they never attacked before.

Yet it resisted us gallantly and very stubbornly and threw a fierce ringing heat at us. The fighters were horror struck at the spread of the flames, the scorching of Mr Green and fury of the inferno and felt this was the beginning of the fulfillment of the rumors of the last few hours.

The forming of this third and worst local fire was indeed the signal for every fighting of thought or feeling or of heart to give a savage fight to the fight fire. And how furiously they fought. Hundreds of brave and reckless men under leaders who had at first thought that the hour of the fire commenced with the

2421 meeting of the smoulder and who had first not gone heart and soul with the others in their early struggles to overpower the inferno, and appalled at this new local fire which had sprung into existence fought as men never fought before.

Those who were forced to draw back from the fight because of over exhaustion and heat, appalled by what they had to face, were reinforced by reinforcements who fought in their places while they rested.

Roquet and his ~~too~~ troop were already to a man against it, and those under Mr Grindot who had also fallen away because of over exhaustion were relieved by John Manley and Kaliko. Indeed the great tornado followed by probably the greatest and most immeasurable Country fire on record was to stand forth in the eyes of All Europe and the two Americas as a fiery red hellish monster the enemy not of all wheat fields only but of humanity as well.

As for the arsonists I cannot say anything about them and neither can all the men and their brave leaders. It is not fit for print.

Grain or wheat ahead of 2422 the fire storm had been hatched to pieces or cut down to check the fire. The mob of fighters had crowded into the fields sickles and scythes and other cutting instruments swishing and cutting like mad, and the resting fighters applauded with ferocious yells when ever there was the slightest success against the flames.

Dugges wore exhausted and hot stood immovable his face as pale as death. His wet head wear had fallen off his hair and face was dark and dripping with over running perspiration. his eyes had a look of concentrated honor his body shook with a spasmodic shuddering.

He was overcome by all this smoke and heat.

I urged him to leave and retreat with his men and let Carter relieve him which he wisely did.

I was greatly alarmed and feared that every moment the fire would goun by some terrible outburst.

I threw myself with the fury of a mad man upon the flames along my fighting line and in a moment flayed a portion of it and hurled it back wiped out. It

2473 seemed very rash of me but it appeared the fire was taunting me and I lost control of myself and lumber also along Scanlon front the action of the fire permitted no one to get near it.

In vain his men tried to penetrate into the inner part of the fields. He was roughly repulsed by the terrific heat.

I rode over to his battle line and urged him to leave, saying a part of my troop would replace him and his men. He did not appear to hear and even when I pulled him by the sleeve he seemed equally unconscious.

Greatly alarmed by this and fearing that every moment something would happen, like a terrible out burst I hurled a large portion of reinforcements to his relief. I was determined to so overcome the fire at any cost unconscious of the two little girls watching the frightful conflict with great excitement, apprehension and horror. With the wild fury of savage beasts the platoon of men threw themselves into the squabble and during the moddest of the fight with a confused series of the babel of the tower of Babelon

a broken branch of a 2474 near by tree fell and struck Scanlon, men and two men at the same time on the head. Soon Scanlon was hit the hardest and fell like a log under the blow.

But none of us were hurt and he only rubbed his head as he staggered to his feet.

"It sure struck me hard" he said as I examined his head. "I should not like another such a blow. I believe I swung my scythe too high and cut loose the branch."

I found his head was not injured but there were scratches from the branch on his face and the back of his neck. There like there.

Scanlon said as I nevertheless bandaged his head:

"How is it sir that God allows such things to be?"

"We cannot tell though it is said he has a reason not to interfere with the doings of nature. As for my self I can hardly believe it though I see it. They say there are four thousand men at this fire and yet they are not gaining. Such a thing was never

2476 of before. I can hear hardly believe that I am not in a dream. We've got it so the fire cannot advance no more, but yet too it cannot lick us, and we cannot let lick it. I'm utterly worn and exhausted in my men, and be forced to use my brigade and then my reserves. But it must be licked or we'll have another big inferno on our hands and maybe on this time we cannot stop."

I was however in a state of great uneasiness. This local fire was three times bigger than the other two put together. Difficult and dangerous as it would be to fight our way through it I determined to attempt it without hesitation rather than let this hell get by us.

Then too I received another terrible shock that made me so recklessly determined. Ruggedo was injured, and two hundred of his men were so scorched, and burned that they had to be hospitalized. For a time I was stunned. I felt crushed with the blow, and revengeful against the fire. A warm affection had sprung up between me and Ruggedo,

2477 while from the first Kaliko had attached himself to him, and now Ruggedo was injured and two hundred of his men scorched, scalded and burned, the rest routed. Therefore one thing I determined on at once and that was that I'll revenge this terrible misfortune which had befallen me.

Then at this moment I saw the two little girls, that filled me with the greatest inspiration, courage and determination, and I decided I will show them what I really can do, and how.

"This is awful," I said to myself as I prepared my men for the final desperate effort. "Two big local fires which though we wiped out after very tough fighting, now this one five times as big. Ruggedo and two hundred of his men to be hospitalized, two divisions beaten back, the fire gone wild and mad with fury. Dorothy and Angeline with no one to trust but me, my own people at Lincoln, Ill. and Chicago in a frightful state of mind about me. It is awful to think of. It is enough to drive a fellow out of his senses. If we ever capture

2478 three moments, oh my what would
do to them. More than half of
Rogues men were ready. For man
Michael who knew not fear took
command of Mr Doules troops. Boldly as
soon as he saw that his men could
gain no more in numbers or in
warlike skill moved it swiftly against
the fiery conflagration for marching
at their head towards the fire trying
to cross a country road

For thirty seven minutes his
host swept onward across the road
cutting down everything in their
path. The fire for was actually
drawn up in high flaming
battle array and while the men
cut their way onward, the blazes
glared red hot. The smoke clouds
rolled across the country. In a
little while the armies of firefighters
were only separated one from
the other by a ~~very~~ narrow
strip of bare ground, the flames
beyond was growing worse and at
this sight even the bravest shud-
ded as they thought in fierce
conflict their fate would be
sealed if they did not
whip this local inferno,
yet from the fierce heat

2479 the sensation they foot was
more acute than men may dare
dare to face and suffer for
their flesh is exquisite, delicate.
Yet we know should this raging
fire be overcome the lower part
of the grain and wheat would slowly
decompose into another horrible wide
spread smoulder and its smoke
would do the other.

It is natural that men shrink
from suffering the fierce heat and
the bravest of them is troubled
at the thought of facing it.

A new leader by the name of
John Eufemeno gave the signal for
the onset and led the assault.
I warned him through my maga-
phone not to be reckless.

We fell upon the fire enemy
along our front thinking to destroy
him then and there and carry
the fields at the first assault.

The conflagration along this front
terribly fiery but no matter what
firm that the fighters, though held
back remained immovable.

Michael commanded his men
with the calmness and resolution
of a mighty spirit.

Three we strove with might and

main to break through the lines of flaming wheat. The inferno opposed us and the heat drove us back. In millions of acres the grain was trampled, but the flames leaped the breach.

At length our right wing pierced the fiery enemies left and then its counter attacked, and I beheld Green me because of the killing heat turn and flee in full career while Simon Segues legions covered them and gave the fierce inferno harder fight than ever. Yet the fire seemed to speed in pursuit of them and the deluge of broken slashed down wheat and stubble, and spurs spurred their nimble flight.

Suddenly a storm of cries amazed us. It grew louder and louder.

With desperate shrieks and triumphal clamor our central front had flung themselves upon the whole front of the inferno and broken it.

Thus the other section of the Gehenna was checked in its pursuit of the fugitives, while Dark hastened to the

counter assault to the rescue. 2481 of the shattered troops Henry Prince and Roquat flew to rally them and re-establish the conflict. But now the left wing of the inferno whose ruin he had not quite consummated, no longer pressed by men with gunny sacks and bucket men, regained fury and heat returned and faced us yet again.

Darkness like night fell upon the dubious field from so much thick smoke in the sky. The whole country was fogged by it.

While under the shelter of this darkness in the still silent air stirred ever and anon by the moan of some half scorched men. Teddy, men resting from their toils began to make ready for battle themselves.

These warriors surprised the fire enemy along the left and long and fierce was the fight that ensued. When all wheat and grain not afire yet had either been fallen before the cutters or soaked by water and mud Mr Michael renewed his own assault and none of the burning wheat save a few hundred yards

2482 of it save a few stretches
with four wings of flame
still resisted the onslaught of
a countless host of gunny sacks
and the like. They fell back cease-
lessly opposing their heat to us and
Michael so though slightly scathed,
still displayed an impassable count-
enance. Because of the smoke it was
still dark.

An and our advance it was for the
men sweat ran from our
brows a dazzling light of the awful
flames blinded us. Reddy point-
ing with hand, moving forward
ever nearer and nearer showed us
the way.

The raging host of fire
appearing along a long and broad
front seemed as the reflection of
a giant western brush fire.

Excepting for the hissing of
the flames infinite silence reign-
ed elsewhere. The smoke was
immensely tremendous.
We went on intoxicated with
hope all at once from the
smoke sheets of fire darted
forth looking like fire from
heaven.

The fields were running with

flames and the brush
men broke and fled.
Luciferno in the storm of fire
retained his haughty mien. In
vain the flaming host smote his
men mightier than ever they fought
on and still defied the fiery foe.

His men even cut down the flam-
ing hell fell mael and it rolled
over huge fragments of fields
being cut down as we fell madly
to the danderil headlong attack.

I myself saw around us my
companions scattered in thousands
on the sulpurous ground fighting
like mad lit by the fitful gleam
of lurid light and the horror of
the scene was such that we
wept as we fought. Yet we were
not conquered ~~and~~ conquered
since the will to conquer was
still ours, but neither was the
fire.

Cannons were brought up which
shot scores of exploding fire
extinguishers into the adamant flames.
Some other section of the line of
fire was taken unaware and
even then we thought to crash
through in triumph on our high
reckless assault, but the fields were

2484 wreathed in flames again
driving Reddy back after this
fresh disaster Reddy remained
while in meditation his heart
buried in his hands. Steadfast
and loyal the men rallied and
thronged about him.

"Comrades" he said for? was
near of victory is denied us now
it is because we are neither worthy
nor capable of victory. Let us
determine wherein we have failed.
We must conquer the fire some-
how to that task we must apply
ourselves unwearingly. It is not
blind courage (no one this day
has shown more courage than
have you) which will win us
the fields of wheat but rather
with not dare dare recklessness.
That's out. That's why we have
to run.

In these silent realms where
we are fallen back let us
meditate seeking the hidden
cause of things, let us observe
the course and speed and heat
of this inferno, let us pursue
it with compelling adour and
all-conquering desire, let us
strive to penetrate her infinite

grandeur its infinite 2485
minuteness, how it assembles
and disperses its fiery elements
its great heat where with we
have been scorched and the soaring
thoughts which stir our minds.

Tom with dire wounds scorched by
heat and flames, and almost smothered
by smoke and fumes let
us render thanks to God who has
redulously opened our eyes and let
us be woe warmed by our lot.

It is through pain that suffering
or experience of fiery nature we
have been roused to know her
and subdue her."

Green said:

"Let us go forth. Let us seek
the fire adversary in his heart
abode."

And he led his host of men
through and over the still unburned
fields. Indignation burst forth.

The anger burning in the hearts
of all inflamed each countenance.
They did not doubt of victory
but treachery by the flames was
feared. I took supreme command
showing contempt for danger. By
my orders the chiefs of the
troops paced with heavy steps.

2486 the fields of still unburned wheat and letting the gaze of their eyes wander over the glittering clouds of the inferno strive to place the cannon batteries in position. After inspecting the defenses they declared that all was in readiness.

They took counsel as to the plan they should follow. Michael was for the offensive. He as a consummate forest fire warrior said it was the supreme law. Attack or be attacked there was no middle course.

"Moreover" he added "the offensive attitude is particularly suitable to the occasion of all."

Beyond that it was impossible to obtain a word from the valiant chief and this silence seemed the mark of a forest fire genius sure of himself.

As soon as the approach of the Inferno was announced Michael sent forth three large platoons to meet it commanded by Reddy Carter, Riquate Raphael and Stevens.

The thunders of the cannons sending forth the fire extinguisher rolled over the fields. For three hours was the lot of the terrible armies and admirable scythe and cycle men unknown

on the fields because of the sea of smoke. Half an hour later news came by messengers but it was vague and confused. There were rumors of indecisive victories of the triumph now of this side now of that.

There came reports of glorious deeds which were were dissipated in a very short time. Yet the fire attacked by Raphael had it was said consumed entire fields and was swallowed up in the whirlwind of a tempest of fire. It was also believed that the savage attack of Victor Johnson had been flung headlong into this gulf of perdition so suddenly that the flaming front along his line had been forced backwards with explosive results. But his victory cost him burns that had to be treated.

In the meanwhile the commanders of the three armies had sent no messengers. Mutterings and murmurs mingling with the rumors of glory gave rise to fears of an indecisive battle, a precipitate retreat before the heat of the flames.

Insolent voices gave out that a mountain of flame had first first checked and routed the host

of the three leaders. There were also rumours of whole scale defection in the inferno where more fiercer flames had broken out, and some had seen greater black clouds of smoke joining the sea of smoulder smoke.

But no one lent a ear to the odious rumours and stress was laid on the news of victory which ran from lip to lip each statement readily finding confirmation. Then the guards watching the events signalled the approach of the first fugitives of the three armies, some in tattered half burned clothes dried by the heat flying in great disorder overheated incrimed, and scorched over-exhausted men going as to say "on three feet"

With impassive gaze I heard of all measured the extent of the disaster and my keen intelligence penetrated its causes. The armies under Michael had taken the offensive but by one of those fatalities in fire fighting which disconcerted the plans of the greatest captains, the fire enemy had also taken the offensive and the effect was evident. Scarcely were the

fields of unburned fields passed to receive the glorious 2488. But shattered remnants of the three armies when a rain of shell fire fell on the conflagration.

Stevens army was not yet in sight, but the wall of flame continued on. The cannons continued to thunder but the fire extinguishers fell short and their thunders were lost in the flame and smoke hell.

Smothered by the killing heat and smoke the faithful fighters under Simon Segree abandoned their line of attack and took to stubborn defence. Michael went to announce to me that the fields near where the wagon with the girls were would fall into the hands of the inferno in half an hour and that nothing remained but to remove them before it was too late. A deluge of fire was falling on everything. Yet there was no time for removal. My men had not yet been in action all this time. I declared I would not let the fire get even near there. I led my fresh high spirited men

2486 "Don't you think that I asked
Jeddy O Rourke" a remarkable why
for all that smoke I don't remem-
ber to have seen one like it
before?" - not equal to it "he replied.
That's something besides underpart wheat
shoots run. There'll be a mischief
done in the burning fields I expect
before long. Gosh what fighting your
men are doing."

Even all over the landscape it was
a great murky confusion - here and there
blotted with a colour like the smoke from
damp fuel, while rising into the far
sky being like uprising clouds tossed
up into most remarkable heaps,
suggesting greater heights in the great
clouds than there were depths below
them to the bottom of the deepest
hollow in the earth through
which the wildest shoots of
flame seemed to plunge headlong
up as if in a dread disturbance of
the laws of nature & they had
lost their way and were fright-
ened.

Fortunately there had been no
wind up to now, yet the flames
were rising then with an
extraordinary great sound that
should not be heard from

burning wheat. Before I got 2487
the bad news towards where it
was heading it had much in-
creased and the sky was more
overcast with smoke yet my men fought
hard. The driver of the wagon the
little girls were on, was preparing to
pull away if things grew worse.

Yet while the men advanced the
clouds closed in and densely overspreading
the whole sky, then very dark from
smoke, yet the attack against the
flames came on harder & leading in
person.

Yet the heat of the flames still
more increased until the nearest fighters
could scarcely face it the leaders turn-
ing about coming to a dead stop and
we were often in serious apprehension
that the fire would get totally out
of control and become a general con-
flagration like the first big one.

Sweeping clouds of sparks roared up-
wards, like showers of white-hot steel
and at those times when a breach was
made after great toil we were fain
to stop to rest in a sheer impos-
sibility to continue the struggle.

When the smoke in front of the
fighters cleared a little because of a
breeze they fought harder and

2458 harder. I had never known
this before of men fighting like
this before or anything approach-
ing it. We came to a side road
having had to fight every inch of
ground since we started this des-
perate attack and found a cluster of
men over-exhausted and slightly scour-
ched and suffering from smoke tor-
mented eyes and nostrils on the
road, who under Jim Scarnon had
fallen back fearful of being overcome
from heat and smoke.

Some of these congregating about
the unburned fields while we fought
on, told us of great sheets of flames
having progressed forward despite
all their efforts, and burned forward
into a hay field, while they strove
to block it up.

Others had to of country men com-
ing in from neighbouring villages
to help fight the flames. Still there
was no abatement in our storm
of attack as I called in still more
and more of my men, and we
attacked still harder. I also huddled
a savage attack upon Jim Scarnon's
fire enemy.

As we struggled on and on
nearer and nearer to the main
line of fire our force of fire

becoming more and more 2459
and more terrific. It began to give
way before this mighty attack coming
dead on. Coming near to a new breach
I saw not only more men but the
number of Roquats troop braving the fury
of the storm of blazing fury and forcing
the fire out of its course despite its
trying desperately get back.

Roquat was a little ahead of us.
Among these groups, I found exhausted
men whose comrades and reinforcing men
were away to the fighting front where
there was too much reason to think
might have probably succeed in their
own assault also.

Grizzled old fighters shaking their
heads as they looked from flames to
smoke filled sky and muttering to
themselves or to one another, farmers ex-
cited and uneasy, smoke overcome
fighters huddling to gether and peering
into each others faces even stout old
time forest fire fighters disturbed
and anxious, levelling their glances
at the conflagration as if they were
surveying their worst of all enemies.
In fact they were.

On tremendous assault it reed
when I could find sufficient space
to observe it in the agitation of the

blinding smoke and heat the
2468 fly ing sparks and the awful
fiery hissing noise confounded me.
The flames seemed possessed by the
full might of their wrath, rushing to
be gathered into the composition of the
another monster only to be held
at bay. I actually seemed to see a
screaming and fiery upheaving of
all nature.

Not finding the brave Henry the
engineer among the men who were
also making a memorable attack for
it is still remembered long afterwards
as the greatest ever known to be ever
be launched against an inferno
had brought to gather I continued to
make my own headlong attack.

A foreman told me that two
other columns of men had gone against
the flames with all their numbers,
and that some others had been
seen labouring hard in the narrow
route through the fields and trying
in great desperation to keep the
fire away from these fields.

Though I fought on I was
very much depressed in spirits,
and felt an uneasiness of Ruggedo
not being there because of his
injury and burns. I was really

seriously affected without 2961.
knowing how much
by this fight and my long ex-
posure to the fierce heat and
smoke had confused me. There was that
jumble in my thoughts and recollections
that I had lost the clear arrange-
ment of line and distance. If such
an attack of my men could increase with
added numbers I think it was in-
creasing. The howl and roar of the men,
the hissing of the flames, the pounding
sound of the gunny sacks, and the
prodigious searing of the flames were
more fearful than an hour ago.
But there was twilight darkness be-
sides caused by the smoke and that
invested the storm of attack with
new terrors real and fanciful. But
it was yielding before our assault
and wavering.

The thunder of the cannon firing
the extinguishers into the inferno was
so loud and incessant that I could
not hear something I might de-
sire to hear. I made a still greater
exertion in the attack.

A foreman came riding up to me
as I heard the little girls at a distance
cry out "Look look!"
What is the matter? "I cried.

2462 They say the fire is worse.
I sprang forward and asked what part
of the fire was threatening close by.
Our left flank crossing through the field to
want to head it off. German men are opposing
it along a breach between two wheat fields
near here."

The excited voice went clattering along
the road and I wrapped myself in much
wetter clothing as quickly as I could and
urged my reinforcements into that very
direction. Numbers of well equipped men
were there before mine all running in
one direction towards the scene of the fiercest
counter attack. My men and myself
ran the same way out stripping &
good many and soon came facing
the wild inferno.

Even the breeze what had been
blowing slightly might by this time
have lulled a little though no more
terrifying than if the cannonading had
been diminished by the silencing of
half a dozen guns out of hundreds.

But the fire having upon it the
additional agitation of the whole
mid morning was infinitely more
terrific than when I saw it before
fighting it. Every appearance it
had then presented bore the very bad

expression of being swelled and 2463
the height to which the rose and
"looking over one another"
appeared to bear one up and rolled
with the dense cloud smoke sea in inter-
minable hosts was most appalling.

In the difficulty of hearing anything
but yells and shouts also shrieks of rank
defiance of the fighters, and in the crowd
rushing towards the flames like a brigade
charging on a battle field, and the unpeakable
confusion caused by the noise of the battle
and my frequent breathless efforts to
stand against the heat and smoke of this
earthly perdition I was so confused that
I looked over the great rolling smoke
shroud for the new course of the
flames, and saw nothing but
smoke and flames ahead of me.

A very soggy dressed foreman fol-
lowing next me pointed with his
finger in the same direction to the
left.

Then O Great Heaven I saw it close
in upon us. In that direction one once
solid line of fighting men was
broken shot off, six hundred men
in length and slowly receding
over to the right center and left,
and while so retreating entangled
in a dense solid mass of wheat barley

2464 and grain and all that ruin
as the flames rolled on
while the fighting men not yet
having recoiled rolled and beat with
their gummy sacks which they did with-
out a moment's hesitation or pause and
with a speed and violence no-
lance quite inconceivable beat with the
soaking wet sacks as they wanted to
wipe out the whole farms.

Some desperate efforts were also being
made by the cutters to cut the portion
of his field in the path of the fire
away for as the inferno which was
broadside on became turned towards us
in its surging and rolling.

I could plainly discern the great
number of sickle scythe and bucket
men at desperate work with all their
equipment, especially one thick active
line with very long grass cutters and
long sharp broadswords conspicuous among
the rest.

I never saw a scene like this be-
fore. But a great cry which was
audible even above the shouts of the
fighters rose from my men at
this moment, the sickle and scythe
men sweeping actually through
the rolling smoke and flame
made a clean breach and carried
all before them. The second

surge was yet just pushing 2465
on with a rage beyond description
and with the men there fighting
like demons amid a wild confusion
of at right angles and sword and
of long image of gummy sacks actually
flapping to and fro the flames had
struck once, the same formless hoarsely
said in my ear then lifted up and
struck again.

I understood him to add that this
section of the inferno was parting and
ships and I could readily suppose so, for
the movement was too tremendous for
all these men to stand before long.

As he spoke there was another cry
of decision from my own men, a new
swarm of men swarmed to the
fire sweep, clinging to their various weapons
as they slowly surged forward uppeermost,
the men with sacks and buckets
and chemical hand grenades.

I don't know now why some one had
a bell with them and as these men rolled
and dashed forward like desperate
creatures driven mad, now showing us
the whole sweep of their headlong
assault as they turned right ably towards
the inferno, now nothing near of them
because of the smoke, as they sprung
wildly onward and turned towards
the center the bell rang and its sound

2466 apparently saw the smell of
that conflagration borne towards
us on what was left of the breeze.
The agony among men increased,
men groaned and clapped their hands
and turned away their faces. Many
fought wildly up and down the fire-front
receiving more and more men.

I found myself one of these frantically
storming along my front of the fire.

They were making out to me in
an agitated way, I don't know how, for
the little I could hear, I was scarcely
composed enough to understand that a
brigade held in readiness had been
bravely storming the inferno an hour
ago and could do nothing because of
the killing heat and as that as no
man would be so desperate as to
attempt to wade off even with soak-
ing clothes with gummy red rocks
and established a reckless communication
with the hellish fire, there was
nothing left to try when I noticed
that some new sensation moved
the men resting from over exertion
exertions and over exposure to heat
and smoke and saw them part
and to my astonishment Carter
came breaking through them
with Kaliko and a long column
of armed men.

I rode up to him as well as 2467
I know to appeal for help but
though I was distracted as I was
by a sight so new to me and terrible
the determination on his face, and his
look towards the conflagration - exactly
the same look as I remembered in
connection with the morning after his
successful fight against the main big
fire awoke me to the knowledge of
the danger.

Another cry among the fighting men
and looking to the fire we saw a wave
of flame beat back a platoon of
men and rush on in triumph round
the other troops of fighting men left
alone on the field.

Against such a sight and against
such determination as that of the calmly
desperate men who were always accustomed
to lead half the army present I
might as hope-fully have entreated
the fire. Even a part of my men
were swept away to some distance
where the others around them made
them stay urging as I confusedly
perceived that Kaliko was bent on
going with his men with help
or without and that I should endanger
the precautions for their safety by
troubling those with whom they acted.

2468 I don't know what I answered
or what they rejoined but I saw
hurry among even my men and
a new force of men running with
all sorts of equipment and perne-
trating into the newest wheat fields which
smoke hid from me.

The fire storm along Stevens line was
breaking up a portion of the conflagration
I saw was parting in the middle and
that now the life of the conflagration
hung by a thread. Still it clung to
its stand and I was afraid it
would part and spread into two
fires. Kaliko watched the flames
standing alone with the silence of
suspended breath behind him and the
storm of fire before until there
was a great force of men with
him when with a backward glance
at all of them he dashed forward
followed by the men in a mom-
ent was buffeting with the fire.

And now he made for the divided
fire striving hard valiantly. The
distance was nothing but the power
of two fires made the strife deadly.
He was so near that with
one more of his vigorous charges
he would be sweeping the fire
back when a great crowd
of men moving towards him

from his left flank, my 2469
men swept in like crazy
joining him and Carter and along this
front the fire was overthrown
yet consternation doubt and ardent hope was
in every face yet some some of the
men drew a foreman to my very
feet - insensible severely scorched
He was carried to the nearest refuge
and no one preventing me I remained
near him lying while every means
of restoration was tried, and soon he
regained consciousness as I sat beside
him, Kaliko taking my place to fight
on a far foreman called to me
at the tent door.

"Sir" said he with tears starting to
his face which with his trembling lips
was ashy pale "will you come over
yonder?" I asked him terror stricken
leaning on the arm he held out to
support me "Has any more been
wounded or scalded?"

He said "yes"
Do I know it?" I asked them.

He answered nothing. But he led me
to a fire breach. I saw lying cared for
by men Carter Green lying with his
head upon his arm. He too
was seriously and scorched and 200
hundred of his men. What luck?

2470 The fire though defeated still refused to yield ground. What a stubborn out fit it was. I found out that the fire though licked would still hold its own and that horrible as were the smoke and heat atrocities committed by the blaze they were even much surpassed by those which had been enacted in the main principal conflagration and that in this big local fire in particular a most terrible fury was raging because of the enforced set back.

If it should recover from its defeat God help us.

The terror among the refugees was universal. The news of the new fires and three times as much smoke already had heightened the dismay. Private property was wiped out by fire.

Farm houses, houses and barns and other type of fields went before the flames. There were spies everywhere but they could not accomplish much.

A strong force of men taking full advantage of the fact that the fire was licked rushed into that section and there was a renewal of the fight. The flaming wheat rushed on them, but the fighters beat it off, and got through part way, then a regiment came up, but still the defeated fire in its head was too

strong for them though they 2471 fought stoutly. I can tell you our own blood was up but it was no use. The deadly fire held them back from its heat, and many of them got severe burns or scalds or suffer from smoke inhalation. But the feeling was strong I can tell you, and they are going to get a thousand five hundred men to gether to storm the stand still blaze.

I was bitterly disappointed for I had hoped that this assault might have availed with the fighters to lick it beyond recovery and doubtless would have done so, had not the fire been so hot and even smothery.

As to the prospects of storming the fire, though still licked at a bay I did not feel sanguine or sanguine. The fire though licked was still able to strongly defend itself even though there were three regiments of troops nearby, and could be brought up. Even then they also could not force the fire from its stubborn stand.

The cannons poured a broadside into the flaming wheat and every gunner was on his mettle. One tree was hit and snapped near the base but also the fire extinguisher bombs did not yet explode but some stretches of burning

2472 wheat were shot away and a number of big gaps were drilled through the burning fields. A loud cheer broke from our men. So as the inferno was so sufficiently crippled now to prevent it getting any more headway and yet thought defeated it was at last to show whether it could fight still as well as stand its ground and I must say for the inferno it did.

It was still burning twenty two or more great fields against our efforts to cripple it, and after ten minutes we were a temporal time held in check ourselves. However we had not been idle and as the shots from the cannoners had been principally against the red enemys fiery center as our great object was to cripple the inferno, and so prevent the blaze from getting away on us again it appeared to be by this time a mere wreck above its surface although the main fire were scarcely touched whereas two of our platoons of men had been driven back and some thirty of our men struck down by the dangerous heat or over come by smoke.

As the cannoners forced a last broadside of 24 inchers extinguished into the center, Kallio

also ordered the line of men 2423 to surge to the assault. There was no need to call upon the stormers to be ready. Every man was prepared and as the flames appeared to recede our men rushed headlong to the wildest most desperate assault yet ever made. But the fires were as eager to repel us as we were to attack them, and upon the flaming fields a desperate combat ensued.

Strong as we were Bogart carried fully as many men and as they were fighting with hopes to totally overcome the inferno its little wonder they fought so well and recklessly.

I've been in a good many fire fights but never did I see one like that.

Each man hocked and hewed and slashed and wielded with every weapon as if the whole maiden fight depended upon his single exertions. The gunny sack men worked for all they were worth and the bracket crew did their share. Gradually the men whose places were to guard the light supply wagons left their places and joined in the fight while with the cannons continued to

2474 from chemicals into the inferno. It was near half an hour before we got a fairly and long breach before the fire and the fighters gradually and steadily fought their way forward. Yet half of Greens men were overcome by over exertion heat smoke and thirst, or burned slightly or seriously, and the rest retreating to cover from the fierce heat. John Manley had fully on third of his complement, over tired heat exhaustion, overcome by heat thirst and some scalded or burned.

Manley had lost a lot of hair, was burned on the face, his second and third lieutenants were both badly burned, and a captain himself had his jaw badly singed by a shoot of flame into his face.

Talk about a defeated fire yet it had licked us too. It was madness to face that blinding blistering heat.

Never were men more glorious than we were though we were driven back, even the exhausted and burned and wounded also felt that our defeat was only temporary, and we felt as if we had already won. Yet it seemed a thousand to one against

2475 Army success on our part yet just think a licked fire licking us. It was now a draw.

Simon Segre decided to try his own luck and to rein force John Manley and Roguet. It was a fine sight as the leading troop consisting of twelve lines of well equipped men, and a number of ranks of bucket men, marched on through the fields followed at a short distance by Kaliko with his own troops.

The conflagration though as said defeated, held its own throwing a fierce unbearable heat and dense smoke but all this resistance was very ineffectual and the army of fire fighters without replying marched on until they had attained the position intended for them.

Though licked the inferno seemed prepared for them.

But the men prepared for action.

Then brigade of sickle and axe men and a large number of broadsword men supported by gunny sack troop amounting to two thousand wet clothed men were moving in a line a mile long in front of the blaze and was further supported by chemical and grenade troops.

This great force was to engage the fire alone as that of Simon Segre remained elsewhere menacing the

2475 the formidable roar of the fire and preventing this from adding its heat and smoke and seething flames upon John Manley's brigade. The leading troop of the army had been directed to march right past the line of fire and to operate against a detached wall of burning wheat and other crop flaming across a very narrow pathway through the field on the right flank of the inferno.

This portion of the conflagration, had high mounting rolls of overheated fire much superior to those of other portions of the burning wheat, but the men were in high spirits at the prospect of a fight, little as they understood the cause of the sea fire, while defeated holding its own as if victorious victorious for which they were engaged, yet hopefully.

An Simon Segres troop passed along the line of fire a hundred yards away to take up its position it was scalded by a storm of heat from the main conflagration, to which they made no assault yet as reply they suffered however little injury, although the heat was almost unbearable.

I felt that I was rather pale and was disgusted with myself at feeling of discomfort which I experienced,

But there is nothing that tries the nerves more than standing the fierce heat of an inferno before it is time to set to work at an attack. As soon as the orders were given for Simon's men to storm the fire directly the troops could be brought to bear and the attack launched, the feeling of uneasiness on my part disappeared and was succeeded by that of the excitement of battle.

When however the fire though as you say was like licked and yet still held its ground, Ruggles who was sometimes very hot tempered gave a start of annoyance and exclaimed "Rocketty, Ricketts. When it threatened to fight the breach he shouted angrily - rudge and blazes and words not fit for print.

When his men was driven back temporarily he screamed in a fury. Hippikabou. He was then so violently enraged that he could not utter a word but hopped of the stump he was standing on and all around the ground in a mad frenzy so that he reminded Dorothy and Angeline of a jumping jack. The antics of Ruggles and his men made them somewhat apprehensive and very nervous.

2477 Perhaps Ruggedo could not be more furious than he was before but the fire driving his men back nearly drove him frantic and he roared at the flames and them like a savage beast. Then as he found that all his efforts were likely to be dispelled, and his men totally driven back he gave the shrill whistle that summoned all his warriors.

At once they came filing up and marched up the narrow wheat field road and into the still unburning area led by Otto Zink. When they had nearly filled the small territory they formed ranks on the nearly road and then stood still until they were told what to do next.

The wagon containing the little girls had been drawn out of danger when the fire fighters came and they stood on the middle of the wagon watching the exciting scene while a great great platoon of men stood upon one side, and the rest of the men stood on the other side and the two ends.

"Seize that field before the fire gets to it," shouted Ruggedo to a captain and a large group of warriors sprang forward

to obey. But the heat came at them so fiercely and threatened to rally so threateningly that the men drew back in alarm. "Don't mind it," cried the captain as I heard, "the flames cannot leap beyond the breach where the fire now is."

"But the heat is unbearable and over bearing and will scorch us all who attempt to get near it," said one of the men.

"All for that," answered Ruggedo. "All throw in reserves so the inferno cannot resist us."

He rushed forward with a swarm of men to do this but just then a searing cyclone of flame surged upward and forward towards the breach and hurled at them a shower of powerful counter attack with both right and left wings.

"Ow murder, treason," yelled Ruggedo, whose men along this fiery front had been hurled backwards through the roadside wheat field, with a number of men scalded, scorched, scalded, bruised, mangled and scalded. "Have come that?"

"Too much heat and heat, heat," growled the captain. "We better not try it again or it'll hurl us back again."

2479 "We'll see about that" replied

Ruggedo, and at once he sent a double number towards the front breach and they swarmed furiously towards the inferno. But in spite of this the fire moved and moved so damn quickly towards the attacking men that they hardly could not get out of the way. The flames fairly flew up into the air and the men reeled back, scorched by the heat, smoke blinded and half smothered.

"Well well" said Ruggedo reining in his horse and looking surprised, "Why didn't that assault succeed?"

"The fire is too hot to face" replied the captain. "Our efforts went wrong against that you know."

"I can't see how I'd forgotten that" said Ruggedo turning his horse around dejectedly. "I thought it was said the fire was licked. Very well let things alone then. It can't escape us any how!"

The fighters who had been rather confused by these incidents now formed their ranks again and the grain cutters, closed in on the wagon containing the little girl and took a position beside it.

At that moment a wheat field

parted and a wave of men 2480 were disclosed to view. They paused astonished at sight of the defeated half scorched warriors and the angry Ruggedo riding in their midst.

"I will not surrender to that damn fire" cried Ruggedo in a loud voice. "I'll make us all disgraced."

Go long answered Kaliko riding up. "We promised Stevens we'll break it up along this front and then if necessary draw back in safety."

"I said we will conquer it" retorted Ruggedo "and so we may and we cannot leave these dominions till we do."

You are the best leader and I know you can hurl a army all before it attack, but this is like volcanic fires, and the air is hotter than blue blazes. The fire turns in all directions and if we can whip it to a total finish its a miracle."

"That will be the end of everything all right" said I myself regretfully. Yet if something is not done soon that inferno blue or green will become another another general one and reduce itself to an extraordinary smoulder and then we'll sure have smoke. "Do you think we can crush it then?"

481 asked Ruggedo.
"We must try" I returned boldly
"Then I said to the captains of my
army
"I and my brave fighters and fight
like hell"

At that, my waves of reinforced men
equipped with everything dashed furiously
upon the fiery foe joined by Ruggedo,
and Ruggedo's men, Kalika following after.

The Captain of his own men was
so surprised by the success of this
sudden overwhelming assault, that he
yelled and screamed hooray and also then
commanded his men to fight so that
ten acres in the advanced fiery field
which was at a vigorous march was
almost wiped out.

The fighters could not force their
way through any further however so the
fire raged again, and by that time
another row of flaming wheat edge-
where was nearly wiped out.

But during this awful assault a
great number of the men got the
heat and smoke too much, a number
were scorched, scorched, scalded, over-
tired and smoke blinded, the line
of attack was shattered shattered
by the inconceivable heat and
hurled back in rapid retreat, and
they were helpless to fight any

any longer. Then to make things
worse a big tree surrounded
by flaming wheat burned through
at the base of the trunk and it
came down with such a strong blow
that it carried down another one with
it and dozens of men were caught under
its branches or held down by their
trunks. Kalika pressed forward through
his warriors to the front ranks so he
could see what was going on but he
faced Otto Junk and his old men. Otto
Armed to action by the voice of
all the men he drew forth one of
his slugs from his sight and
hurled it straight at the flames
advancing towards where the men
were held down by the trees.

They struck the fire storm squarely
on its left flank, where it was
smashed and scattered as an egg would
be and covered by a another line
of men they held it back.

Men with picks and ^{axes} and
broadswords, cut and hooked furiously,
at the fallen trees and branches,
while others used crowbars
to lift up the trunks so those
caught by them could crawl from
under. Some one screamed help
help help while clawing to

2483 to at a large flaming branch
in a struggle to get free from it.
"The fire the fire Run for your lives!"
shouted the captain as the man was
pulled free and made to run with
him and the others.

And how they did run! The warriors
fairly tumbled over one another in their
efforts to escape the burning heat of
the awful flames, and those who could not
rush down the winding pathway through
the wheat leaped across into the wheat
field or across from it accidentally knock-
ing over those who bumbled stood in
the way.

Even while the man had been yelling
for help before being pulled free the
acres of wheat became emptied of every one
of Tim's warriors, and before the other
line had managed to clear themselves
from the inferno left flank the
fire threw a second storm against them
right, many blinded by smoke en-
tirely, overheated, clothes half burned
off, by being doused by the heat some
burned & overcome by heat and
over exhaustion. Some of them were
or many of them were unable to
flee because they could not
see which way to run while
they stood still and howled
and shouted and screamed in

an abject fear in panic. 2484
~~where~~ While this was going
on I moved forward on my horse
horse and shouted to Kaliko:
"Get that left flank unbuckled it
backwards quick Kaliko quick!"

Kaliko obeyed. He ran his men at
once against the left flank while
the others were still trying to free
their eyes of the smoke and in twenty
or so minutes had unbuckled the
conflicting conflagration and carried away
with him but with a loss of three
men burned to death.

Just then Mr Chief ~~Stew~~ Steward
rushed in and began mopping
away the broken section of the in-
ferno along Kaliko's front. It was
the fiercest fight against the
flames even since the main fire
first began. In a few minutes and
while all were struggling savagely
on the at one section regained
its stand. Ruggado whose eyes also
were smoke blinded but regained
the use of them glared wickedly
upon the inferno and exclaimed:

"Don't let that part rally. Or we'll
suffer for it. Don't you see what
it is doing?"
Men warned against against there

2484 with all their might pushing it back. Ruggedo did not join them. He was in a hospital tent getting a badly burned arm dressed and bandaged, and his head too, and he had lost all his hair and beard, and his clothes were half burned away. He crept onto the bed assigned to him, laid down bitterly bemoaning his defeat.

He had not thought of danger until his men took the risk to fight their way through the advanced portions of the flames which I had forbidden, and so the large number of warriors who had been forced to retreat with the speed of men in full chase. They with their cutting weapons cut down anything in their path.

I had warned Ruggedo against making daredevil attacks like that but it did me no good and now he lay in the bed of a hospital tent suffering from burns, and before the fierceness of the flames, smoke and heat all desire on the part of the men departed from them and they had turned and fled madly to the rear and refused to go back again.

Though this was a local fire it was about a quarter the size of the main one, but fiercer and much hotter

much hotter and desperately 2485
attribution, and double the amount of smoke, flame and heat. It really was very dangerous but we were taking our chances. Ten of Ruggedo's men died of burns, and dozens of seriously burned had to be sent by wagon to a hospital on Esterbrook Brown, the University made into one.

The fury of this conflagration apparently licked or not was ungovernable and almost impossible to face. It whirling one thousand foot flames whirled the greatest heat far in all directions.

What was left of Ruggedo's men assembled near the still unburned fields. They brave as they were had been horror stricken at the scathing fury and killing heat of the intense conflagration, and of its exceedingly dense smoke clouds and fumes and felt that this was the beginning of the fulfillment of the rumors of some few hours before.

The murderous fury of this red fiery demon was indeed the signal for every man of thought or feeling and heart of Ruggedo's men to wisely draw back from it. Hundreds of his men who had at first thought that the Gehenna would be easily thrown out and who had gone heart and soul in the struggle to overpower it had been forced back

2486 with many killed many burned
scalded, over come and blinded by
smoke and heat, over fatigue and other
troubles. Ruggado laid up. They had shrunk
back appalled at the world record breaking
fires that had so rapidly developed.

Even John Manleys men, all of whom had
at first gone bravely and most bravely
into the conflict had shrunk back appall-
ed before the fierce heat and when they
saw that fields upon fields were so horribly
menaced, Jim men who had attacked
most stubbornly were on retreat and
Reddy the leader of the Third brigade
had been scathed, and his men
driven back and over all gloom and
discouragement was hanging.

And now this local conflagration
was to stand forth in the eyes of
the world, the enemy not of farms
only but of all Northern Illinois
in general.

Yet the shouts of the mob were
taken up, and re-echoed by all the
repulsed fighters. Savage cries, curses
and shouts of vengeance. Satan-like
inferno filled the air, they were all
still armed with the weapons
they brandished in the air and
shook. They had lost friends in
the fight and all the savage

instincts were on fire. They 2487
mostly all Irish, and they say nothing
can lick the Irish, not even
the angel and devils put together.
This is horrible. Henry said Ruggado
felt as if he were in a night mare, not
that any night mare could compare in
terror to this. Look at those hideous flames
flames delayed by criminal heat and
smoke, degraded below the level of
common fire, exulting in Ruggados
defeat, lusting in fury with Kalika
and others giving it all the fiercest
fight and to think this fire may
become the master of the future and
situation. Great heavens what can come
of it in the future. What is going
to take place now?

"Organized general assaults of all
the others combined to fear Ruggado.
What seems incredible impossible is
going to take place there is to be a
closing in general assault by every-
body at once. Can it succeed? Well too
join in."

I went to visit Ruggado. The doctor
was still with him.

"We have attended to Ruggado and a good
man also and we will do all we
can for him."

"You don't think the fire seriously
burned him?" asked in dismay.

78' Well he has been burned pretty
2488 bad my friend and he again ex-
claimed Ruggedo! A arm and head
I should not have liked such a
burn my self I know you had issued
orders that no one should go too near the
flames and so the poor fellow brought
it on himself. Some of the foremen
had their eyes on him and felt sure
because of his anger against the fire,
he would do something rash, and I
had intended to stop him but he
was too quick for them, How come
he is to be so foolish as to risk
such danger?

"We had awful determination to
subdue the inferno and we thought
we and all the others might do
something to prevent it becoming
a general conflagration like the
first" I answered for I saw that
it would be my best policy to
be frank. "It was along the inferno's
left flank that this occurred"

"It was rash of all of you sir. The
fire was defeated but if it was
it would have been overcome by
now. I treacherously tricked you.
A kid might as well try to
save his mother from the
tiger how has laid his paw upon

her so for you to try to 2489
check or beat back that fire. Yet
I know you won't yield. My
heavens to think that on the
early hours everyone were fool

enough to go and fight that new fire
but no one has seen their mistake.

What has it brought us ruined country
side a ruined trade smoke enveloped
towns, ruined miles and miles of
farms. And now what are you going
to do?

But don't make yourself weary
The burn is worse on the arm and
that's all, he will soon get over that.
I've seen many men get worse
burns than that on fighting a
fire and be at work again within
two weeks but it is different
here.

They say they saw his face and
he was pretty nearly mad when
the fire defied him. Never fear
we will look after him well.
You can stay if you like but if
you want to go and continue the
fight you can trust him to us.
I see you can keep your head and
will not run into danger like
he did."

"I have to go terribly I said 'terribly,

2490 and I feel I can trust you and the nurse completely. Doctor you have saved his life. If you think he needs a surgeon call him in and get everything necessary for him.

"agreed the doctor said shaking me by the hand. You speak like a man of heart I will look after him. You need be ~~no~~ under no uneasiness. We are ~~of~~ no fools. Now you had best be off, for I see you are on thorns and leave me to finish battle with his head. I you ~~soul~~ should I come back soon you can depend upon it I will look after him till he is able to go about again."

On leaving Ruggedo in the care of the doctor who had so providentially come to his aid, I hurried down to my men, moving towards the endangered fields, then I stopped to think should I concentrate like the rest are preparing to do, or make my attack against the left flank that had defeated Ruggedo. I wanted revenge. Yet I could not tell whether all of his men had retreated or not, how many from Lurin were dug out of the bitter fight, and removed to the rear,

If they had been so it 2491 was clearly impossible for me to rally them in any way. They might have already fallen into despair and discouragement. And without their leader what could they do. And Carter and some other leaders burned.

The crowd seemed to great for the fire to hold them back, and even then I could only witness without power to avert the fires storming fury. Were there a good rain we might do something. Perhaps the fire had not yet arrived along the main field. But what a fire. It was now nine o'clock in the morning.

The fields were crowded with desperate fighters. There had something glassy to keep the smoke from their eyes. The desperate fighting was still going on almost tumultuous even. On arriving at a part of the field called stony point I found all was awful confusion there and with a faint feeling of hope that the fire would not extend beyond there I again moved with my men in that direction.

The rage of the flames was still on and I temporarily halted my men though I could hear the shrieks and defiant yells of the fighters. I rode forward on my horse to enable

2492 me to observe any general movement of Roquais cross of men in the threatened fields. There was a stir among the men under Otto Junk and O'Hara and their bodies of men with all their equipment moved down the fields.

"They're going to join La Force" said after following them. "Oh if I could to make we would make an end to this murderous fire."

I rode restlessly up and down half mad with rage and horror and at my powerlessness to interfere in any way with the proceedings of the fire which was carrying on the work of utmost devastation.

I hurried away with men of others besides my own to reach the fields near the left wing of the inferno before the band from Otto Junk arrived there. Unfortunately we came down by a side narrow lane upon them when they were within a hundred yards of the inferno and thick smoke unbearable heat and flames would not let them make any headway. At this part it looked like the end of the world.

My great hope that we might succeed in penetrating with these men, found Otto Junk and aid

him in making his way 2493 through the fields in the efforts to drive back the flames. But here on the other sections of the inferno there was a method in the fight against the flames. The men under Duddy took possession of the fields at the entrance but still the fire permitted more to pass into the field, the waders and officials and men held back, or driven back in batches. In vain Otto Junk tried to penetrate into the inner part of the fields. He was roughly repulsed by the heat of the flames, and at last finding that nothing could be done stood at bay.

I could see he was utterly worn and exhausted yet his fighting men were had courage. They faced the flames as bravely as calmly as if going to dinner.

"The wheat fields here are very tough to plough through here sir" said Otto Junk riding up to me. "There are two sections of the fire heading this way. The breeze too is dropping so much that our territory won't clear of smoke and the fire is sweeping on fast."

"Prepare to hold your ground Mr. Junk" I said. "But do not let any of your men rush the fire. We don't want any more leaders or men burned."

2494 He 7 had scarcely spoken how-
ever when there was a slight
shivering sensation of the flames and
it was known by all of us that it
had come upon ^{us} ~~us~~ ^{breck} and we
hoped a very wide one. While the men
were kept at fighting, some of my men
were called forward and every effort
was made to hold the flames in
check.

The men fought hard in spite of the
storm of smoke and parching
ing heat. But the fire storm was
just as stubborn, calling one of the
officers 7 requested him to go forward
and see what was going on in other
parts of the battle line. He returned
with the news that four or more
other brigades of men were plainly
on the retreat and that everything
appeared to be going badly.

There is one thing 7 forgot to
write. Though we desperately fight-
ing this big local fire we leaders
had more men that was too many
to be into ~~the~~ action here, so
the rest had been employed among
the cutter and splashers to cut down
as far as able all the wheat in the
territory of the ~~smoke~~ or around
it to prevent any more local
fires, and there finished first

to come to our aid as soon as possible. 7 in the meantime Simon
Sagan was suffering hourly. The
fierce heat from the fire was well
directed, and the men who were working
under comparative shelter had all that
hated smoke to contend with and the
flames were able to rent forth their flames
steadily closer while a ~~thick~~ ^{thickening} column
column of fire and two wings of the
conflagration was threatening to danger-
ously out fland him.

And it was claimed the inferno
was defeated. Why then this? The
number of those overcome by heat and
smoke, scorched by flames and
smoke blinded was already large.
But as the men near the wide
breach could work their way along
the fury of the inferno with unabated
zeal and the other side of the wide
gap in the fields bore many signs
of the occupancy of the fire as it most
desperately tried to burn across.

On that side the breach was in
many places burned away and one
section was nearly crossed though
never before was a fire so desperately
and savagely opposed. But all these
men were clearly overmatched though 7
did send him heavy reinforcements and

2496 Segree had hastily wrote a
note to me stating that his
men was overwhelmed and altogether
overmatched and begging that
another brigade of men might be
dispatched to his aid if one could be
spared in order to partially relieve him
of the fire enemys attack.

I didnt assent to that request. I came
myself with all my men to his aid.
"Either that or have another Ruggeds
disaster."

"Here Mr Sangley also take your troop
and attack the right flank instantly while
I'll attack along the breach. That damn
fire has got to be stopped there at
any cost."

Mr Harry Sangley obeyed orders. Through
the storm of heat and smoke he made
his way through unburned fields to the
breach to the edge of the flames which
was along this front nearly two miles
in extent.

Simon Segree said:

"Tell Captain Ball that I dont know
what to do. Several of my platoons are
overcome by exertion, thirst and heat,
and two more are scorched and
a platoon overcome by smoke. Several
more are driven back and we are all
hard pressed. We are doing the
best we can."

Yet a thought had suddenly 2496.
come to me and riding up to 2492
Roguet I asked him for three or
four officers."

"What on earth do you want them for?"
he exclaimed.

"Never mind give them to me at once."
Receiving the officials I rode with them
beyond the fire line as we rode towards
Simon Segrees line of desperate battle
we could see but how hardly matters
were going with him in spite of that
I joined my men into the fracas. One
of his ranks was knocked down by
the fierce heat and fled. His lines
were shattered and torn and several of
his officers were led away burned.

And still the fire continued unabated
still they fought on but it was clear
that Simon Segrees army could not much
longer resist.

"Do you think his men must
soon retreat?" Roguet who followed me
asked.

"I'm afraid so" I said. Men, flesh
and blood, human and human subjugent
condition constitution cant stand such a
heat as that much longer. I ordered
him to fall back but he has
not done it yet. Most Captains
would have drew back long before this

2448 and even Simon Segres can't stand out much longer. If he continues too long against that inferno he won't have a man alive to fight the fire. "Will you do as I order?" I asked. "Yes sir." Roguet said in surprise. "I will do what you like, for the story of my conduct by which I overcame the other two local fires had been repeated through the lines and the men and officers were all proud of one who had defeated two local fires so pluckily."

"At least" I said "it may do good and it can't do harm. Where the official order sheets will place an order, how to a brigade fighting near the coolest edge of the smudge."

Roguet gave an exclamation of surprise but did as I told him and we rode for that section.

As we were seen to do so, more followed us, seeing the fight between Simon Segres and the inferno continued with unabated vigor.

"The fool" I thought to myself. "And I advised him to fall back. He'll get the same Ruggado did, if he gets too reckless. That fire won't be whipped."

We came where a great number working men were fighting to prevent

the smoulder from spreading. 2499. spreading? was at once conducted to their commander. "I have come sir" I said to beg of you to come and reinforce Simon Segres. Your work here has been nobly done to a completion, but I need two more brigades to come to Segres assistance, and we would fain save further effusion of smoke over come and the like. The fire is giving Segres hottest resistance.

You have done all that brave men could do here, but we need your help there, for the fight along Segres front everywhere you go against him and if no help comes further resistance will be in vain. In half an hour more the fire will be centered up him and force him to turn on face annihilation and therefore I beg you to spare your men to his rapid assistance."

Taken by surprise by this sudden demand which was fortunately at the moment backed up by the testimony of my officers and by another officer of ~~an~~ two brigades which had hitherto taken no part in the action being marched in, the leader resolved to ~~help~~ help right away and two minutes afterwards the three columns were on

2500 The astonishment of Rogant
at seeing the course of the men
altered and the three brigades of
the men proceeding direct for Segres.
Segres had pressed men had been
extreme and he could only suppose
that their leaders had received some orders
direct from me and that a general severe
hostilities was ordered against Segres fire
enemy.

His surprise became astonishment
when following me till near there three
columns swarmed up to Segres one
had men, and flung themselves madly
into the conflict. A shout of relief and
exultation ~~echoed~~ echoed from all along
the line, for all had felt that the
conflict was hopeless and that in a
few minutes Segres would have to
retreat just as madly I threw all
the men I had into the mad attack.
I too was almost fighting with the
same daredevil recklessness Ruygado did,
and almost paid for it. But slowly
the fire was yielding at last it
seemed to.

All sorts of conjectures were afloat
as to the sudden and unexpected conver-
sation to old Segres and ex-
pectation was at its highest when the
columns of reinforcement was seen

making an attack the fury 2501
of which was never seen before.
Captain Ball rode up to me and
his officer in his compliance
with your request came up with another
brigade of men. What are your orders for
him?

The officer advanced saying:
"In the name of Heaven I will try
to whip this fire. What is your com-
mand?"

My astonishment was unbounded when
Captain Ball informed me what had been
done.

"I saw" he said "that Segres' troops
was thrown back by heat, frustration
and smoke, overexhaustion and many
wounded, and this officer told me that
it was impossible he could much
longer resist. I therefore thought that
I could do no harm by calling
upon my men also to help Segres
and that it was possible that my
attack may succeed as you see I
have a very large force and fresh
and strongly equipped."

"I hoped we certainly have saved
Mr. Segres from disaster" Captain Ball
said warmly to me "and now we are all
indeed indebted to you. It was a piece
of astounding daredevil recklessness on
your side which you forbade us to do

2401 to push too close into the
fire surge but convey a message
with which was necessary but
hoped for success in the present
case a thousand times condones the reckless
attacks. "If you don't set the example how
do you expect us to?"

"You 'you' have indeed done well Captain
Sangley and we are vastly indebted to
you but I forgot myself that time and
nearly got what Ruggedo did. He was so
reckless because he lost his temper be-
cause the inferno was defeating him I
warned him but to no avail."

"Hundreds, and hundreds, and hundreds
of men speedily took their places in
the ranks. One we knew as Lieutenant
Francis Francis Smith was sent forward
to join in the hot fray and in a
few minutes they too were hurrying
forward."

Ordering Mr Sangley to accompany
him Captain Ball at once
took his place and moved forward
to the assault. The fire however was
still resisting most desperately, the
battle was still raging fiercer than
ever and to the practiced eye there
was no doubt that Segren line
of battle was suffering more, much
more severely than before.

Captain Ball rushed the 2402
attack with all the fury his men
could assume and saluting Segren
reported that now he was heavily
reinforced but that the line of men
under Paul Marcus and Donald Ainsand
had fallen back because of the heat
exhaustion and smoke many had
suffered burns more or less, and were
smoke blinded, and also Jack Marcus
being hard pressed was unable
to render any assistance to the general
attack.

"O good many of us leaders are hard
pressed" I said myself "but I congratulate
congratulate you on having held your
ground and still holding it. This is
a big local fire but I burn fiercer
and most worse than the main most
biggest one did. There were no one
killed or burned or overcome like in
this one. There is something fishy
about this - Several more brigades have
fallen back with severe casualties,
and we cannot press no counter
assault, or make a counter fire,
and a fresh wall of fire is threaten-
ing the breach. Our position is a
most unpleasant one. Hyde Parker
has signaled even me to draw off
but I so far have paid no attention.
I fear that we shall have to

2403 haul off and leave everything to the fire" the fact is" Captain Ball said "you got all the reinforcements against it now have int. you? How on earth cant they stop it?"

"Well when you told us sir that at first you could give Simon Segree no aid, you yet took upon your self, to withdraw there cutting down the wheat near the less hotter section of the smoulders instead of returning to the enemys flank.

You went and summoned the commanders to move to Segrees relief at once, so as to save further effusion of lives by heat smoke and so on, seeing that more stretches of flames were bearing down and that you had done all a brave man could, and should now think of the relief of Segrees troops."

"I did not" I exclaimed. I summoned reserves that were out of action. I cant remove those you mentioned till their work is accomplished. But this conflagration beats everything. However my idea was an excellent one and by Heaven: I will adopt something like it again. A man should never be so above learning and we are in a sore strait that one catches at a straw. I know that this is

only a big local fire but I never seen the general fire heap as bad as this" 2404

"So saying I calling to Bogust at once indicted a little to John Stevens begging him who was on reserve to come to Segrees assistance in order to save him from Ruggedon fate, expressing admiration at the way he had fought before and saying that Segree was doing all that was possible with me and my reserves aiding him, and asking Stevens to come to our help with a full consciousness of doing his duty. His local fire is worse than the general conflagration was"

The massive was at once dispatched to John Stevens, and I awaited with anxiety its result.

A half hour elapsed the fire went on with unabated appalling fury.

"By Heaven Ball" I suddenly exclaimed. See Stevens force in coming and fast"

And a tremendous cheer broke along the whole of the fighting men as Kaliko dangerous to the fires was with him, with his own men and also Greenes.

At this time the fire showed signs of increasing. Kaliko insisted that his men should envelope the fire enemys left flank in no firm

2805 and decisive a tone as to convince me that he believed he had it in his power to destroy the whole fire at length to the intense relief of me and my chief officials who knew how sore the strait was and to the delight of Segreco men. Kaliko went furiously to the assault. Stevens and the others joined.

"Where Harry Sangley?" I asked.

Harry Sangley was unfortunately no long in the wheat battle field. His two legs all the way up to the hip were badly burned and his right arm too. He had at once been carried to the rear hospital tent and was attended by the doctors of the field.

In the excitement of an action men take little heed of what is happening around them and the burning of Mr Sangley was then unnoticed by me.

Now however I looked around for him and was filled with sorrow upon hearing what had happened. I could not leave my post of duty just then to see him. When I heard he was in too serious a condition to have visitors, Ruggado, now Sangley, I felt that fire was too dangerous to fight and had a mind to call it off.

yet with John Manley re-
clearing me for a few minutes. I had a chance to go and visit. Ruggado I found him in suffering. "What does the doctor think of him?" I asked the nurse who was sitting by Ruggado's bed.

"He did not say much the nurse replied, 'He shook his head and said he has a very serious arm burn and scalded head and face, and he could not answer for how long he'll be laid up. There was nothing to do but be patient, to keep his head and face bandaged with wet cloths and to give him water from time to time and wholesome food. Don't be afraid now. The doctor won't let no one visit him yet but we will watch over him carefully'."

"I would stay if I could" I said but I've got to be at the fighting front. I have the terrible news also of Sangley being burned and worse than he is."

"I know" she said. "He is here too but the doctors won't let any one see him. The poor fellow is awfully burned and the doctors cannot answer either for his life or life long disfigurement. His burns are terrible."

2407 To go into details of the great fight by Kaliko men would both be impossible and apart from my purpose in writing this description of the greatest country field fire on record. Suffice it then that the attack on the fire by both Stevens and Kaliko was begun between nine thirty and ten in the morning against the flames at a spot called Stony passage way, where Simon Segree had left the fight going between six and seven.

By this time Segree's men were worn out but the arrival of a large body of troops under Carter Green put new life into them and they had attacked the fire with such increased vigor that nothing could stand before them until the fire had counter attacked and caused Segree's men to fall back as previously mentioned and turning the fire much fiercer than it was the retreat degenerated into what was practically a panic.

Rescued by rallying them prevented what had happened to Ruggles. At this section you could see the glitter of two brass cannon. Then the cannons boomed forth and a mass of fire extinguishers came tearing

2408 tearing through the burning fields of wheat. They exploded but had little effect. Forward again boys cried Stevens. We must overcome those flames. Away they went out of the unburned portion to confront that deadly fire again. The men were ordered to close up. The smoke now became thicker and in the midst of this the brass cannon spoke again, the extinguishers went first up and then down but did no damage.

The fire was too hot for them. With a wild yell the men bore down upon their red enemy. The brass cannon being now in the path of the flames had been hauled away and the open field became the ground for a fierce conflict at close quarters.

The battery was one from Exeter town and retreated from its first position only to take a second half way up the side of a slight rise of ground upon which was thicker wheat than ever.

It was soon around the vicinity of this wheat field that the main onslaught was to occur.

The forces under John Starnely also consisted of some three thousand men, wet gunny sakers, and a number of scythe bickle and broadsword companies and a bucket brigade. It was a regiment

2509 also from Ottawa that assaulted at this spot and they fought bravely along a road through the burning fields and they faced a fierce resistance by the flames which nearly demoralized the men called the Montgomery Grays.

"Forward! Forward!" cried Kaliko again and again but when Captain Andy and his men attempted to move on they found they were literally unging themselves against a wall of flame that bore a fierce heat that flesh and blood could not withstand.

The next moment other men pushed on behind and then there was nothing to do but go on cutting a path right and left as the Montgomery Grays advanced. Yet when these men had thus hewn a path for itself along the turnpike through the field for a distance of several hundred feet the fire threatened their right rear and flank and they found the advantage a doubtful one.

From that section raged a new branch of the fire hotter than ever and the fire was so deadly hot from these flames, that the Montgomery Gray was forced forward forced to move rapidly towards another part of the fighting line

dragging the cannon with 2510 them. I shouted to Kaliko:

"I know how things are, but don't do anything rash. I don't want you to end up like Ruggado and Tangleby did."

As they were ploughing on in the smoke and parching heat a volley of hands whistled around them and one badly reached Captain Ball on the left leg leaving a stinging burning pain behind it.

"Dad it burn your leg Captain Ball" cried Senoy Wellington who rode up to him. "What a fire!"

"Yes in my left leg but I reckon its not much" was Captain Ball's reply as he brushed the perspiration and smoke from his face with a cloth. "Pshaw but this is more than work. Its like having a hot job in hell, and the devils the main big boss."

"Never mind we'll have it licked" returned Senoy "and the old devil too!"

"I don't know until its all over Senoy." To try to gain a new position the Montgomery Grays had to cross another open space probably three hundred feet in size a clearing well threatened by fire and well covered

by the batteries of seven cannon.
2571 "Forward and lose no time" cried
Stevens and led the way followed
almost immediately by "Kallik men",
with the cutters in the number they
had covered scarcely a quarter of the distance
when he had to edge away because of
the heat.

Another detachment was ordered against
the inferno below the left. Another regi-
ment was about to fall back who had
been holding the defense but matters
were getting too hot for them, some
one yelled "Forward boys and show the
red plague what our Grays can do, Hurrah
for the Montgomery Grays" and away went
the troop of men flinging all the
cut up field behind them, in two
minutes more they were again in the
thick of the fray.

"Carter Green is coming" I heard some
one ejaculate "Let show this fire
what sort of stuff we're made of.
Now we have this ground let us
hold it"

"Remember Ruggero and Langley" I
shouted, "No dare devil recklessness please
I pray"

After shouting this warning I
discovered that a fresh body of men
had come up to reinforce Segre

2512
who were now all but
exhausted to a man. The Grays
were ordered to charge the fire field
where the flames were still hold-
ing the defense, and away they dashed
with two other companies behind them.
The line bravely met this charge. This
did not last more than five five
minutes when the Grays were seen to
part to let through a battery of two
cannon both twelve pounders.

As quickly as possible the battery was
placed in position the rear guard of the
blazers meanwhile manning the
pieces.

Then away went the Grays to the
right and left and the order was given
to the Grays to push on. The order came
none too soon for when the cannons
blazed forth the aim of the gunners
were found so correct that the ex-
tonguishers landed perfectly. The fire
defied them. Another battery remained
where it was for over an hour, but its
fire was ineffective also.

The line of battle had originally
been two miles long but now it was
so broken and disorganized that the
fighting became general upon all sides,
although the heaviest attacks were
still made in the vicinity of

3514 the Point Pebble road ~~let~~
before mentioned. The exhaust
ion facing the hot flames was
terrible and many of the fighters
had not had time to eat a mouthful
since early morning and they now ran
around begging for a mouthful of some-
thing with which to brace themselves
up. It was their first awakening to
the stern reality of grim fire fighting
and heavy test. Yet the fighters were
fighting bravely to the last real
ying. That the eyes of the whole world
were upon them in this critical deadly
conflict.

They were fighting to overcome this
fire at all costs. To them the horrors
of the inferno was as appalling as
they could well be, but they had stealed
their hearts for the inevitable and
they went on to live or die in the
determination to whip this fire.

There and there only were the
true heroes of the great fire war
war and there were no dividing
line and there never could be to
reparate them.

The booming of cannons, and
the exploding of fire extinguishers
still went on, as the men gath-
ered together and snatched a hasty

last biscuit and a drink 2515-
of water. Each man was begrimed
with sweat, smoke and grain dust
and each was more than half
exhausted, from his exertion, heat and
smoke.

"Oh but ain't this simply dreadful!"
moaned a man badly scorched on the
knee. Captain Spalding is also burned.
And Hornsby is burned on his left fore-
arm. The Chemical bombs don't keep the
fires too much for them."

Boquat now seeing that the tide of
battle was turning against his troops
sought by every means in his power
to recuperate his forces. But when several
severe attacks had been led forward with
out avail it was determined to fall
back in the hope of taking a fresh
stand in a new location.

In the meantime however the men under
John Dranlon which had whipped the north
wing of the fire had come up and these
men added by a fresh troop had
suddenly appeared on the field and with
the rush like some black men
they went at the fire in an assault
which it was impossible in the
mixed up conditions of affairs to stay

John Dranlon has come up with
two thousand men. We must rally.

2516 was the cry of Roquato men and which was taken up from company to company. I saw more than that number of men which made a good showing and was a relief to Roquato harried men who utterly worn with fighting, facing heat and smoke. Had Roquato been forced to retreat the blow would have been a little one, and now was no time to think about it.

Yet Roquato though rallying his men tried to preserve order, but this was impossible for men were rushing hither and thither anxious to see who first gets at the horrid fire. Some showed and courage.

Yet a scene of indescribable confusion met my gaze as I rode up. Men of all kinds with all sorts of fighting equipment were rushing along all soaking wet, with fire proof head wear having thrown all precautions to the winds in their anxiety to fight the inferno. Cannon after cannon followed the drivers of the horses beating their animals mercilessly in their great endeavor to get into position to shoot chemicals into the fire and mixed up with these were the provision tumbrils,

and 6000 occasionally the carriage 2517 of some politician member of the club of So. Dace whose curiosity had brought him hither from So. Dace to see how this fight with the Gehennal hell would end. I will say this, no matter who the sightseer was, even like him found them selves barred from the Territory, or forced to join us. It was yet far from being a humiliating spectacle for all were awakened to the true state of affairs and the fire was receiving an attack that it had never met before though its resistance was equally as strong.

We never seen anything like it. Center ville grain field fire was overthrown, but one narrow path became blocked up in front. Several miles were covered with reething flames here. Presently half a dozen foremen and their aids came dashing from one side to another.

"Face about boys. The fire will whip us yet. Face about and retreat Face about!"

The cry not too well meant was absolutely useless.

The soldiers though exhausted and having been on their feet since the third fire began were not exactly overcome from exertions and refused to fall back over though thrown in hopeless confusion of

25-18 fighting other foremen had
called their companies, captains and
Sergeants and received more men.
All knew what ^{was} against flames
and organization meant.

Finding the men refusing to give
up or retreat their foremen allowed them
to continue the fight, and at the same
time sent Henry's brigade to cover them
against any flanking movement the fire
would make. Yet the foremen said:

"If anything goes wrong we are not re-
sponsible. Remember what happened
to Sangley and Ruggedo."

Yet of Simon Seligree's troop a great mo-
jesty of them worn out, heart sick and
hungry enough to eat almost anything
had to be withdrawn and hastily re-
placed.

They devoured what ever they could
receive from the chuck wagons. Such is
an actual picture of those hours of awful
gloom when the fate of this part country
ride hung in the balance yet for all
those temporarily natural hot coffee
and sandwiche especially corned beef
could be had for the asking or stew or
what what ever the chuck wagons
had. Yet the restorance of the fire
had been decidedly very depressing.

Many of the men however

25 19
knew imagined that the end
of the conflict with the fire was
now close at hand and that it would
not be long before the fire would
be overcome. But these men were sadly
mistaken the fire was far from being
overcome and the conflagration instead
of being nearly ended had but only
begun.

And I knew it. Yet at La Salle the
call for additional men was commenced
through the small city and from Rockland
Quincy and Burlington without my know-
ing of it. That's why at this time of the
mourning ten full regiments of fire
fighters arrived to my help and Seligree
had been greatly reinforced. This made
me hopeful.

This time it was my purpose to
strike all along the line at the same
time thus giving the conflagration no
opportunity to rally from one point to
another. The enemy was to be
attacked not only in the front but
also on the left and right wing
and along the left and right flank
and the rear.

Had this plan been executed with-
out delay it was possible the
fire war would have been of short
duration. But the fire frustrated this
plan.

2520 Delay after day occurred because
of the fire's intensity and mean
while battle after battle took place
elsewhere along the inferno front.
at last after numerous changes it had been
decided between me and Ruggedo now
laid up that all the men should be
hurled at once against the extreme point
of the blaze, formed by the junctions
of the fields and then push on and lay
siege to the left wing if the fire could
not be taken in another way.

It was argued that as the line of fire
was less than four miles the troops
being perfectly fresh ought to be able
to make a steady assault forward in
which case the fire might be over-
come with but little trouble.

Yet it was on this sanguinary assault
that Ruggedo men were routed and
he seriously burned, yet now I do
not know where they came from great
crowds of women old men, and children
came down to see us all bringing
with them all kinds of dainties in
the shape of chickens all other sorts
types of meat, vegetable soup, jam
hoe cakes and the like. Also
the able bodied men among them
offered to lend a hand and did so.

The head of my column then moved

off. First came the advance 2521
guard, then then those with the
wheat, slashers, scythes, sickles and the
like, men also with heavy axes and
broad swords to clear the way then a detach-
ment of bucket men, and then the regular
gunny sack troops. After the troops came
the chemical artillery and the chuck wagon
train covered by a band of horsemen
and by a small battery.

On each side of this long column of
fire fighters moved a line of skirmishers
armed with gunny sack and hand throwing
fire extinguishers, corn chemical bombs
keeping to from two to five hundred
feet from the road through the fields,
to prevent any possible surprise
by the conflagration right or left although
just then no surprise was really and
truly not expected.

Three days ration had been reserved out
to be eaten from the knapsack now
supplied them. It looked more than a
war army on the move than fire fighters.

Having found the fire enemy still
more strongly entrenched among the
fiercely burning fields, I determined to
lay siege to the conflagration, and
in the meantime endeavor to send more
troops to Sterren and Kasko so that
when the early morning frost time arrived

2522 7 could make a grand general assault all along the line drive the inferno from its position and also perhaps scatter it and thus open an easy way to its main fiery heart.

It was thought that the great battle of the fiery field would be fought here but affairs proved otherwise.

7 ordered Teddy to "feel" the fire enemy at Stoney road which ran through the burning fields and was directly opposite to the reserve line of the fire.

Teddy made the attack aided by the battery shooting the extinguishers but they met a severe part of the fire.

Some more artillery that had gone on ahead was having a fearful time with horses up to their shoulders in the wheat, cannons nearly out of sight and teamsters frantic, yelling cursing whipping and then slaying where they were in dumb despair, until extra horses came up to pull all out of the wheat rut.

Reddy's men with the gallant Carter Greens brigade in advance attacked the fire first a charge being ordered but the unburned fields which the fire fighters sought to force their way was so thick and tough but little progress could be made.

7 in the meantime large reinforcements of the remaining men arrived at the following quarter of an hour the main battle was on, yet the heat was so fierce men could scarcely face it or stand upon their feet as they fought their way forward while only one battery in three could move at a time through the unburned wheat so many extra horses being required for each piece.

Land my men were forcing our way through a thick field of alfalfa and barley but then we came upon a small clearing. Coming along was our battery backed up by one or two wheat cutters and slasher regiments and a troop of gunnyackers.

Boys we must halt that fire" cried Teddy as he galloped along the line. "Forward now but keep the line stretched out don't close up on the fire and whip you"

Scarcely had the order been given than the battery in question blazed forth, the fire extinguishers flying high, exploding in the fiery fields as they fell, were clipping a good strip of wheat off cleaner than it would have been cut by a monstrous scythe.

The fire was slightly diminished, then the men moved forward. It was a strange thrilling sight as that

2524 long wave of fire fighters
still came on. nearer and nearer
they swept defying heat and all
the smoke, and now the battle cry
rang out growing louder and louder
a strong determined cry from men who
meant to do or die.

Again the battery belched forth and
now the aim was true and half a
score of gaps were torn in the blazing
wheat, but the fire closed up the gaps,
and burned hotter, as the men
continued to move forward on the
double quick.

Fearful of a counter assault by the
fire, the battery now ceased its fire
and allowed the men to pass on.

Their attack along this front was a real
resolute one and for the moment it
looked as if this section of the inferno
would be annihilated. but the fire
regained its composure and began to push
on itself into an earnest fire and
slowly the men were driven back
only however to make place for
the long line of gunny sacks,
"Forward again" shouted Teddy O'rowke
and again they went on.

The ~~flurry~~ and heat of the fire was
incessant and sparks rose and scattered
in every direction. The smoke of the

fire added to the heat and clouds 2525
of sparks was speedily cutting off
the view upon all sides, and the
battery was no longer in view. It
had been removed to a safer position.

Teddy's charge was the fiercest of all
and Teddy was almost taken off his feet
by the rush. He was caught between
half a dozen struggling men and tried in
vain to get out of the scrimmage.

He could scarcely stand and went
down on both knees while a man
pitched over him, on his own
back.

But both were up in a jiffy before
the fire caught up with them. Taken as
a whole this battle was rather a
mixed up affair although a stubbornly
fought contest. All of the men upon
advancing upon Stony road did not cross
through the unburned fields. It was im-
possible because of the thickness of the
wheat. Many of them took to the
grain field which was less thick
and following this, moved across to
battle the fire beyond a territory
of considerable importance to them
and returned it here. Yet through
confusion of orders every officer
fought as he thought best.
At the main field Kaliko's men aided

by a few other troops and
the impetuous Jim Scanton
also coming to his aid when he
was almost exhausted made a
glorious dash but could not break
through. While this was going on it was
reported that another spot along the wall
of leaping flames seemed to have now
weakened.

Jim with his own and additional troops
were sent forward to cross stony path-
way or road and secure the fire on the
other side. With Jim was a Lieutenant
Seaflet. There was nothing but the
same narrow stony path way through
the fields, but Seaflet led his men
across this in the face of the galling
fire but both he and the fire held
their own. A hard fight was raging
two foremen and many other men
were scorched and singed or burned,
a smoke blinded. At first it looked
as Foreman or Chief Foreman Clyde would
be trapped, but at last they escaped,
and were forced to withdraw to a
distance.

So Teddy some one shouted.
"Look out, drop." Teddy tried to obey
but before he could do so a strange
bellowing roar sounded just ahead
a big cloud rose rolling high into

the air something rushed 25-8
directly past his face and 25-27
he felt his breath leave his
body. He tried to get back his
wind, but it seemed impossible and
off he dashed wildly towards me like
one chocking as I could see. I grabbed
him made him lay down and sent a
man for a doctor post haste.

Afterward Teddy as he told me as
he lay there his mind had been a
total blank. He said he could not get
his breath, everything was black be-
fore his eyes and he felt as though the
end of the world had come so far as
he was concerned.

He said:
"I felt as if I was going down to the
bottom of a tank of water and there
I lay not unconscious but unable
to move, unable to think with a
loud roaring in my ears a flashing
light before my eyes and a pain in
my lungs which I cannot describe
to save my life I wonder what
happened to me?"

His answer is very simple. I
said, "Some round large object
was hurled towards you by the
explosion, it had rushed close past
your mouth just at the very second of

2528 of time when your lungs were
heaving out air. The vacuum
thus caused had drawn forth more
air than was healthful - in other
words had collapsed the your breathing
apparatus and left you almost pres-
enceless.

Good thing the doctor knew what to
do or you would have died."

If my readers wants something
of the sensation Teddy O'neal ex-
perienced, let him blow out all
his breath or all the breath he can
from his lungs and then stand
without air for half a minute or
more - if they can.

"Slowly and painfully I came to
a realization of my condition as the
doctor worked on me. My head is
still aching me as it had never
ached before in my life and
though it is sickening now there
still is a pain like that of a
cutting knif knife in my chest
every time I draw my breath.
After the doctor was through I tried
to sit up, but the effort was
a failure. I knew I was not hit
by a fire chemical extinguisher
or shot by anything and yet what
a queer sensation that was when

came that explosion, I 2529
do believe it took away my wind as
you say, Henry and that's all. What
was it?"

"I saw where it landed" I exclaimed
producing it to this large square shaped
stone. I believe it weighs ten pounds. I
am lucky it missed your head."

"I'd have been killed, I was some
time before I felt strong enough to
stand up and even then I am still
decidedly shaky."

Slowly and painfully I lumped to
the shelter of a tree.

"While the doctor was taking care of
you I had seen six men lying on
the ground. All were badly wounded
by the explosion, and were huddled
together in their misery. I had them
shipped away to the Esterbrook hos-
pital. I thought you would have to
go too. "You're on no condition to go
back into the fight. Carter took your
place."

"That damn explosion almost threw
a cloud of smoke and flame into
your face ringing it" I said. "It
also threw the burning brands in all
directions around us, but fortunately
failed failed to start a new fire although
one large brand landed directly at my feet"

2530 already the fighting lines were stretched about four miles along this dangerous fire front. It was an imposing sight, there were line after line of cannon and fire extinguisher wagons, a vast collection of flat wagons, chuck wagons, and thousand upon thousand of horses, while the wet clothed men filled every field and crossway. One person said "I never saw so much fire in all my life"

Back near the roadbed loomed up medical supply wagon and everything was alive but long and chuck full of business. It was a scene worthy of the greatest painter in the world. If this great and superb army could not conquer this big local fire it would be only because they met, not a field fire, but a fire of supernatural nature or order.

"Then" I said "If we can't forge ahead soon we'll need to try another counter fire. The only trouble ahead is that this confounded smoulder that started this big local fire may increase instead of dying out and drive us all out of the territory Creation but I never saw such a

conflagration in all my life. 2531 Why since it first started that evening it has never yet been whipped. The smoulder is worse and more dangerous than the flaming fire."

And I was right about the fire. Perhaps my readers may grow tired of my lengthy description of this disaster and concerning the unavailing fighting of the fire but they are necessary in order to explain why it was the army had hardly gained at all, or moved so slowly and why the main attack was delayed.

If you don't believe a wheat fire throws killing heat try to face one. I had faced three of them. All the men have declared over and over again that they never saw or heard of a fire fight like this in which so much fire, heat and smoke played such a large and important part and even many newspaper afterwards usually supposed to be the best of communications spoke of this.

In many sections breeches had been made and cannon hurling extinguishers but the fire actually defied them all.

2532. I was in order to learn how close the fire was and what its actual movement was ordered three hundred men to the what was called the Drainsburg grain field. This done others were ordered to the stone road where it widened out.

The fire made a severe counter demonstration with its galling parching heat with the result that these men were caught in its path to the number of nearly two thousand one half of whom were either scorched blinded by smoke or even wounded. It happened at the time that the fighting was at its highest pitch. For Colonel John Baker of these men was making a desperate endeavor to retreat to Drainsburg wheat field, and yet the flames advancing forward were pouring or hurling their deadly heat with fearful effect.

By this time this part of the battle was drawing to disaster. The gallant John Baker had been prostrated and killed by the terrible deadly heat and this added to the fury of the galling fire threw the men into confusion.

With fearful loss in prostration

from heat, blinded by smoke 2533 scorched and burned or scalded from their wet clothing they came tearing down the uneven stone road leading to the unburned fields. The fire followed close up and many more were scorched or burned before they could get out of reach of the parching heat. It was the worst defeat of the fighters yet.

The turn of the tide of this part of the took my attention. I asked Poquat:

"I think it is safe to counter fire now" "No he said" shaking his head "The fire from the formation of the conflagration would defy it."

The fire now was worse than had been expected and something fearful to contemplate. The fire was doing more harm by its heat and smoke than anything else. As previously mentioned because of the fire's adamant resistance I found the situation in a truly deplorable condition.

Mainly because of the thick growth of the wheat we could not put cannon in proper position to be within right easy right range and those which were could make no effect upon the prodigious fire.

Added to these facts was the still more important one that officers and

22 men were alike getting fearful of the fire not that I'm boasting or proud but what ^{else} may be said of me and my fellows for the absolute slow leadership in this immense fight the fact must forever remain that I was one of the best fire fighting organizers this country or any other ever did produce. This can be proven later when you'll know I whipped this galeater of a fire when it seemed impossible to do so.

At first the death of Baker by fire heat and the disgraceful defeat and decimation of his men did discourage me. The main big conflagration that we counter-fired never caused even the slightest harm to any one. Pogueat said to me

"What a horrid fire" as his eyes swept a wide range of seething smoke and flame. "Is this what we have come to conquer? It seems impossible."

Regiments of freshly ^{arrived} fire fighting men and divisions of artillery were every where as far as eye could reach covering not only the roadway but the unburning fields beyond.

All of these new men were in heavy marching order that is carrying with them every thing

every thing that belonged to every fire fighter his scythe, rickie, broadsword grain slasher and every thing you can think of added by the gunnysack men and the bucket brigades. 2335

To go into details of this unusual fire battle great and important as it was would be beyond the scope of this tale. The battle against the fire was fought across the fields right and left.

In the meantime I had become afraid that another part of the conflagration would move upon Stevens.

So I had called upon John Manley who had been confronting the fire near a narrow crossroads and was assured that John Manley would keep that part of the inferno, where it was - and by hand sawge fighting he did.

If it had gotten the best of John Manley it would have been a great blow to me. Had it done so it was certain that all of my fighters would have been in far more danger of being beaten than they were.

So assured that Manley could hold the fire along his front in check and having reinforcements of

2536 my own I resolved to force the fighting instead of holding ground as before. I knew that the left and left and right wings of the conflagration were divided by the stony road and I chose for the conflict a time when the flames were temporarily halted by the long breaches.

We made the assault, one of the worst yet ever experienced, and the flames already much more fiercer than usual, became a most flaming horror, which burned away scores of acres, and put just then a general assault out of the question.

In facing this fearful storm of fire my troops were brought forward to confront the fire as soon as possible I feeling assured that I could defeat one section of the inferno before the other could come to the rebel relief.

This real battle had been in progress for about an hour when there came a sudden panic brought on by the retreat of a portion of a division which had been almost cut in two by the rapid attack of a great mass of flames.

"The fire is giving forth too much

heat. We'll have to fall back" was the cry which made my heart leap into my throat, was Ruggado disaster to be repeated?

"Halt men. About face" came the command, "Don't be cowards. We can whip it yet." And a fresh division was advanced and those who were retreating took heart how Captain Gosweller's sacker were going to the front.

Along the stony road they went. The heat they faced was fearful. But many of them dropped to their knees and a part of the deadly heat spent itself over their heads.

Then a field battery situated to the right opened its thunder with fire extinguishers.

"Forward" came down the line again and on the men went for twenty yards more. Constantly reinforced they pushed on while their battery spoke out more resolutely than ever.

Slowly the fire was forced back foot by foot but the thick smoke for a time hid all from view. A desperate attempt was made to increase the speed of its retreat.

A whole double line advancing upon

2538 It in one long solid mass, the battery belched forth the exploding extinguishers tearing great holes in the burning fields, but these were closed up and the fire still held its own, and hotter than ever.

The shock was fearful and Jim Scanlon received a severe burn on his left arm. Again the fire showed signs of receding. Jim went to get his burn dressed. The men attacked the fire as never before. Down went many a poor exhausted man on his back to a forced rest.

In the meantime John Manley was fighting as he had never fought before. The din of the cannons was something fearful while the smoke of the fire became so thick ~~when~~ that when held down to the ground by the heavy atmosphere it newly ~~choked~~ choked everybody.

Yet forward they went at Foreman Spaulding's command. A hollow without wheat had been covered in the face of the fierces fierces heat and clouds of smoke and they were ascending the other side of the hollow when higher and hotter flames appeared not only in front but also to the right and

left.
"Forward boys we must cut our way out" came the cry as the flames rushed around the hollow and Spaulding's men appeared almost surrounded. The men had used their scythes sickles and other cutting tools twice and those with the gimmy backs had fought with might and main.

There was no time for the last mentioned to use their wet sacks again and on they went, ~~holding~~ holding the wet sack to their breasts and the line of cutting equipment swishing every where, sending a brief chill to the hearts of those before them.

But the terrific fire stood firm and the heat over came many when that line of assault was scarcely one hundred and fifty feet away.

Foreman Hark Louis felt a stinging pain in both his arms. Louis Callingo who was fighting along side of him was hit by a tongue of flame and went down on the battle field with a groan which rang in my ears for many hours after wards. And I had warned every officer against dare devil recklessness. In another second two sections of the fire came together

to form into one. but another
25 90 section of the fire apparently
retreated as if to cut off the
spaulding men from the main body
of the fighting army. In this the inferno
was partly successful for the one
regiment which had gone forward with
dense dense recklessness was not pro-
parly reinforced.

The fighting went on in very
much disorder and a portion of Spaul-
ding volunteers found themselves
isolated from the rest of the command.

I noticed with a sinking heart
how thickly the fire and flames were
massed, and I firmly believed if we
had that many tens of thousands of
men couldn't check them.

Yet against Spaulding's fire enemy
I hurled more than a thousand fresh men
and the attack was renewed with increased
vigor. John Manley leading the attack
at one section and Jim Johnson at another.

The charge was bravely met by the
conflagration and it threw such a savage
heat, and dense clouds of smoke
and hurricanes of sparks, and fire
whirl winds, that at last the
brave men could not hold out
a face it any longer, despite the
simultaneous attack of the whole

line and the fire was gain. 25 41
ing the advantage. It was too hot to
face. During this contest, Spaulding
was first seriously burned on the
arm, and knocked by a tree branch off
his horse when a large burning oak
tree in the field was split in twain and
tumbled over carrying three other
men down beneath it.

All were badly wounded. This sight
made me more downhearted than ever,
especially after the other men got them
free. We could do but little for any
of the trio.

One of the men asked to be prop-
ed against the fallen tree, the part
not burning and I made him as
comfortable as possible. The other sim-
ply glared wickedly and wild at the
fire.

"Don't let any more of the fire
touch me" he growled. "These damn
fire bugs are responsible for this -
may the old Nick himself burn
them all" and he turned his
back and smoke blackened face
away, that I might not see all he
was suffering.

"If you'll please bind my head"
cried the other victim, "a searing flame
burned me badly when the tree fell."

2592 I bound his head up with a band aids bandage & and the man said it was a great relief.

"If I can find any help I'll get you and Spaulding to the hospital," said as I moved away. "I'm suffering myself but I'm not half as badly off as you three are. But why did all you men be so dare devil reckless?"

I had scarcely spoken when six men with stretchers burst into view from a wheat field.

The tree men and Spaulding were carried to the waiting ambulance and taken for the hospital. Others were scathed or wounded on the other side of the tree and never were the true horror of the fire fight brought closer to my heart. The scenes were pitiable beyond description and my eyes refused to keep dry.

I just found one of the raggy clothes men terribly burned on his right thigh and was looking around for a stretcher when a groan almost at my feet made me turn.

There in some ~~back~~ brush rested a fireman badly burned on the shoulder.

"Give me a drink for the love

mine, give me a drink please" 2593 came the murmur and having my canteen handy I poured forth the desired water and held the cup to the sufferers lips.

"Thank you Sir" came in a short gasp. "Now you've been so kind won't you prop me against this tree trunk. I can't stand it down here on this hot dust."

"Certainly I'll prop you up" I answered and lifted the wounded man as carefully as I could just as some fellows came with a stretcher to take him to the hospital tent. No more could be said and soon the man was carried off and some moments later the others followed.

These men had had been with those who made three terrific charges. Even though the fighters attacked along the whole line as previously described they could not face the terrific heat of the fire and slowly but surely the fighting men were driven back and these five men and Spaulding got caught under that falling tree and hurt and burned. While this terrific but losing fight was going on the other part of the vast army of fire fighters moved.

25-95 forward from a quarter to three
quarters of a mile. The army of
fire fighters was divided into five
corps three upon the stony side
road and two upon the other side one
of the latter afterwards crossing to join
the other three. Even earth entrenchments
were thrown up in hopes of stopping
the fire and the line of fighters
were now four miles long with guards
at either end reaching out still
farther.

But if the entrenchments of this
army were strong so were those of
Stevens who had gathered two thousand
five hundred fire fighters to prevent
their principal line of battle men
from meeting defeat.

Yet the conflagration put every
thing in a fearful condition. Fire
and awful smoke was everywhere.
Lashes were burning up by the roots
and smoke and fire made even
the very regular roads all but
impassable and awful to even
contemplate.

Added to all the fighters had been
exposed to heat beyond describ-
ing and soon two thousand
were on the heat prostration
soaked, burned in smoke

or heat sick list. The
scene in So. Hall as I heard 25-96
later was scarcely a more happy
one. Emergency hospitals were
opened by the score and soon all day
long the ambulances would be rum-
bling through the streets. Business of
all kinds was practically at a full
standstill and the citizens gathered
in groups to discuss the awful and
most terrible situation.

The burning of Ruygdo and the
others was looked upon as a great
calamity and I learned that every-
body wondered if Stevens would
be equal to the emergency and
I too into which I had been
thrown. Even a rumor had started
that the fire was greatly reinforced
and threatening So. Hall and this
nearly caused a panic.

Many began packing up their
house hold goods and all
valuables in order to flee west
as soon as the big fire would
move forward.

But no immediate move was
taking place and the rage of the
fire was very greatly exagger-
ated. Worn out by the fierce
fighting all those who had fallen

2592 back each section was now trying to reconstruct. Fighting would not be so difficult if it was not for all that smoke and terrific heat. Yet before this big fight had started this morning I had overlooked the main smoulder fire from the Wicker Castle Hill with a field glass.

I took note of the extent of it and the disposition of the smoulder. I took note of all I possibly could, feeling that it was knowledge worth getting for my plans which in the excitement of the new fire I had forgotten to make. I had something of a plan which I had drawn of the smoulder as I remembered it.

I drew the roll of paper from my pocket. You could see I am an artist.

The crosses represented fields dangerously close to the smoulder and the lines of dots were where local fires could start. The little bars were grain fields and farm houses properly.

Though this was done for my own use, I don't believe a spy could do any better. I spread ~~spread~~ the paper on my lap, and pored over it

and pored over it earnestly, 2598 One line was the outskirts of the smoulder. There was a box marked Wicker Hill, the hill of hay and another the right of way of the Rock Island railroad. The left of the smoulder was near the Wicker hill directly in front of my point of view. Another was the smoulder commanding the fields to the northeast of the main still untouched fields. I still did not know what to do since Ruggero was severely burned and wounded, John Carter also.

I knew I have had my ears open for one of my age. I hoped my map would perhaps prove of value although it merely corroborated what my scouts had already furnished me with. I looked at the paper again and asked my self questions all of which I answered to my self as well as I was able.

This map with other happenings made me decide to make a tremendous change but a necessary one and which was made none too soon.

The two sides, my fire fighters and the conflagration were ready for the final conflict, at bay like two monsters each measuring the strength of the other.

2599 I decided to follow my plans of the map at ten thirty the contest began by the advance of the troops in the neighborhood of the Wicker castle and the hill of hay at the same time Jim the farmer descended from the railroad right of way and prepared for an immediate and heavy attack upon the right wing of the conflagration.

This was done after a short or brief consultation with me.

To try to go into lengthy details of the battle would take far more space than I have to spare for such purposes. If the advance of the fire fighters was masterly equally so was the skillful attack of Jim Scantons troops.

Every inch of the fields were contested as the men fought their way through fields of grain and wheat and along roads, the men with their supplies behind them. It had not rained since the day after the twister and ground near the fire showed signs of dust.

On every side activity prevailed. All were hurrying towards the fire. I had again ascended the Wicker Castle Hill and before me was spread a moving panorama

fighting men marching 25
retreating and throwing chemical 2600
bombs and slacking at unburned wheat in front of the fire that even the clouds of dust almost hid the gallant fighters from view. On a small rise of ground a battery was dealing out fire extinguishers with every discharge of its six guns.

"That fire position must be taken, the battery will cover us." This was the cry that ran along the line as Grenadier men swept into action. "Forward men but keep separate. One gallant charge and the day is ours. But remember no dare death recklessness."

Away went the men each scythe sickle and other cutting equipment glistering brightly in the glare of the flames. On and over the tramped down prostrated wheat but where it grew so close that nothing could go between them yet on through the smoke and dust. Boom Boom Boom.

The battery had opened up again in deadly earnest. The long flashes of fire from the guns was seen.

"The way the fire recedes where ex-

2601. In quivers they must have
suspended in them "I thought
to myself yet on swept the
fighting line yelling with a voice
that had only been before heard on a
battlefield.

The guns were moved a little for-
ward and fearful that the attack
might be frustrated by the fire, a
regiment of men with the water
bucket was hurled to the front to
stay the progress of the fire.

It was scythes, ree, sickle and
broadsword with a rushing sound
that could have been heard for
half a mile. But it seemed the
men were on the run and could
not be stayed, while elsewhere
countless others threw up breastworks
and ramparts in the hope of check-
ing the wild conflagration.

"The territory is ours! Hurrah!" This
was the cry which rang over the
field. A portion of the fire wave
had been forced back inch by inch
until the sack beaters held the
entire line.

Yet it looked as if the flames
would rally or remain their
own. But this was not yet to
be. Not only were too many men

2602
against it but from the
fields there burst a fresh regiment
of gunny sakers and bucket men
and close behind them came the
reserves and the onslaught con-
tinued with renewed vigor the men
yelling like so many demons.

Some more artillery came into place
hurling fire chemical bombs at every
discharge, while the scythe and
sickle men cut down the wheat on
the very apex of the line of attack
like a cyclone.

"We're too many for the fire!"
Who started the cry will never be
known. But it was enough to put
the fire on a slow retreat, but
without a chance to rally.

There was now a call to support
another regiment in a different section
of the field. We were now again
in the vicinity of Stoney road and
men and fire were desperately
fighting for the possession of
the road.

Still the men fought on with
the greatest determination. They were
hurling a portion of the fire
on a fierce fighting arose upon
every side. I changed with the
others. The fire blinding the human

2603 enemy too much numerous had
began its withdrawal to its hot
center. But yet I knew it was not
yet licked by no means, only
outwitted, and preparing for battle
which was bound to come sooner or
later. It was burning too hot to be
conquered yet.

Yet the fighting was general along
the whole line, while the fire protected
its own retreat. Hotly pursued by the
victorious men the fire at its center
took a desperate stand resulting in
the greatest fighting so far and one
that I will not forget if I live to
be a thousand years old.

The wicker castle ~~was~~ hill was a
small elevation not over a hundred and
sixty feet high at its flat top, but
the ruined castle was still sixty feet
higher. The plateau above was nearly
large enough to for an entire army,
the castle was six hundred feet
long and exactly as wide.

The approach from all sides
was rather abrupt, but really
surrounded by very high thick
grown wheat, and most of its
slopes covered by high grass
and brush. So far the army
of fighting men never needed

so far fortunately to make 2604
its stand around this hill but
if the fire did come here all would
be lost as the wheat here grew
in a huge semi-circle the right and
left wing resting upon the ground where
grew dangerous weeds ten feet high,
where the situation of the ground could
offer a good support to the flames.

It was my intention to force the
fighting simultaneously all along the
fire line but when the time came
for action this was impossible.
Owing to the closeness of the tall
wheat and grain and lack of topograph-
ical knowledge of the country some
of the divisions of my men went astray
wholly and at the important moment
were nearly a mile or more away
from where they should have been.

For were Stevens fire fighters
any better off. And Simon Segres
fighters having retreated in haste
and dropped their wheat cutting
weapons they seeing the fire gave
way before Kaliko ran forward
again to find their weapons and
~~met~~ ^{meeting} some of the advancing fire
produced a confusion which broke up
all the plans laid for that
section of the fiery battle field.

2605 From early morning the artillery had been engaged burning chemicals and other fire extinguishers while from that time until ten in the morning the battle had waged with relentless fury at one spot or another until seeing they could not force the fire from its chosen ground and the disaster to Ruggeda's men, and the burning of other leaders, they would have withdrawn had I not thrown in my main force according to the plan on the map and forced the fire on a ~~new~~ retreat and then it still still,

As to say it we had the fire beaten back but not licked, But now the situation was hopeful, for I made a discovery while on the hill.

A distance beyond the advancing fire was a very long stretch of wide open ground on the center of which if not if not a lake was a big pond. Towards this a long wall of the fire was pushing on. If it did not change course and came up on that section was done for.

The open ground its full length was more than a hundred

and fifty feet wide to my 2607.
recollecting:

Not far from this open ground was planted a strong battery which so far had not yet been in action.

But now at eleven o'clock it began to belch forth at the fire which was advancing towards the open ground. Only a volley was fired and the darn chemical bombs were ineffectual.

Men at my command had rushed in the location to outflank the fire coming to the open ground to prevent it from spreading to right and left.

And here turned out the fiercest fight of all so far.

"We're out for real hot work to day" Kaliko to me decidedly. "The fire will probably or is going to do his level to roast our backbone."

"Yes and maybe I'll break its back backbone" I put in, "I have been fighting so much there forty hours night and day it seems like I can't do anything else."

Again the battery opened up as a long line or wave of near my fire was coming through the fields at double double quick.

This time the shots did good execution but still the wave came

2608 fiercely on through the wheat over
fallen grain and barley until it
was advancing straight forward in
a way to defy them to turn its
flank.

"Company attention. Charge with scythes and
sickles. Forward"

The battery had blazed away right in
the face of the wave of fire while the
resisting men were yelling at the top of
their voices. But clearing the half burn-
ed wheat to rear behind it the fire
even strove strove to reach the cannons.
What a heat it threw.

Now the men with the gunny sacks
swung out to meet it, bending low
to avoid the heat. The sound of
the slamming wet sacks was indes-
cribable as line after line swung into
position, slammed right and left with
powerful swings, and wheeled away
to make room for the next.

The execution was fearful aided
by the scythe and sickle men,
and water bucket crew and the fire
fallored at the very mouths of
the pieces it would try to over-
whelm.

Yet the fierce heat was terrible
and now heavy reinforcements of
flames were coming a large high long

surge of blood red fire up 2608
the hollow at breakneck speed
throwing heat no one could face.
The men were attacking the west
flank, and the flankers were counter
attacking them. The fighters had to leap
aside and retreat or be ringed or
burned.

The fire actually led the van
and I saw a whirlwind of fire in the
fore throwing maddening heat. The
leaders were shouting orders to their
confused men but it was impossible
to hear what they said in the
uneasily racket racket upon every
side. The battle was opened in
earnest now and I believed some of
us would not see it closed.

In the meantime the other sec-
tion of the inferno was still
heading for the open ground and
fast too.

Yet if we could not lick the flanks
of the fire the open ground would not
help us at all.

"Close up." It was an order to
all the men opposing the flank
especially the west and they
closed up around the battery ready
to defend every gun to the last.
It was a fight like if it.

2610 was on the battle field of our civil war. Still the searing wall of a furious fire came up until the leading sheet of flame confronted that line of sack and bucket men, and then it paused. But only for an instant, there was a hot blazing break through and the fire throwing killing heat rushed on.

The battery was lost and the men scattered ahead of the flames most of them flying to the open ground to escape the unmeasurable heat and from being so soaked and burned.

Two gunners lay at the wheels of the pieces, scorched and heat prostrated faithful to the last.

They were carried to the rear and hospitalized.

But the victory was a short-lived one. Word had been sent how the battery was being pressed and the brigade of Montgomery grays were hurried through the weakest of the fields to the support of Jim Scanlon's men. With a ringing cheer they burst into the large clearing and the flaming wheat was beaten down in a fashion as if thousands of gunny sackers pressed it. The fire first came to

a desperate and stubborn stand still and then slowly began to yield. The battery was again in the hands of the men. It had been a most daring charge but not a useless one how the fire could not hold its own and was hurled back wards full meller. Jim Scanlon was scorched on the arm but stayed on.

The charge had cost the Montgomery grays dear. Brave Spaulding was very seriously burned, and so were two and ten others and forty men were missing. But cut up as it was the company was joined to the remnants of several others and to be taken care of.

Yet cap-less without his scythe and seriously burned on the left arm Jim Scanlon had dashed into a thicket to avoid the murderous heat searing at what was left of the Montgomery grays. He also soon limped painfully, burned on the right thigh calf of his right leg.

He panted for breath and wiped the sweat and dirt from his face. Oh it was a fearful day for us all. I was wishing this fire war was over. Before it was reversed.

21-12 the fire had advanced with
frightful rapidity. Riding up to
Jim Scanlon I said "you
are badly burned and so is Jim.
He said "no you are you burned. Your
cheek is blotter red."

"That's only a surge Jim. But some
one's horse stepped on my ankle and
that's not so nice. Oh but it is a
most fearful day at that. I wish this
fire was through Jim and this hot
fight over Jim."

"You don't wish it any more than
I do Henry. But hark some troops
are coming."

"And they're passing to our right. It's
a troop of Teddy Heddy's men battle
battling bravely against a broken
line of fire. Yet Jim Scanlon stay-
ed on in spite of his burns and
ankle injury."

The fighters of what was left of
the Montgomery Grays lay down some
distance from the heat of the
fire worn out to such a degree
that hardly a man could
move a muscle. But Jim Scan-
lon's men were as worn out
as Captain Spaulding's and
were perfectly perfectly willing
to withdraw and leave fresh

forces of fighting men to 2613
relieve them by taking their places.
Though the fire on the west flank
appeared beaten the east flank
gave much more stiffer resistance. It
too burned in a semi circle fashion. The men
feared to attack it openly, nor numbers of
the men were set to work by their leader
to get up batteries by which they might
fire chemicals into the inferno while
a great column of 1,500 men was
moving alongside the open ground,

I myself remember well talking the
matter over with John Stevens and John
Scanlon and we agreed that this
time we had run into an ugly fire
trap and we did not see our way
out of it.

We can as the world knows beat
mostly any type of fire, when its brush
or forest fire on ground and peat fire,
but when its a fire of this type against
us it is clear that the task is a hard
one. What made it worse that we
were caught between two fires on the
open grass ground. Out in the open fields
in handling our fire equipment with
quickness would have made us a
match for this inferno, but on this
open ground and with the fire
at the east resisting us we did not

7614 how we could truly get out of it. The fight began simultaneously with the struggle against the west wing, when suddenly the one thousand five hundred men went fiercely at the flames.

But the men were beaten back in no time for they were scarcely prepared for so sudden an onslaught of ringing unbearable heat.

There however by the breach we defended ourselves stoutly throwing hand chemical grenades into the flames and with gunny sacks and of the bucket brigade.

Yet for a while their case seemed desperate. The bucket brigade was hard at work too and when they had poured the forward burning wheat they came up and gave a long broodside of water and mud into the flames alongside of us.

The defeated men rallied and ran back to the attack and so they with much rejoicing poured forward to the assault again and began to pay the fire hotly for its sudden attack of unbearable heat upon us.

It was a great fight and one that would have done your heart good to see the three columns of men half surrounded by the awful conflagration, while the guns of the

batteries played upon the inferno. 7615 Had it not been for the ineffectiveness of their extinguishers I verily believe that we should have destroyed the east wing of the fire.

Already another large column had followed the example of the foremost columns and had gone on to the attack.

We were fairly well and had begun to hope that we might get to find our way out of the hole when a man came from the lookout who said the column or one hurried back was giving signals of distress and he feared those men could not face such awful heat any longer.

Close as they were to the fire and in danger of being surrounded by the fire, the bold leader of another 'troop' did not hesitate a minute but marched his fresh men through a crowd of retreating men close to the line of peril.

You should have heard the cheer that the two columns gave each other it rose above all the noise of the battle and would assuredly have done your heart good.

At one spot it appeared the flames were yielding fast, and it was as much as the retreating men could

2616 do to try and rally and to again
lash at the retreating fire with
their gunny sacks. They could harm
not their way through fast but the
others who dared not expose themselves
to the awful heat and who were in a
great degree troubled by smoke despite
the bravery by which the others fought
retreated before sudden new field
fires.

The sight of the two new fires
shook the hearts of the men than ever,
and despite all the fury of the other
column of fighters had been able to
do, and without waiting the orders for
orders they retreated in panic.

Stevens who had just come up on
house cursed and shouted when he saw
what was being done but the panic
caused by the new fires got the better
of the men and they made off but
there standing ground three broadsides
of cherrucals at the new fire and
aided by Jim Scanlon who stuck to
the others through the fight despite
his burned arm.

The men under Foreman Mission
suffered severely from the scorching
heat packed close as they were with
all their number and a great part
under Foreman Jesu, vast numbers

of whom were severely scorched. 2617
burned, overcome by heat, smoke
and thirst. However at length the
rest were at their own request
able to retreat to the open ground, pre-
ferring to run the risk of defeat or even
disgrace to continue any longer without
reinforcements amidst the horror of
facing the insupportable unbearable heat
of the inferno.

Gallant as were the exploits which
had been performed by my men in
their attacks upon this big local fire
yet in none of these cases did the
disparity of force at all approach that which
often existed between Starn and
Kalihon men indeed the only possible
reason that can be given for the so
far success of the conflagration is the
fact the fire entertained for them.
All the leaders and the men had
come to look upon the inferno as
absolutely invincible and they seemed
when attacked by the troops altogether
paralyzed.

Even I who was not given to
reflection could not but pass a feeling of
doubt as to the possibility of my forces
attacking with success a blazing
inferno like this. Presently the
booming of more cannon was heard

26/5 and soon a rattle of small arms was heard to break out and the unburned wheat was cut down by scythes, sickles, ex- flooding small chemical balls and broadswords. Even mud sand and slop slop.

As the men rushed on they were ranged in two long double ranks on either side of the long breach and fell upon the burning fields at once and this time so great was the fury of the fighters (many of them raging with the pain caused by the heat)

that facing either way with a roar like a beast springing upon their prey they fell with all their equipment upon the inferno.

It was the wild rage which the fire fighters fought that was the hope of their success.

These rough strong men hardened by exposure to all sorts of weather winter or summer, skilled in the use of fire fighting equipment were no doubt formidable enough individually but the fires resistance did not intimidate the rest of the men or have gone any great distance towards equalizing the awful tremendous odds against them.

It was the fury with which they

26/9 fought that was the secret of their hope for success this time when the troops fell upon the inferno and by more men six times as numerous as themselves clothed all wet with fire proof hats with all their faces wild with pain from facing the savage heat brandishing their heavy wet gunny sacks and with a shout rushed upon the fire almost won the assault, but the flames seared them beyond endurance and after a moment or two of desperate resistance began rapidly to fall back.

Their officers in vain shouted to them to stand firm. In vain they taunted them with falling back. In vain their broadswords were turned on their own men. It was useless. Those in front unable to retreat were downed in prostration by the fierce heat. Those behind recoiled and after but a few minutes latter and stubborn fighting, some began to leap into the open ground, and although the fight continued for a short time isolated groups here and there making violent resistance, the fire repulsed the assault in five minutes.

2620 Had this part of the fire in its efforts to burn onward been in any way backed by the main inferno the flames would have made short work of the foremost of the assailants. Bugles trumpet and horns were now sounding and shouts and yells were heard through the fields and those not being repulsed yet were becoming fairly aroused.

At this moment however Kaliko sadly for the success along his line received a serious burn on his back and shoulder.

Stevens and I were standing near him and observe him stagger. But he kept his composure while I treated the burns. Others had fled with their officers.

Other troops not in the flight yet, were now being brought forward and the retreaters solely ashamed the even this fire should make itself the masters of the field were also blushing up heart and preparing to renew the attack.

Yet ill was it then that Kaliko suffered so heavy a burn in the fight for the success of the adventure. Up to this time he had kept bravely on, nothing

could daunt him. It seemed almost as if with the burning of their accomplishing leader the courage which had animated these men and would animate them again in fighting against even so great odds had for the moment deserted them. Kaliko protested with all his force against their retreat.

His words however had no weight on them, for they were seized by an unaccountable panic. But an attack by Stevens men came with the suddenness and almost the force of an explosion. The air was full of blinding smoke and it was difficult for those still retreating even to breathe when facing the thickness of the smoke. For an hour and a quarter the attack of Stevens continued with unabated fury.

At times it seemed impossible that the fire now could resist so tremendous were the attacks which struck and buffeted the flames. During the next quarter of an hour the resistance of the fire sensibly abated and still attacking with tremendous force there was evidence to the accustomed eyes of the leaders that the fire along this front was being beaten to death.

2122 The shock of Stevens' attack
was tremendous. Kalibo who stayed
on despite his burns had rallied
his men after some desperate
effort and reinforced Stevens who
rallied to the attack with terrible force.

That part of the inferno parted as
you call it "admiral'ship" and then dis-
olved to pieces like a house of cards.

It was overwhelmed.

No one could calculate how this was
accomplished in so wild a conflagra-
tion though the assault was hurled
with so tremendous a force.

The attack had been made with
such fury leaping through like a tornado
that the men carried all before them.

Was this success to stay?

Because the position of the inferno
was so strong that I and Stevens had
no hope of its being forced.

Yet though the men had swept
all before them we decided to push
on to the utmost and that if
the fire did rally we would not be
repulsed without severe fight-
ing.

So indeed it proved. Advancing
with great caution the leaders of
the men made their way along
until they turned the fortification.